NEW

ALL ABOUT HISTORY ANNUAL

The events, people & discoveries
that changed the world

- Ancient civilisations • Key events • Powerful people • Historic empires

ALL ABOUT HISTORY ANNUAL

From ancient history, through the middle ages, right up to history of the 20th century, there's just too much to choose from for this edition of the year's best All About History content. Here you'll uncover the story of Cleopatra, the ever-intriguing pharaoh's daughter, and how she seduced her way to power. You'll delve into tales of shrewd Viking raiders and George Washington's struggle to legendary status. Be inspired by those who were a force for change, from Nelson Mandela to the codebreakers of Bletchley Park, and discover how history's greatest military leaders made the tough decisions that led them to victory. See behind the public personas of Frank Sinatra and Marilyn Monroe and understand the fickle nature of fame and fortune, with thrilling insights into their real lives. Prepare to explore history's greatest moments and meet its most incredible characters.

ALL ABOUT HISTORY ANNUAL

Imagine Publishing Ltd
Richmond House
33 Richmond Hill
Bournemouth
Dorset BH2 6EZ
☎ +44 (0) 1202 586200
Website: www.imagine-publishing.co.uk
Twitter: @Books_Imagine
Facebook: www.facebook.com/ImagineBookazines

Publishing Director
Aaron Asadi

Head of Design
Ross Andrews

Production Editor
Alex Hoskins

Senior Art Editor
Greg Whitaker

Designer
Abbi Denney

Printed by
William Gibbons, 26 Planetary Road, Willenhall, West Midlands, WV13 3XT

Distributed in the UK, Eire & the Rest of the World by:
Marketforce, 5 Churchill Place, Canary Wharf, London, E14 5HU
Tel 0203 787 9060 www.marketforce.co.uk

Distributed in Australia by
Network Services (a division of Bauer Media Group), Level 21 Civic Tower, 66-68 Goulburn Street,
Sydney, New South Wales 2000, Australia Tel +61 2 8667 5288

Disclaimer
The publisher cannot accept responsibility for any unsolicited material lost or damaged in the post. All text and layout is the copyright of Imagine Publishing Ltd. Nothing in this bookazine may be reproduced in whole or part without the written permission of the publisher. All copyrights are recognised and used specifically for the purpose of criticism and review. Although the bookazine has endeavoured to ensure all information is correct at time of print, prices and availability may change. This bookazine is fully independent and not affiliated in any way with the companies mentioned herein.

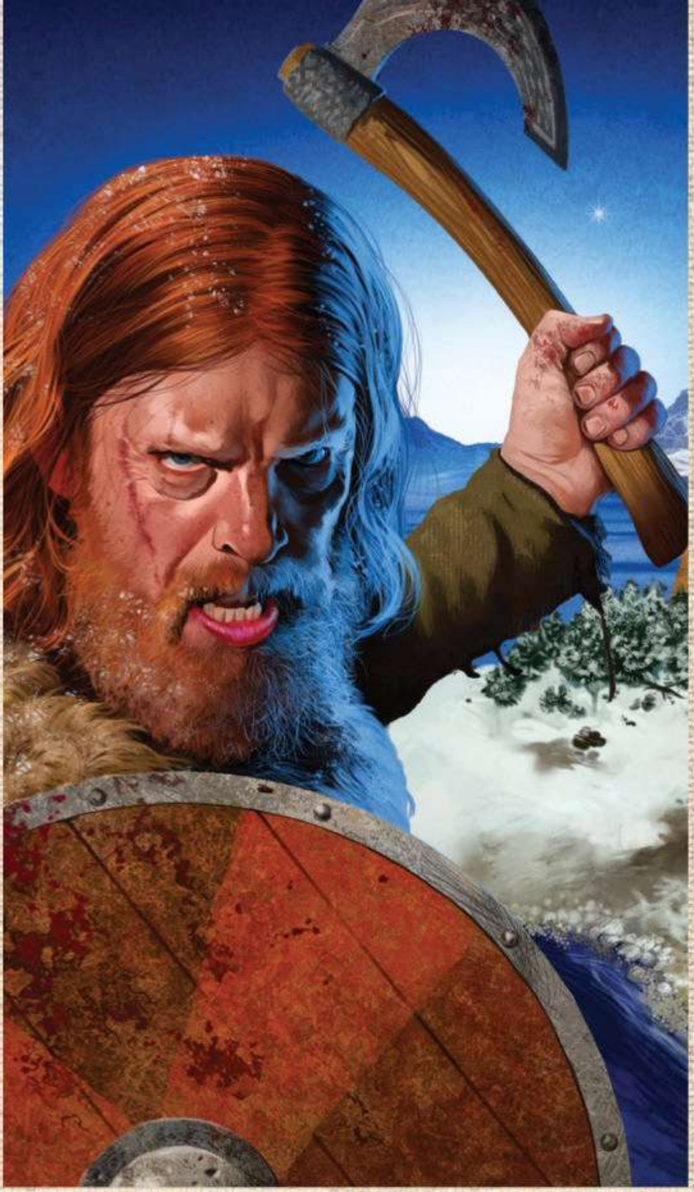
All About History Annual Volume 2 © 2015 Imagine Publishing Ltd

ISBN 9781785461132

Part of the
ALL ABOUT HISTORY
bookazine series

IMAGINE
PUBLISHING

CONTENTS



EMPIRES & CIVILISATIONS

10 Cleopatra's ruthless rise to power
How the iconic pharaoh schemed and seduced her way into history

18 How to build an empire
Discover the secret to expanding your lands the old-fashioned way

20 7 Lost civilisations
Inside the forgotten superpowers that shaped the modern world

27 Anatomy of an Inca warrior
Meet a disciplined and fierce soldier of the fearsome Inca empire

28 Viking raiders
How Vikings ruled the waves with their lucrative trade network

36 What if… The Aztecs hadn't been conquered?
How would the world be different if this empire had lasted, and would they still be around today?

40 The rise of the Ottoman empire
Uncover the methods that forged a 700-year empire that spanned three continents

POLITICS & POWER

50 Anne Boleyn
The romantic beginning and disastrous end of Henry VIII's controversial queen

58 Washington: The first president
Washington's perilous journey to become the father of the USA

66 What if… Lincoln hadn't been assassinated?
Would impeachment have awaited the president?

70 Stalin: Russia's ultimate tyrant
How the famed dictator dyed the Soviet Union red

78 Malcolm X
Fiercely tackling racial and religious conventions amid the Civil Rights movement

82 Mandela becomes president
Read an eyewitness account of Mandela's momentous inauguration in Pretoria, South Africa

VICTORY & DEFEAT

88 10 Greatest military leaders
Meet ten of the world's most impressive military leaders

97 Anatomy of a Zulu warrior
How the mighty people decimated enemies to expand their territory

98 The Assyrian Army
Inside the cruel fighting machine of the ancient world

100 Waterloo: The fall of Napoleon
200 years on, the final gamble of a man who was willing to risk everything

108 Enigma: Britain's codebreakers
How Britain's triumphant codebreakers turned the tide in World War Two

116 What if... The USA had won the Vietnam War?
Would Ha Long Bay be a theme park, and would US culture have taken grip?

120 Fall of the Berlin Wall
An eyewitness account of Germany's most historic and emotional moment of the late 20th century

FAME & FORTUNE

126 10 superstars you never knew existed
Forgotten celebrities who paved the way for the stars of today

133 Anatomy of a Greek sculptor
Discover how Greek celebrities were portrayed before television or film

134 Houdini's final trick
How history's greatest illusionist swapped his love of trickery for a hatred of supernatural fraud

142 Inside a 1950s television studio
Beaming the news to the nation during television's formative years

144 My way: Frank Sinatra's dark side
Delve into the rumours of mafia connections that dogged the crooner's entire career

150 Day in the life of a 1950s movie star
What life was really like on set for stars like Lauren Bacall and Audrey Hepburn

152 Becoming Marilyn
Before she was the blonde bombshell, Norma Jeane was a troubled child

EMPIRES & CIVILISATION

Dig up the foundations of some of the oldest and most powerful civilisations in history

10 Cleopatra's ruthless rise to power

How the iconic pharaoh schemed and seduced her way into history

18 How to build an empire

Discover the secret to expanding your lands the old-fashioned way

20 7 Lost civilisations

Inside the forgotten superpowers that shaped the modern world

27 Anatomy of an Inca warrior

Meet a disciplined and fierce soldier of the fearsome Inca empire

28 Viking raiders

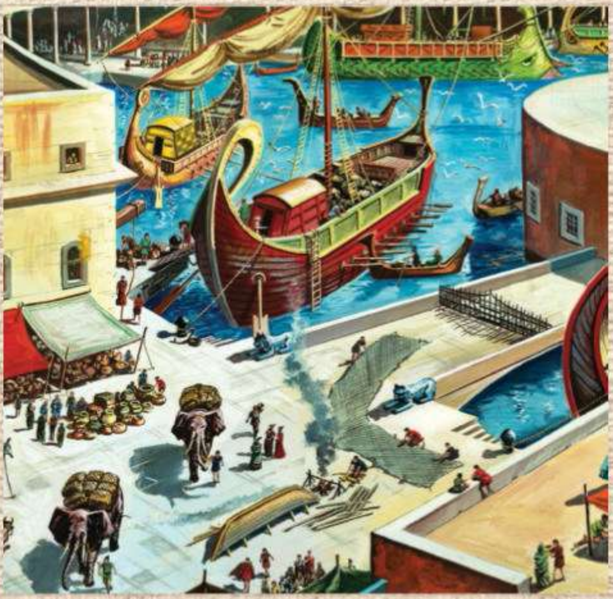
How Vikings ruled the waves with their lucrative trade network

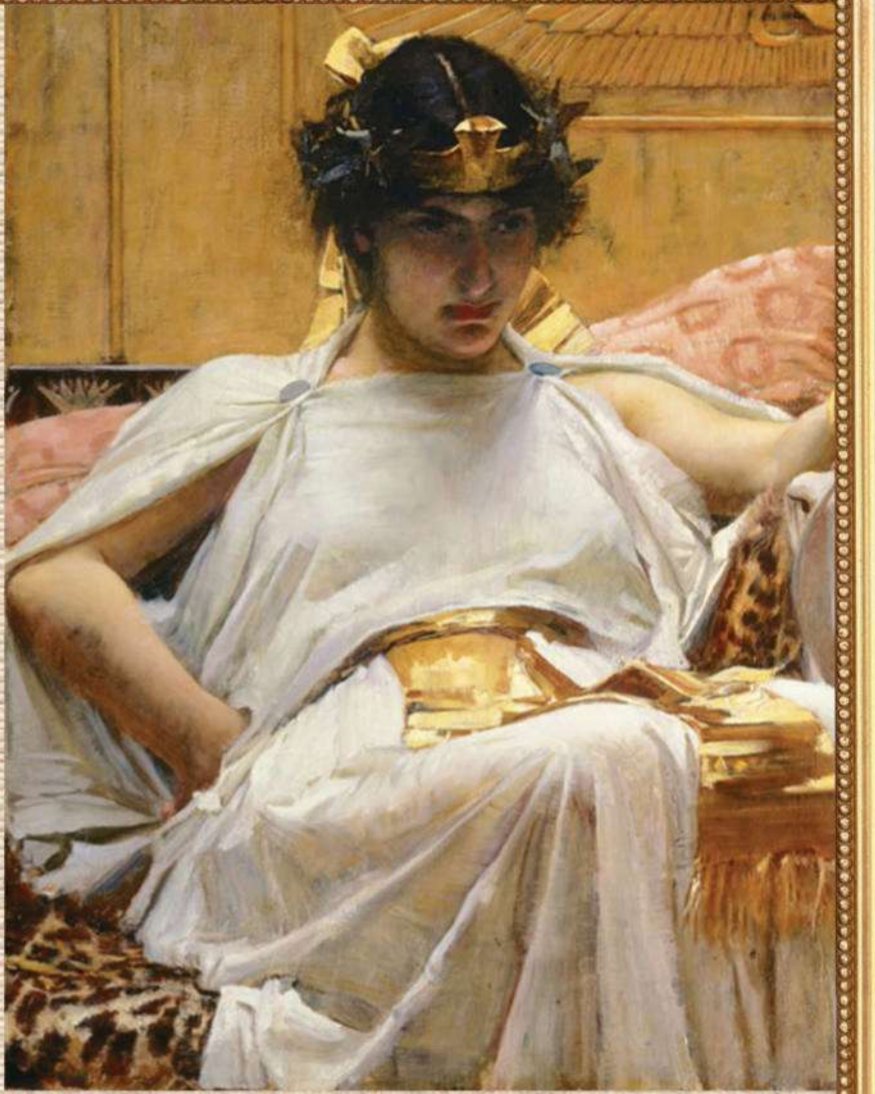
36 What if... The Aztecs hadn't been conquered?

How would the world be different if this empire had lasted, and would they still be around today?

40 The rise of the Ottoman empire

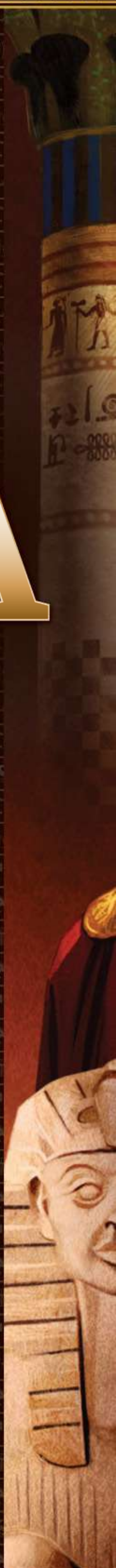
Uncover the methods that forged a 700-year empire that spanned three continents





THE RUTHLESS RISE TO POWER OF CLEOPATRA

How the middle daughter of a despised pharaoh fought, schemed and seduced her way into becoming the most famous Egyptian ruler of all



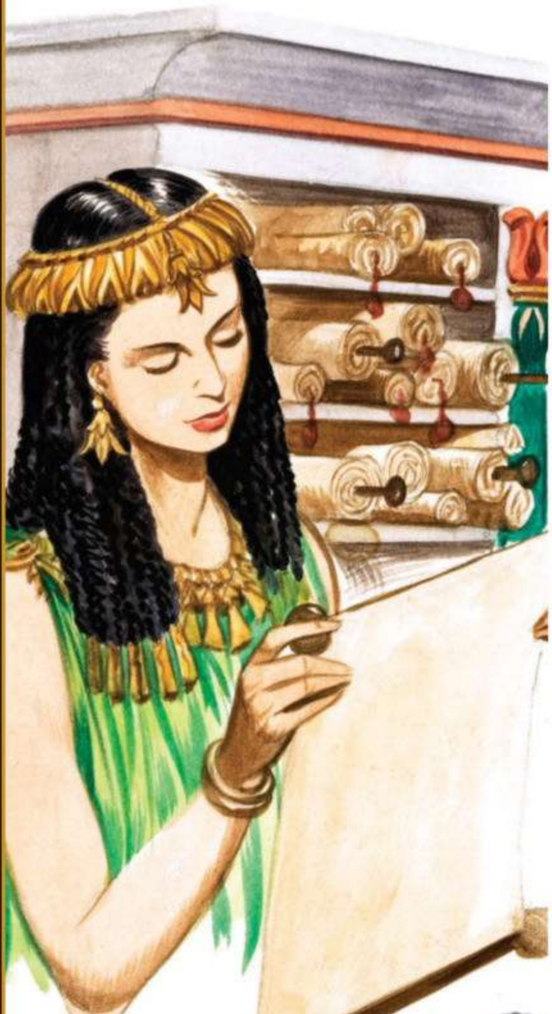
Egypt was in turmoil. In the year 81 BCE Ptolemy IX, the pharaoh who had dared to melt down the gold coffin of Alexander the Great was dead. A series of bloody and violent family feuds had robbed his dynasty of any legitimate male heirs so his popular and beloved daughter, Bernice III became queen. Following the family tradition, she married her half-brother, Plotemy XI, but just 19 days after the ceremony, the groom had his new bride murdered and claimed the throne as his own. The citizens of Alexandria were furious and an angry mob quickly seized the new pharaoh and lynched him. Egypt was leaderless and seemingly out of control.

As the commander of the army and the personification of god on Earth, a pharaoh's presence was essential to prevent mass unrest in Egypt and anyone, absolutely anyone, was better than no pharaoh at all. So the throne was offered to the illegitimate sons of Ptolemy IX, and Ptolemy XII stepped forward to claim it. A notorious womanizer with a fondness for drink and excess, he was hardly the shining beacon the struggling country needed to guide it through the dark pit it had fallen into. A nickname for the illegitimate pharaoh quickly became popular – Nothos, or 'the bastard.' Ptolemy XII had at least five legitimate children, and Cleopatra VII was the second oldest of them after her sister, Berenice IV.

The young princess was clever and quick-witted, with an eager and curious mind driven by a near-insatiable thirst for knowledge. She easily excelled at her studies and even her esteemed scholars were amazed by her aptitude for languages, readily conversing with any foreign visitors whether they were Ethiopians, Hebrews, Troglodytes, Arabs, Syrians, Medes or Parthians. While she surrounded herself with the wonders of the academic world in the riches and luxury of the royal residence, just outside her palace window the real one was being stretched at the seams, in grave danger of being ripped apart.

Pharaoh Ptolemy XII was in a troublesome position. His father had promised Egypt to Rome, a promise the Roman Senate had chosen not to act on – not yet, at least. Still, Ptolemy XII was smart enough to understand that to keep the Romans happy was to ensure Egypt's survival. He sent masses of money and bribes to Julius Caesar (at that time one of Rome's most important figures), which secured the Romans' support, but dammed him in the eyes of his tax-burdened citizens. In 58 BCE he was forced into exile, taking his talented younger daughter with him. When he finally

"Cleopatra pushed her child brother-husband into the background and established herself as sole monarch of the country"



returned three years later, with the backing of a Roman army courtesy of the statesman Aulus Gabinius, he discovered his oldest daughter Berenice sitting on the throne. Displaying the brutal and uncompromising ferocity that famously ran through his entire family he had his daughter summarily executed, reclaimed the throne and proceeded to rule an uneasy Egypt until his death in 51 BCE. At this point, the crown and all the debts he had amassed became the property of his oldest surviving daughter, Cleopatra.

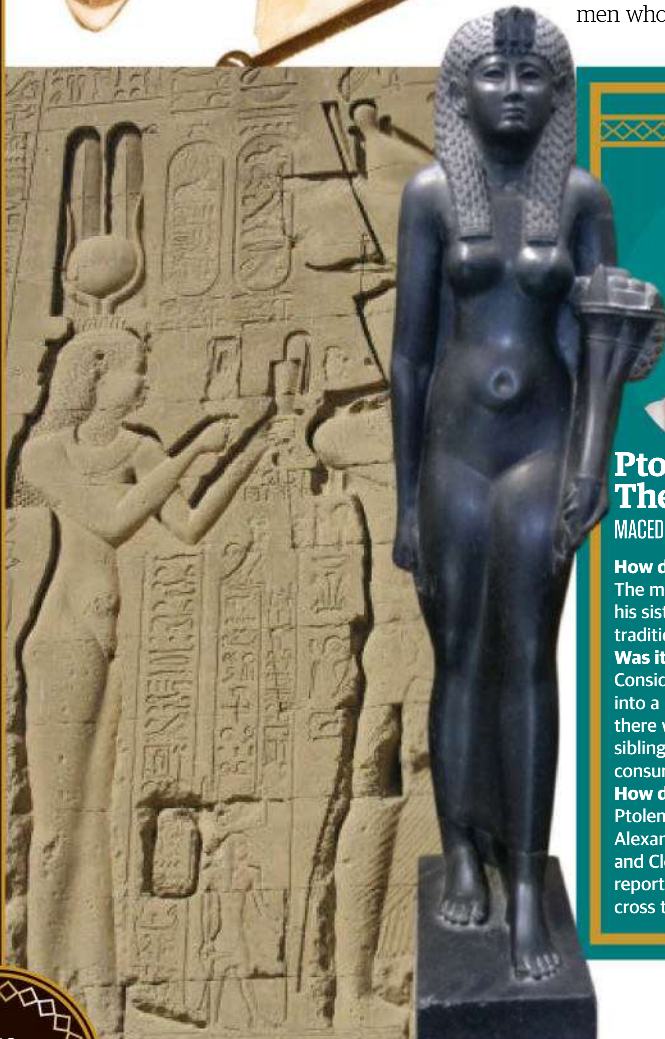
The 18-year-old was not – as some expected – a naïve wide-eyed child torn from her books to rule a kingdom on the brink of war. She had served as consort to her father for the final few years of his reign and all her education since birth had been designed to mould her into a capable queen. Queen, that was; not king, not pharaoh. Cleopatra was cursed by the requirement of all Egyptian queens to serve alongside a dominant male co-ruler and so found herself burdened with the task of being a subordinate co-regent to her ten-year-old brother, Ptolemy XIII.

Faced with a regency council full of ambitious men who ruled in her brother's stead and led by her own ruthless, impatient and intelligent nature, Cleopatra pushed her brother-husband into the background and established herself as sole monarch of the country. This was dangerous; the Alexandrian courtiers swarmed over the young, impressionable king, filling his head with whispers of sole rule and the dangers of his older sister. If Cleopatra had been more patient and attentive, she could perhaps have trained a capable and obedient co-ruler in him, one who would have aided her rule, instead of bringing it crashing down.

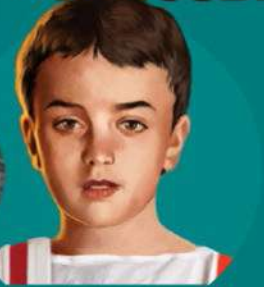
But that was simply not the Ptolemy way, and she was a Ptolemy in every sense of the word – daring, ambitious and deadly. She dropped her brother's image from currency and erased his name from important official documents. With her skill, drive and cunning she was perfect for rule; in her mind she deserved Egypt and wasn't prepared to share it.

> "With her popularity and reputation already in tatters, the disgraced queen fled from the city of her birth"

The early years of her reign would be testing, as not only was the country still struggling under the father's debts, but years of infrequent floods of the Nile had led to widespread famine. Over her shoulder Cleopatra could feel the ever-looming and rapidly expanding threat of Rome, and with a weak



A HUSBAND & TWO LOVERS



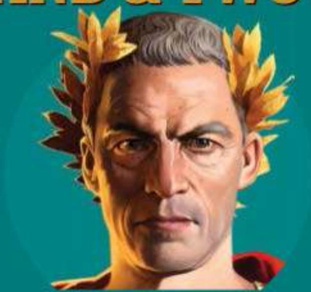
Ptolemy XIII Theos Philopator

MACEDONIAN, 62-47 BCE

How did they get together?
The marriage between Ptolemy and his sister was arranged, as was the tradition with Egyptian royalty.

Was it true love?
Considering their joint rule erupted into a brutal civil war, we can assume there was little love lost between the siblings. There is no evidence they consummated their marriage.

How did it end?
Ptolemy was forced to flee Alexandria when the forces of Caesar and Cleopatra claimed victory. He reportedly drowned attempting to cross the Nile.



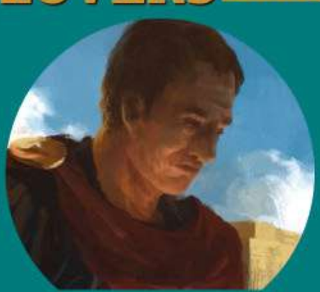
Julius Caesar

ROMAN, 100-44 BCE

How did they get together?
Cleopatra and her brother both needed Caesar's support. Cleopatra met with Caesar before their scheduled meeting and managed to sway his vote. Her methods can be left to the imagination.

Was it true love?
Although the union was initially spawned from mutual political gain and the two were forbidden by Roman law to marry, Cleopatra seemed to stay loyal to Caesar and had his child.

How did it end?
This love affair was cut short when Caesar was assassinated on the Ides of March.



Mark Antony

ROMAN, 83-30 BCE

How did they get together?
Antony summoned Cleopatra to see if she would hold true in her promised support during the war against the Parthians. She reportedly charmed him during this meeting, perhaps much the same way she had Caesar.

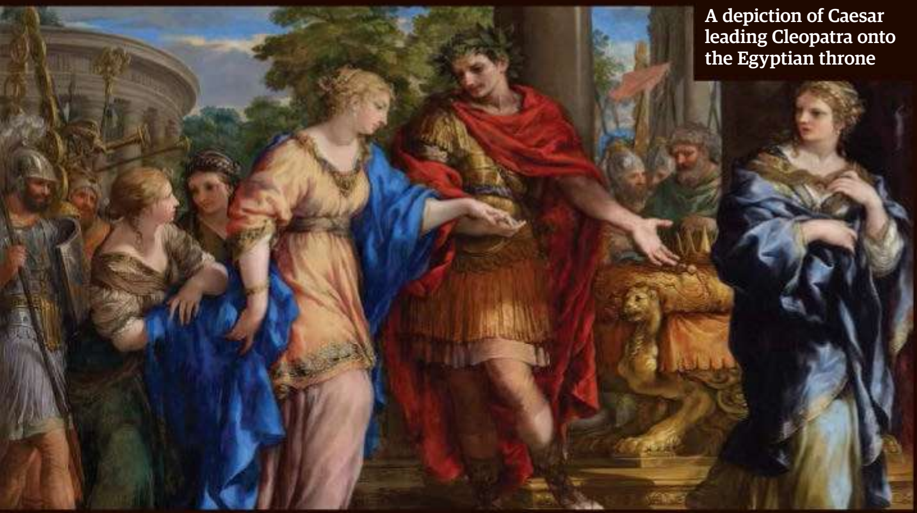
Was it true love?
Although it may have been borne out of political agendas, the two had three children together, and Antony risked everything to be with his Egyptian queen.

How did it end?
After the ill-fated Battle of Actium, Antony committed suicide upon mistakenly hearing Cleopatra was dead, and she quickly followed suit.

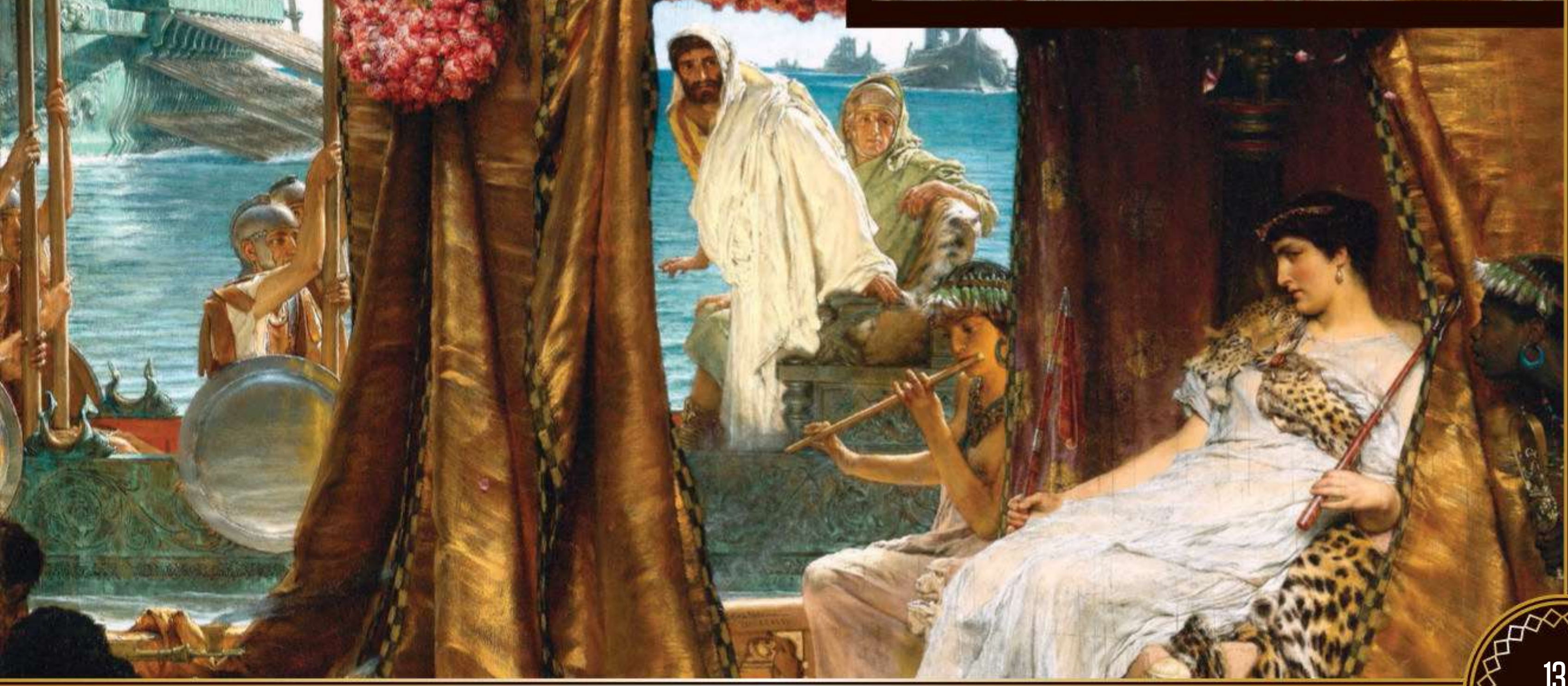
WAS SHE REALLY A BEAUTY?

The popular image of Cleopatra is the stunning vision seen in paintings and films, especially the 1963 film starring Liz Taylor with her strong but delicate features. The difficulty with accessing the true appearance of the Egyptian queen comes from the fact that the Roman Emperor Augustus ordered all images of her to be destroyed. The few pieces that were spared are difficult to link directly to Cleopatra. Her own ancestry is also in doubt due to there being no concrete record of who her mother or grandmother were.

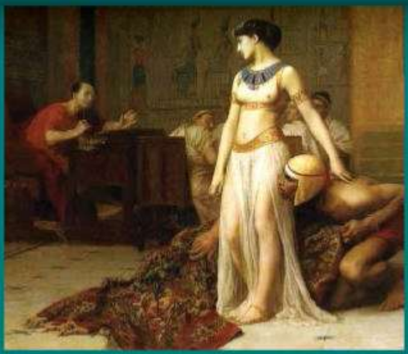
Historians know she was part Greek, which indicates she had an olive complexion with dark hair. The coins and few statues discovered present a thick neck, with a hooked nose and prominent chin, she was also likely to suffer from bad teeth like everyone else of her time. In Ancient Egypt being seen as male was a sign of strength, and the strong nose directly linked her with Ptolemy VIII, so it's reasonable to assume Cleopatra may have chosen to emphasise these traits. It is perhaps better to view Cleopatra as not one who possessed conventional beauty, but instead captivated with charm, intelligence and wit.



A depiction of Caesar leading Cleopatra onto the Egyptian throne



Cleopatra also struck up a fateful romance with Mark Antony



FIVE MYTHS UNRAVELLED

She was smuggled in a rug
The image of a dishevelled and flushed Cleopatra being unrolled from a Persian rug at Caesar's feet after being smuggled into the palace comes from the overzealous pen of Greek biographer Plutarch, but it's difficult to prove this happened. It seems unlikely that Caesar, one of the most powerful men in the world, would have welcomed a suspicious package into his room and even if so, there's no reason for her not to have emerged earlier and made a more elegant entrance.

She was a femme fatale
The idea that Cleopatra flittered between powerful men, wooing and manipulating with no idea of who fathered her children, is the result of an ancient smear campaign run against her by Roman officials. In fact there's only evidence of her having been with two men – Caesar and Mark Antony.

She was Egyptian
One of the most famous Egyptian pharaohs of all time wasn't Egyptian at all – she was Greek. Her family line is that of Ptolemy, one of the generals of Alexander the Great, and despite her family living in Egypt for over 300 years, she would have been regarded as Greek. Cleopatra was actually rare in that she could speak Egyptian, unlike many of her predecessors.

She wore a fake beard
The concept of female Egyptian queens sporting fake beards comes from the Egyptian belief that the god Osiris had a grand beard, prompting Egyptian pharaohs to do the same to establish themselves as divine beings. But by the time of Cleopatra this tradition had all but died out, and there's no record of her donning a fake beard. In fact, the only female pharaoh known to have worn one is Hatshepsut.

She died from an asp bite
This myth has gained momentum due to paintings of Cleopatra holding a snake to her bosom as she passes away. However, the accounts of this event are in some doubt, mainly because an asp will not cause a quick death as Cleopatra's was reported to be. It is more likely she drank a combination of poisons. The idea that the asp bit her breast is certainly incorrect, as all ancient sources state it bit her on the arm.

Egyptian army, her fertile land was ripe for the picking. As hungry peasants flooded into the cities, Cleopatra's popularity plummeted, and her repeated decisions that seemed designed to please Rome at Egypt's expense reminded the bitter population of her despised father.

In the middle of this political turmoil Cleopatra found herself facing a familiar rival. Her brother was back in the picture and, aided by his many guardians and regents, was now a vicious and ruthless king who was not afraid to wipe her image from the land and from history. Not phased by family ties, he completely erased his sister's name from all official documents and backdated his monarchy, claiming sole rule since his father's death. With her popularity and reputation already in tatters, the disgraced queen fled from the city of her birth before an angry mob could storm the palace and inflict upon her the same grisly fate as so many of her greedy and ill-fated predecessors.

Having lost not only the support of her people but also the land she so strongly believed was hers to rule, Cleopatra escaped to Syria with a small band of loyal supporters. Fuelled by outrage at her brother, and even more so at the advisors who had crafted him into a vicious enemy, Cleopatra did not sink into depression or abandon her ambitions, but set about building the army she would need to reclaim her throne. As the female pharaoh amassed her forces in Syria, her young brother, barely 13 years old, became distracted by the ever-pressing Roman civil war. After a humiliating defeat to Caesar in Pharsalus, the Roman military leader Pompey the Great fled to the one place he was assured he could find refuge; his old ally, Egypt.

With his wife and children watching nervously from afar Pompey disembarked his grand ship to board a small fishing boat to the shore. The Egyptian boy pharaoh, Ptolemy, sat on the shore in a throne fashioned specifically for the occasion. He watched Pompey closely, his face guarded and unreadable, but the men around him threw their arms open and, with wide smiles, cried, "Hail, commander!" It was not until the ship reached the shore that Pompey realised the murderous web in which he was entangled. Before he could cry out he was ran through with a sword and stabbed over and over again in the back. While the once-great consul was decapitated and his mutilated corpse thrown into the sea, Ptolemy did not even rise from his throne. The entire ceremony had been a ruse; a rival of Caesar's was more valuable dead than alive.

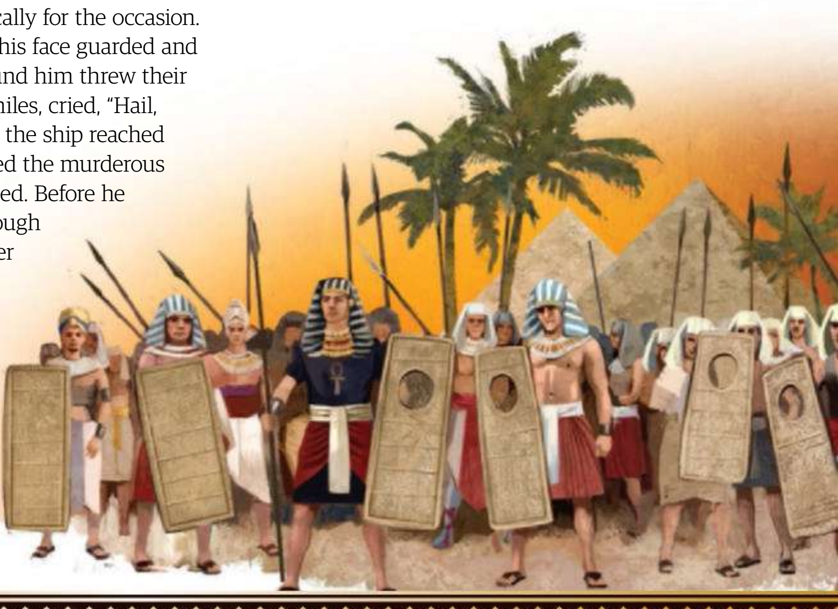
When Caesar arrived in the harbour of Alexandria four days later, he was presented with the head of his rival. However, in mere moments Ptolemy's advisors realised their mistake, for the Roman general was completely and utterly appalled by the gesture. He wept loudly and openly before leading his forces to the royal palace in Alexandria. As he observed the local resentment and civil war threatening to break the land in two he made a decision – he needed the wealth that Alexandrian taxes would give him and the only way of increasing taxes was to establish stability in the city; the sibling rivalry had to come to an end.

He summoned Cleopatra and Ptolemy to appear before him.

This was easy for Ptolemy who swiftly journeyed to Alexandria, but Cleopatra would have to use all her cunning just to make it into the city alive. With the harbour blocked by her brother's ships, she slipped away from her troops and travelled in a small boat along the coast in the dead of night. Her journey had been completely and utterly unfitting for a pharaoh of Egypt, a Ptolemy queen; but victory demanded sacrifice and she was confident the streets and waters she was smuggled down would soon be hers again. It had been a challenge to make it into the palace district, but the real night's work was about to begin – she was about to go face to face with arguably the most powerful man in the known world.

Her brother would bend over backwards, slay Caesar's enemies and kiss his feet for his support, but he was quick to panic, eager to please and terrified of angering Rome. Her brother was a fool. Caesar needed Egypt as much as Egypt needed Rome and she would use that fact to her advantage. She would not wait to bow and scrape and plead her case alongside a child, she was going to speak

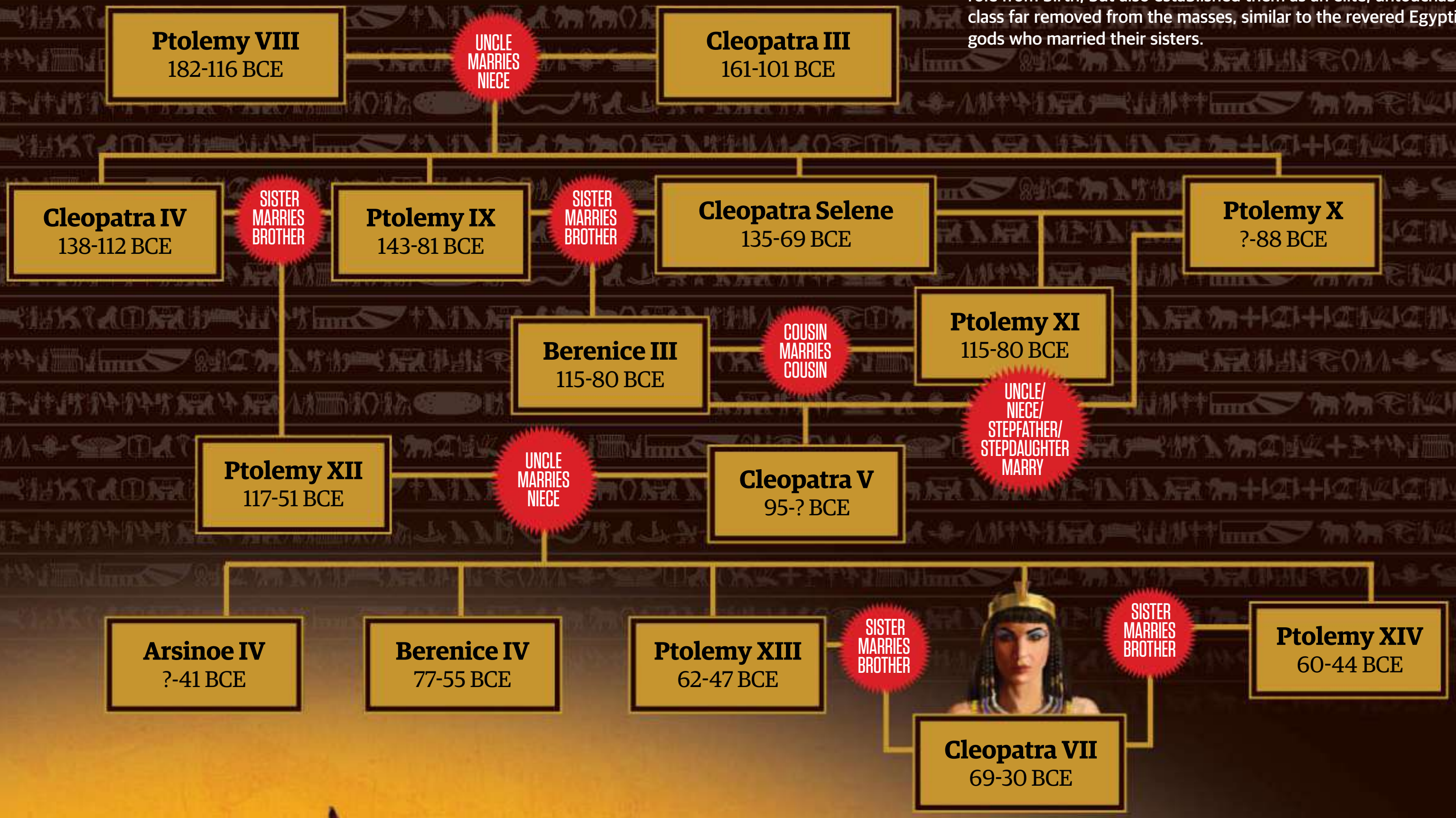
> "With her skill, drive and cunning she was perfect for rule, she deserved Egypt, and she wasn't going to share it"



ALL IN THE FAMILY

Follow Cleopatra's family tree and discover just how close-knit the Ptolemies really were…

The Ptolemies of Egypt could trace their ancestry to Ptolemy I Soter, a Greek general of Alexander the Great who became ruler of Egypt in 323 BCE. After Alexander's death, his most senior generals divided his vast territory between themselves. Completely oblivious to the dangers of interbreeding, it became customary for the Ptolemies to marry their brothers and sisters. It was convenient for them as not only did it ensure queens could be trained for their role from birth, but also established them as an elite, untouchable class far removed from the masses, similar to the revered Egyptian gods who married their sisters.


Ptolemy VIII 182-116 BCE
UNCLE MARRIES NIECE
Cleopatra III 161-101 BCE
Cleopatra IV 138-112 BCE
SISTER MARRIES BROTHER
Ptolemy IX 143-81 BCE
SISTER MARRIES BROTHER
Cleopatra Selene 135-69 BCE
Ptolemy X ?-88 BCE
Berenice III 115-80 BCE
COUSIN MARRIES COUSIN
Ptolemy XI 115-80 BCE
UNCLE/ NIECE/ STEPFATHER/ STEPDAUGHTER MARRY
Ptolemy XII 117-51 BCE
UNCLE MARRIES NIECE
Cleopatra V 95-? BCE
Arsinoe IV ?-41 BCE
Berenice IV 77-55 BCE
Ptolemy XIII 62-47 BCE
SISTER MARRIES BROTHER
SISTER MARRIES BROTHER
Ptolemy XIV 60-44 BCE
Cleopatra VII 69-30 BCE

Cleopatra got her own fleet of ships from Caesar and later Mark Antony

A GODDESS AMONG MORTALS

After the birth of Caesarion, Cleopatra could finally rid herself of the irritating requirement to have a male co-ruler and changed her image from female king to that of divine mother. This would have been eagerly adopted by her Egyptian and Greek subjects who were already very much aware of the most famous and beloved mother in mythology – Isis. With the Egyptian royalty already firmly linked to divine beings it would not take much effort for Cleopatra to portray herself as a vision of the ideal queen, wife and mother. She was quick to create coins bearing her image with the suckling Caesarion at her breast, an instantly recognisable depiction of Isis, the mother of all. To further encourage the cult, she dressed in the ceremonial robes of the goddess and in 34 BCE she was given the title 'New Isis.' The cult proved to be so successful that to this day archaeologists and historians struggle to distinguish between statues of the Egyptian goddess, and the queen who became her.

Isis

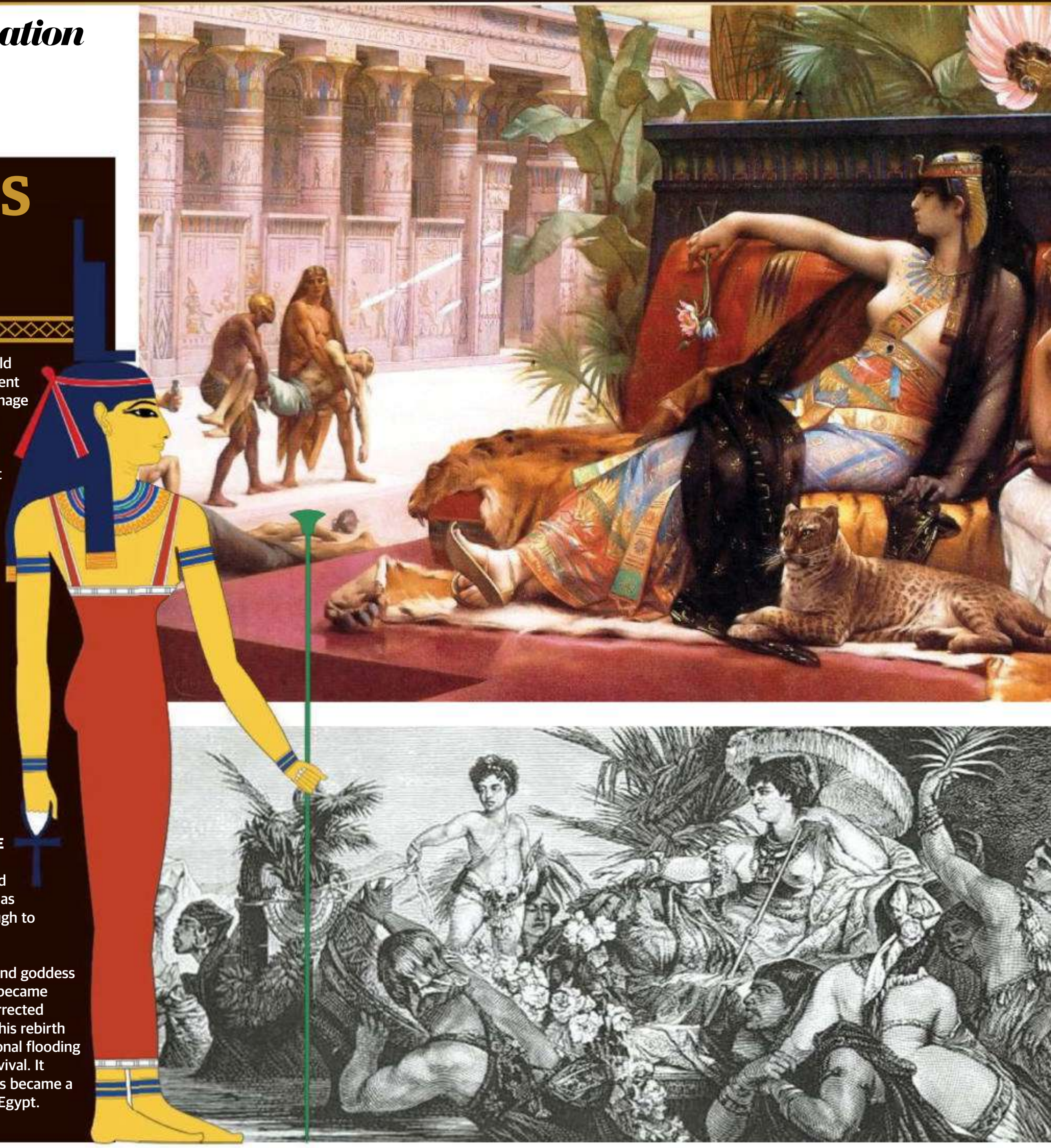
GODDESS OF HEALTH, MARRIAGE, LOVE

How powerful was she?

Isis was firmly associated with kingship and was portrayed as the mother of pharaohs, as well as capable of using magic strong enough to defy death.

What's her story?

Isis was the daughter of the god of Earth and goddess of the sky, married her brother Osiris and became mother of Horus. It was said that she resurrected Osiris after he was murdered by Set, and this rebirth was believed to manifest itself in the seasonal flooding of the Nile, which was vital for Egypt's survival. It was celebrated every year in rituals and Isis became a prominent and revered figure throughout Egypt.



to the Roman general that night. She sneaked into the palace and found Caesar's private chamber.

The 'dictator in perpetuity' as he would come to be known in Rome towered over the small woman; she would have to crane her head to look him in the eye, she realised instantly. He was far older than the young, bold Egyptian queen and his receding hairline was poorly disguised. The general was past his physical prime, but he had just won his greatest victory. This was her first time gazing upon the Roman celebrity known the world over, but this was also the first time he was facing her. Her brother was a child, a mere puppet pharaoh on strings, dancing to the pulls of his corrupt advisors, but she had been granted with all the charm, intelligence and ambition of her forefathers. She would steal Caesar and Rome's support while her brother slept; her charisma would succeed where her brother's sword had failed.

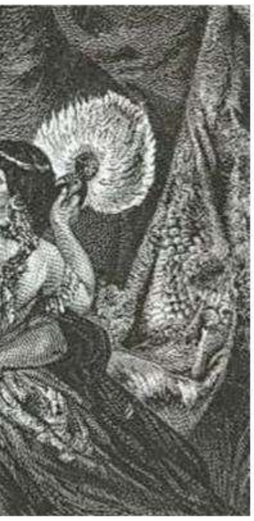
Cleopatra's image on a silver coin

The young Ptolemy XIII awoke the next day, not expecting his dangerous older sister to have made it to the palace. When he discovered that not only was she there, but had also seduced Caesar overnight into joining her cause, it was the final straw. Screaming in desperation he fled from the palace, tore his crown from his head and fell to his knees. His sister had done it again. She was completely and utterly impossible to get rid of and, even as the crowd surged forward in protest, Caesar could not be swayed. The siblings would rule Egypt together, just as their father had intended. Rome had spoken.

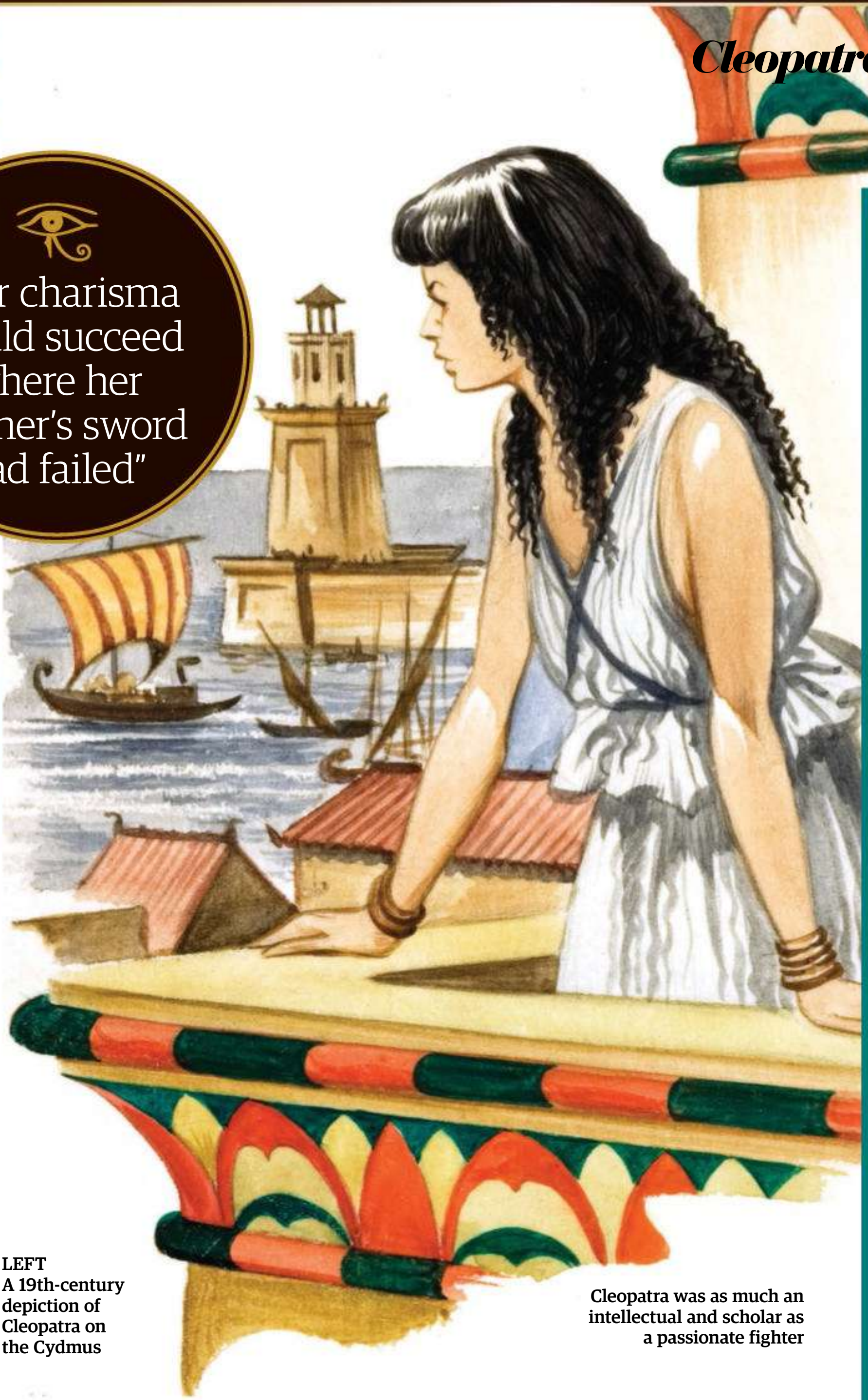
The apparent peace did not last long. Already poisoned by the ambitious whispers that had fed his youth, Ptolemy joined with his rebellious sister Arsinoe IV. Between them they amassed an army large enough to challenge Cleopatra and Caesar's forces in Egypt. The country they fought for would pay the price, and in December of 48 BCE the famous stone city of Alexandria was set alight, destroying not only the lives of hundreds of citizens, but also the world-famous library that housed countless priceless manuscripts. When Caesar's reinforcements poured into the city from Pergamum Ptolemy's forces were finally defeated. The young and impetuous king tried to flee across the Nile in an overcrowded boat but his vessel sank, dragging him and his elaborate, heavy golden armour down with it.

One Ptolemy was dead, but another still lived. Ptolemy XIV, Cleopatra's 13-year-old brother, became her husband and co-ruler immediately after her brother's death. She might have had Caesar's support, but tradition was still tradition and a lone woman could not rule Egypt. As for Caesar, he had put in place a reliable partnership and Egypt was, for all intents and purposes, a

"Her charisma would succeed where her brother's sword had failed"



LEFT A 19th-century depiction of Cleopatra on the Cydmus



Cleopatra was as much an intellectual and scholar as a passionate fighter

Roman territory. In a lavish display of the new union, a fleet of Roman and Egyptian ships sailed down the Nile accompanied by the grand royal barge where Cleopatra and Caesar sat together.

Egypt and Rome were united, but Cleopatra still found herself co-ruler to another Ptolemy who would inevitably grow up, ambitious and treacherous. She could not allow another brother to be swayed by advisors and driven against her. As long as Ptolemy XIV lived, her rule was threatened. She wasn't a fool, she knew Egypt would never accept a solitary female queen, but there was a technicality that would ensure her effective sole rule. Her partnership with Caesar had provided more than his political support, she was pregnant and in 47 BCE gave birth. The gods' will was in her favour - the child was a boy. She named him Caesarion, or 'Little Caesar', and now had an heir. For three years Cleopatra tightened her grip on the Egyptian throne, slowly winning the love of the Alexandrian mobs that had previously screamed for her head. She travelled to Rome with her son and resided in Caesar's country house as heated rumours about the paternity of her son gained speed. She did little to squash them; a possible heir of Caesar was a very powerful tool to have.

When Caesar was assassinated on 15 March 44 BCE, Cleopatra left Rome and returned to Alexandria. If there was ever a time to act, it was now. Without her powerful Roman lover by her side she needed an ally who could assure her rule, one who wasn't going to lead a rebellion against her. Brothers, she had learned, could not be trusted. Later that year the youngest Ptolemy was found dead, seemingly poisoned. The people's grief was muted; the death of Ptolemies, however young, was not so uncommon in Egypt, and besides, the people had a new pharaoh to replace him, the young Caesarion. Cleopatra had finally done it, she was Egypt's pharaoh and with her son an infant she was ruling alone in all but name. The power of Egypt was hers.

EGYPTIAN EXPERT

Dr Joyce Tyldesley teaches Egyptology at Manchester University. She has published a series of books and articles on ancient Egypt: these include *Cleopatra, Last Queen Of Egypt*, which was a Radio 4 "Book of the Week." Her most recent book, *Tutankhamen's Curse* won the Felicia A Holton Book Award from the Archaeological Institute of America.

Was Cleopatra a good ruler?

This is a difficult question to answer, as it depends on the definition of 'good'. I would certainly argue she was an effective ruler; she inherited a country on the verge of bankruptcy and, bringing a much-needed stability, ruled for over 20 years. For a long time her personal alliances with Rome protected her land against invasion. Compared to many of the earlier Ptolemies she was indeed a good ruler, and it is difficult to think of a contemporary Ptolemy who could have done a better job.

What do you believe drove Cleopatra's actions?

Cleopatra was born a member of the Ptolemaic royal family and like all her siblings, she felt she had a right to rule Egypt. So her actions were less a ruthless quest for power and more an assertion of her god-given right to rule.

Why do you think people are still fascinated by Cleopatra today?

Cleopatra has all the ingredients we seem to like in an ancient world celebrity: fabulous wealth, power, and if not beauty, the ability to bend powerful men to her will. Her dramatic and still not entirely explained death simply adds to her mystique.

Is there a side to Cleopatra that you believe has been ignored in modern depictions of her?

Two things; first, in the western historical tradition we tend to underestimate her intelligence, seeing her as a woman very much ruled by her heart rather than her head. This is because we draw our history from the Romans. Arab scholars have preserved the memory of a very different Cleopatra; a queen who was first and foremost a scholar.

Secondly, we often overlook the fact that she was a mother to four children. This, to Cleopatra, was extremely important; it influenced her decisions and linked her very closely to the Egyptian goddess Isis, mother of the god Horus.

How to BUILD AN EMPIRE

CREATE THE WORLD'S MOST POWERFUL KINGDOM, WORLDWIDE, ALL OF HISTORY

5 IMPERIAL WARRIOR TYPES

MONGOL HORDE

13TH CENTURY, MONGOLIA

Skilled at archery and horse riding, the brutal methods of the Mongol army made this the largest contiguous empire of all time.

MING WARRIORS

1368-1644, CHINA

Ming Dynasty warriors were among the first to use gunpowder weapons, allowing them to greatly expand the Chinese Empire.

ROMAN CENTURION

107 BCE - 5TH CENTURY, ROME

Highly skilled commanders of the Roman army, they led their troops by example and making a living purely as warriors.

AZTEC WARRIOR

1428-1521, MEXICO

Aztec warriors dressed in hides of animals such as eagles and jaguars. These famed warriors were ruthless in battle despite bearing only bows and clubs.

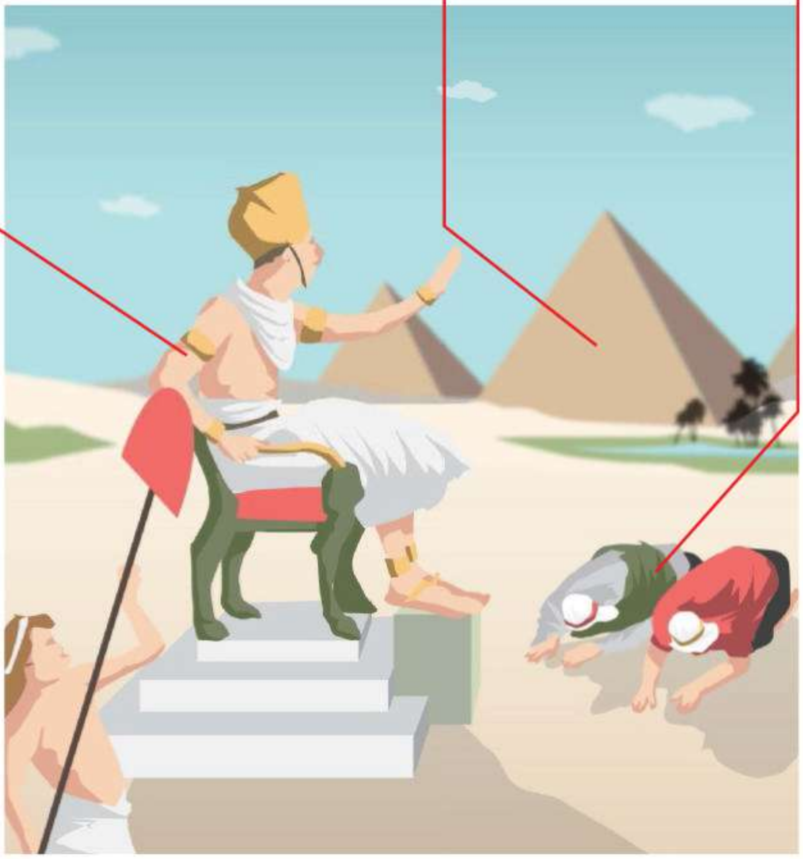
PERSIAN IMMORTALS

550-330 BCE, PERSIA

These elite soldiers would immediately be replaced if they were to fall in battle, keeping their number at exactly 10,000.

Empires – series of states or countries that are ruled by a supreme authority – have existed almost as long as mankind itself. Since the Akkadian Empire of 2250 BCE, the race for the greatest empire on Earth has been an eventful one. People from Alexander the Great to Queen Victoria have built some of the most impressive and imposing empires in history, forever changing the landscape and structure of the world. However, all these empires also have something else in common – all of them have disappeared. How can you avoid that?

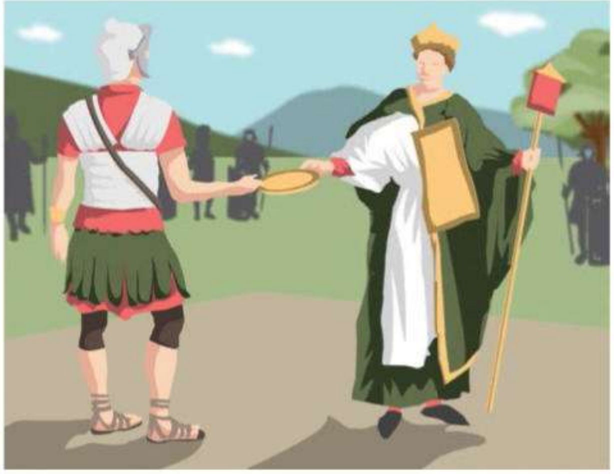
IMPERIAL ESSENTIALS

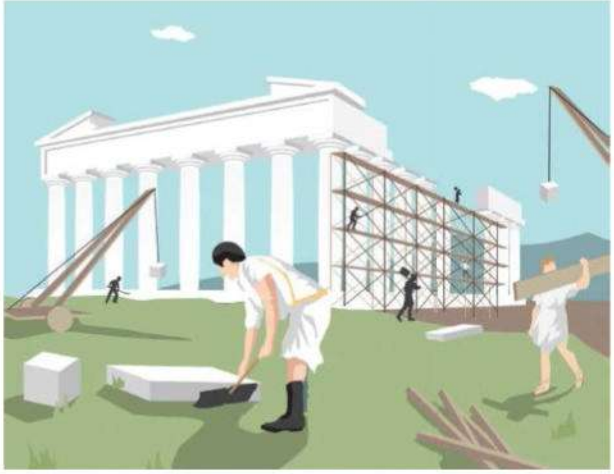


Emperor god
In many empires, rulers have been exalted as a god on Earth, such as Egyptian pharaohs who used this to establish dominance and control.

Temple
As grand displays of their power and dominance, emperors have built temples, statues and monuments in their conquered lands.

Worshippers
A loyal band of followers is essential for forming a strong and dedicated army that will fight in the name of the emperor.





01 Become a strong leader

From Napoleon to Genghis Khan, it has been repeatedly proven that strong leaders build empires. You can copy Alexander the Great and make yourself a hero by leading the troops yourself and rewarding them by sharing the spoils of war. You can also take a more symbolic persona like Queen Victoria and let your ministers and generals do the legwork for you.

02 Create a mythology

To get anyone to follow you, your empire is going to need a core belief system. Ancient Rome didn't have an inspiring past to exploit, so they simply created their own legends (and borrowed a fair few from the Greeks). A strong ideology with temples to worship in will unite your public and convince them that expansion is a great idea.

How not to… maintain an empire

Nobody can deny Alexander the Great's prowess in building an empire. In little more than ten years, he used his military genius and powerful army to create an empire that stretched from the Adriatic Sea in Europe to the Indus River in Asia, toppling the Achaemenid Empire in the process. However, this kingdom that crossed three continents came crumbling down just as quickly as it was built. Ruled by his own arrogance, Alexander created an empire that placed him at the centre; the well-being of the people and the upkeep of the empire relying on him. He refused to leave a clear successor and eliminated anyone who threatened his reign. When he met his premature death, likely by assassination, he simply said his kingdom should be left "to the strongest". Alexander failed to provide a male heir and had also killed anyone who might have been suitable for the role. Civil war broke out and his great empire was torn apart in a matter of years.

03 Conquer with your army

Now you have a loyal band of followers, you shouldn't have any trouble getting them to sign up to the army. Sometimes simply having a powerful force will convince countries that joining you is in their best interest. If they continue to resist then just give them a taste of your steel; they'll come around, eventually.

04 Exploit resources

Your army may have managed to grab some lush new land for you, but all that conquering can be pretty expensive. The quickest way to raise funds is to create a lucrative trade network by exploiting the natural resources of the land you just claimed. The British Empire ran on trade, with trade links from Europe to Africa, Asia and North America.

05 Keep your people happy

Happy people are less likely to rebel. The Mongol and Rashidun Caliphate empires allowed freedom of religion, while the Romans were the first to provide public welfare and baths, where people could socialise and wash. Ignore any stirring of discontent at your own risk; if you can build an empire, someone else can just as easily topple it.

06 Divide, conquer, expand!

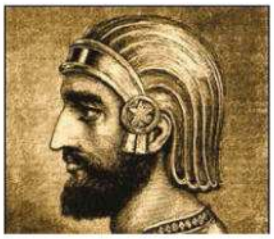
So you have your powerful army, content people and money pouring in from trade - what's next? Expansion, of course. You could move slowly, like the British colonialists who set up overseas trading posts and just never left, or go in all guns (or scimitars) blazing like the Mongols. Be careful, though; the bigger an empire gets, the more difficult it is to manage.

4 EMPIRE BUILDERS

CYRUS THE GREAT

600-530 BCE, PERSIA

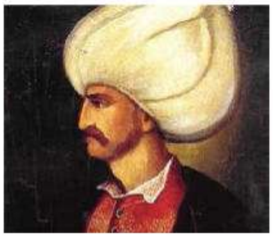
Founder of the Achaemenid Empire, Cyrus the Great expanded it into Southwest and Central Asia.



SULEIMAN THE MAGNIFICENT

1494-1566, TURKEY

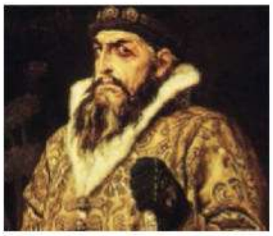
The longest-reigning sultan of the Ottoman Empire saw it claim Belgrade, Rhodes, Hungary and much of the Middle East.



IVAN THE TERRIBLE

1530-1584, RUSSIA

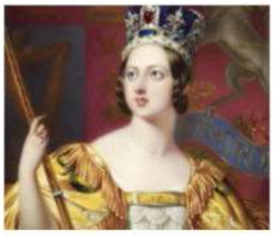
Ivan the Terrible's reign oversaw the expansion of the Russian Empire through the conquests of Siberia, Astrakhan and the Khanates of Kazan.

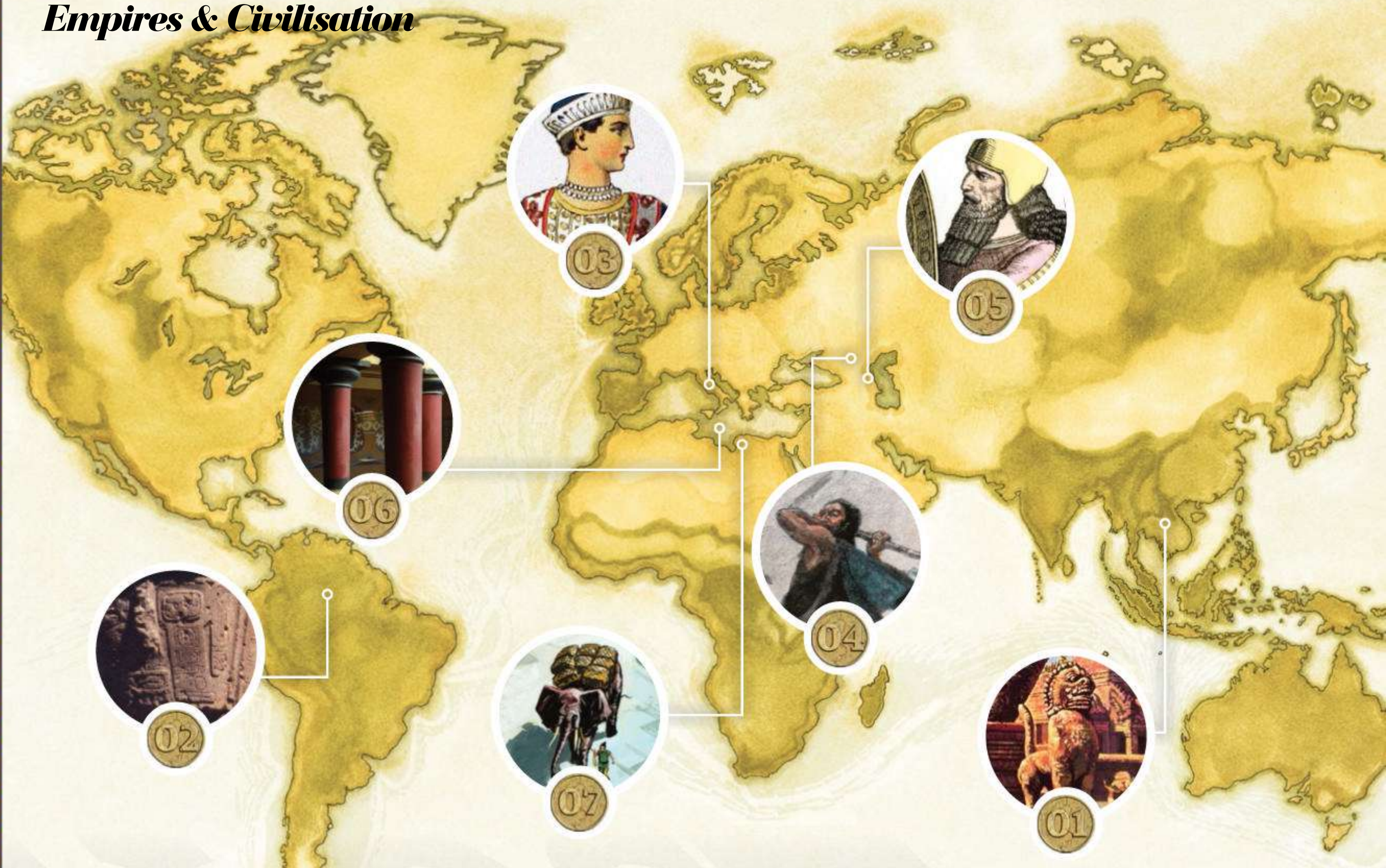


QUEEN VICTORIA

1819-1901, UNITED KINGDOM

Victoria ruled during the greatest expansion of the British Empire, and became the first empress of India in 1876.





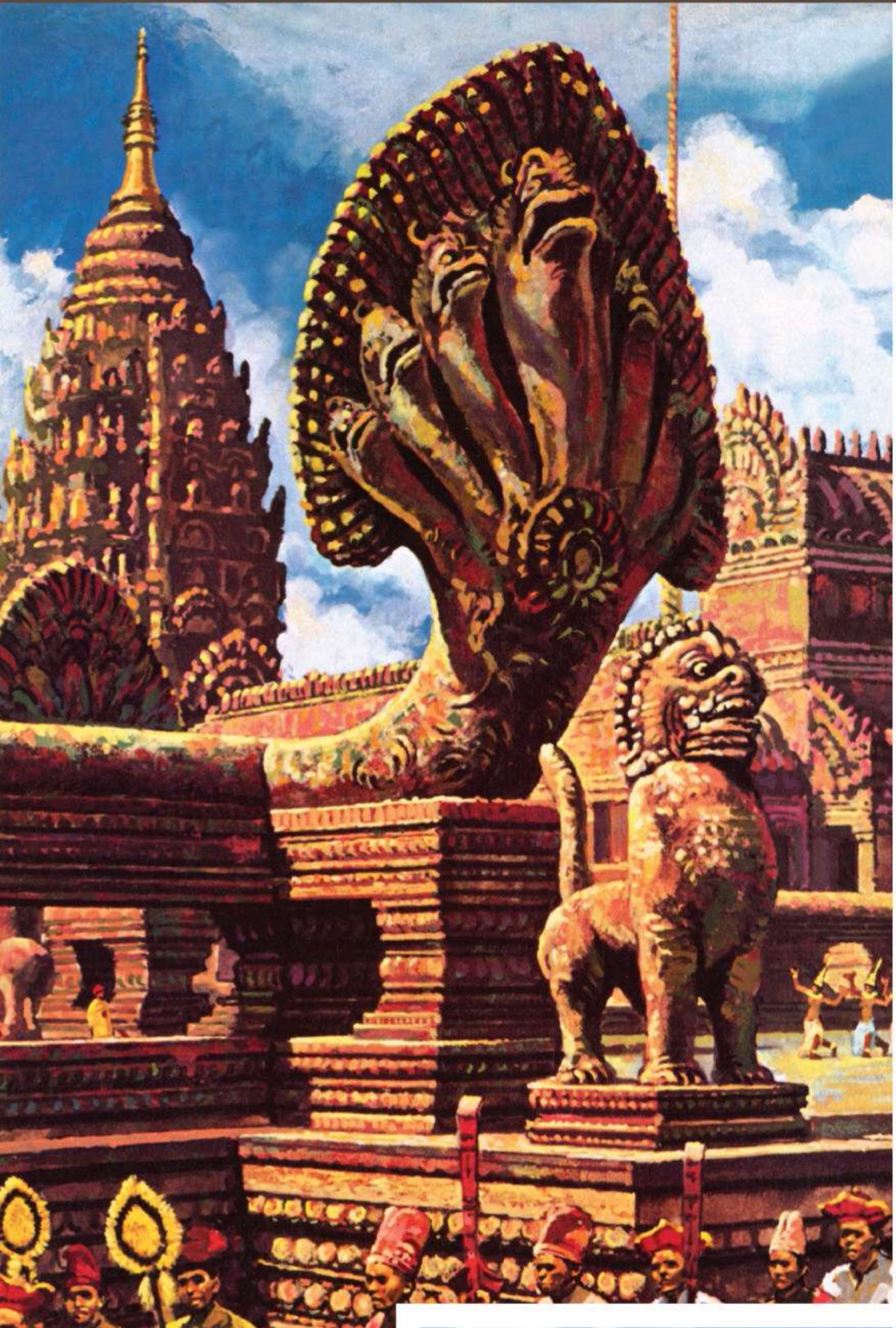
7 LOST CIVILISATIONS

The forgotten superpowers that shaped the world we know today

History is often described as being written by the winners, which is a fair point when you consider the emphasis that is placed on the Romans, Egyptians and Greeks. However, in the ancient world there were many other cultures and kingdoms that helped form the history of the human race and add to humanity's conquest of Earth. Originally full of bustling metropolises and unique cultures, some of these empires were unlucky enough to come into contact with the all-conquering force of the Roman legions or Greek hoplites, while others were victims of devastating natural disasters. Additionally, the fall of some of these civilisations is shrouded in mystery, with various theories as to how and why they suddenly vanished. Subsequently, much of their influence and memory have been long since forgotten.

Luckily, the modern world is full of clues that have stood the test of time, from the ruins of fallen cities through to the systems and structures that we use today. These seven forgotten civilisations may not have contributed as much to human progression as their more famous counterparts, but they remain an integral cog in the evolution of trade, architecture and warfare.

Discover the cultures that built the first aqueducts, invented the 365-day calendar, smelted the first iron weapons and even built the first zoos. Read on to meet the people who gave the Egyptians an honest run for their money and a civilisation that survived two natural disasters that shook their small remote island home, as we shine a light on Earth's greatest lost civilisations.



KHMER EMPIRE

Naturally fortified by a river delta, the Khmer Empire was a formidable state that helped to contour Southeast Asia

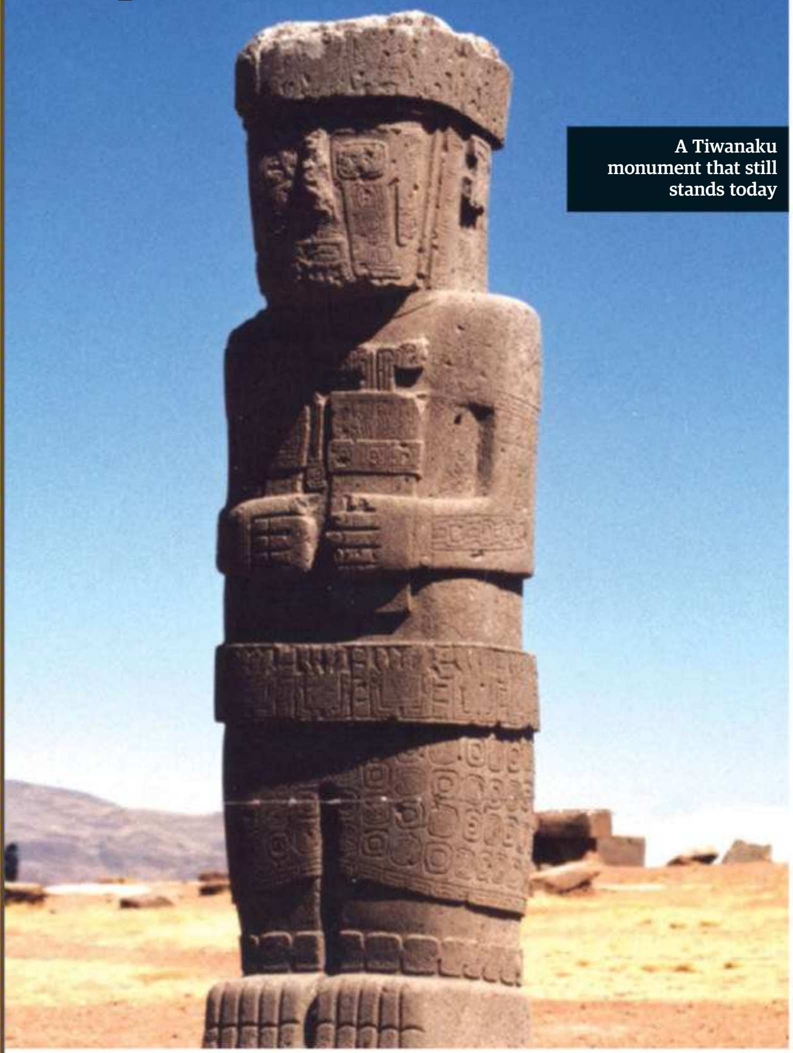
Where was it: **Across today's Vietnam, Cambodia, Laos and Thailand**
When did it exist: **800-1400**
Strengths: **Advanced water system, strong economy, natural resources**
Weaknesses: **Uncontrollable population, rival civilisations, overexpansion**
Amazing fact: **The Khmer Empire only lost one major naval battle in 600 years**

Water is the life stream of all civilisations, and the Khmer Empire completely embraced it and used it to its advantage. The Khmer incorporated an extensive water network into their civilisation to allow their capital city of Angkor to flourish on the banks of the Mekong River. Briefly the largest city in the world, Angkor covered 1,000 square kilometres (386 square miles) and is believed to have accommodated around 1 million people.

This city grew out of the remains of the Funan and Chenla Empires, and was a similar size to many of the world's modern cities. The advanced water system contained a network of channels and reservoirs that utilised the monsoon climate to collect water for use in the dry season. Each area of the city had channels of fresh water running through it, earning it the title of a 'hydraulic city' by contemporary historians. Its strong economy allowed the empire to expand into Laos, Thailand and Vietnam. This expansion brought the Khmer people into direct contact with other settlements and empires such as the Bagan and Sukhothia to the west and their greatest rivals, the Cham, to the east.

Their most famous leader was Jayavarman II, who led the civilisation to their greatest military successes against the Cham. The Khmer state was divided up into over 20 provinces and trade with China boomed. The biggest exports were wood, ivory, cardamom spices, wax, gold, silver and silk, and cash flooded into Angkor. The gradual decline of the Khmer can be attributed to three main factors: the diluting of their culture through new strands of Buddhism, a gradual weakening of their water network, and an overexpansion that brought them into conflict with the Ayutthaya Kingdom and fully exposed to military threats.

Angkor Wat in modern-day Cambodia was one of the Khmer Empire's holiest places


A Tiwanaku monument that still stands today

The city walls of Velathri, a major city in the Etruscan League

TIWANAKU

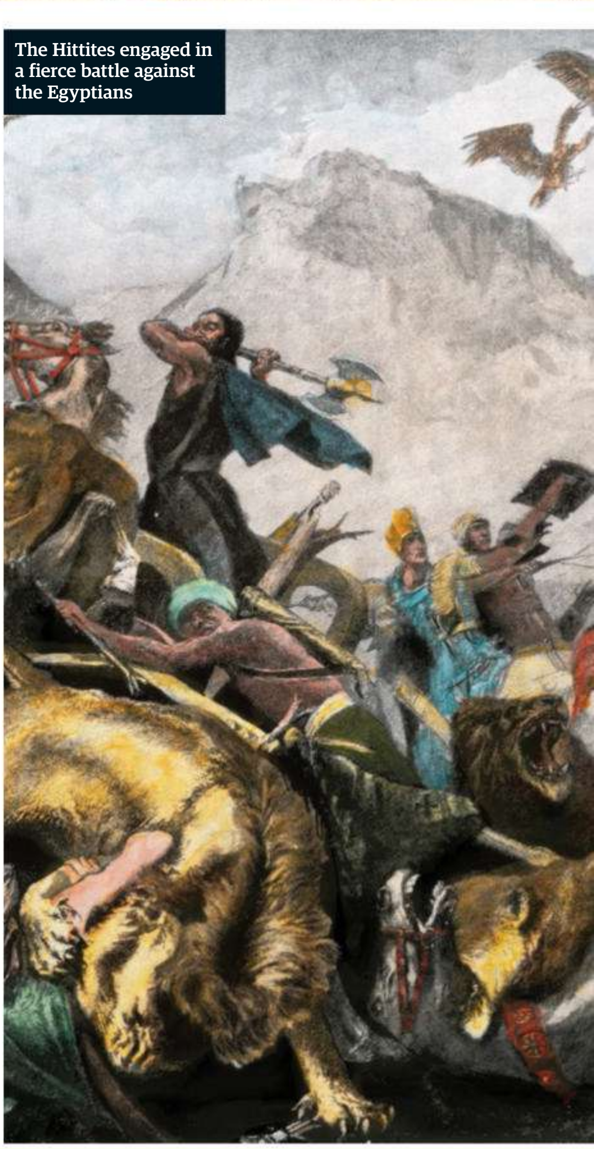
This civilisation proved you didn't need an army to survive

02

Where was it: **Bolivia**
When did it exist: **500-900**
Strengths: **Good agricultural location, construction techniques, expert farmers**
Weaknesses: **No writing system, overuse of their farming land, no military presence**
Amazing fact: **Tiwanaku cities were so grand that when the Incas discovered them, they believed they were made by gods**

The most prominent civilisation to come out of Peru was the Incas, whose culture flourished from approximately 1200 until the Spanish conquest of 1532. However, before the Incas came the Tiwanaku tribes, who colonised both Chile and Peru. A multi-ethnic society who settled in the upper reaches of the Andes, the Tiwanaku are remembered for their many remarkable monuments that still stand today. The most famous of these were the Kalasasaya's Temple and the step pyramid of Akapana, which were used as a temple and observatory respectively. As well as these impressive structures, the Tiwanaku also had underground drainage and paved streets, with cities that were planned in a grid system.

Over 10,000 people lived in their capital city (also called Tiwanaku), which is believed to be one of the oldest cities in the world. Their society was aided by its base in the rich Titicaca basin, which had just the right mix of rainfall, food sources and land. Subsequently, the Tiwanaku became expert farmers and pioneered a method of farming known as 'flooded-raised field' agriculture, which used the effective system of irrigation. This well-fed population (there were over 50,000 agricultural fields in the capital) allowed the Tiwanaku to expand into many other areas of South America. The civilisation was at the peak of its powers in the 8th century, but mysteriously ended in the 9th century. No one is quite sure why the Tiwanaku disappeared but is believed that they, as well as a similar culture known as the Wari, were victims of a dramatic shift in climate which devastated the crops and caused mass starvation. As they had no writing system and never engaged in war with Spanish conquistadors, the Tiwanaku are a true forgotten civilisation.


The Hittites engaged in a fierce battle against the Egyptians

ETRURIA

Before the Romans, Italy was occupied by a civilisation that was just as advanced

Where was it: Central Italy

When did it exist: 800-250 BCE

Strengths: Construction expertise, iron and copper trade, urban planning

Weaknesses: Poor army, territory desirable to invaders, locality to Rome

Amazing fact: The Etruscans invented the idea of armed combat for sport, or as we more commonly know them: gladiators.

The Etruscan story begins in post-Iron Age Italy. Originally inhabiting the area we now know as Tuscany, Ancient Etruria grew in the 9th and 8th centuries BCE thanks to its rich seams of mineral ores, strong agriculture and plentiful timber resources. The civilisation reached the height of its power in the 6th century BCE when 12 city-states were allied in the Etruscan League. The main cities were Tarquinii, Vulci, Caere and Veii, whose economy was based on a thriving copper and iron trade with the Greeks and Carthaginians. Being the first real major settlement on the Italian peninsula, Etruria became the basis of the civilisations in late antiquity to follow. They were one of the first peoples to dispose of kings and be ruled by an intelligentsia of aristocrats and magistrates, and their architecture and construction techniques arguably influenced the Romans as much as the Greeks did. Their homes were made from mud brick baked in the hot Mediterranean sun mixed with wood and stone, and some even had upper storeys. These houses, which were very advanced for their time, were set into the first type of rectangular urban planning and were accompanied by roads and bridges, which used arch and vault construction techniques. Even the Latin alphabet and the Roman toga have their origins with the Etruscan people.

Dr Kathryn Lomas

Dr Lomas is an honorary senior research associate at University College London and a part-time tutor in Classics at the University of Durham.

The most significant Etruscan remains are the cemeteries of their key cities and, to a lesser extent, their settlements. Unlike the Greeks, they did not leave impressive buildings, but their tombs (many with frescoes depicting Etruscan society, myths and legends) and their contents are elaborate. Their most obvious lasting impact is the dissemination of writing and literacy. The Etruscans were the first Italian culture to adopt writing, adapting the Phoenician alphabet in the 8th century BCE.

Etruria is also known for its maritime prowess as they explored the Adriatic and Aegean Seas, establishing colonies on Corsica, Sardinia and even in Spain. The Romans, a civilisation that owed so much to the Etruscans, proved to be their downfall. The growing Roman military juggernaut proved irresistible to Etruscan resistance as their league of city-states was annexed into the new Roman Republic in 250 BCE.

HOW WE PICKED OUR LIST

Choosing which 'forgotten' civilisations to include was difficult as it depends on how the word 'forgotten' is defined. It was essential that we find civilisations that were much less known than the major cultures of antiquity, such as the Romans and Greeks, but also contributed to the human race. There were a number of South American civilisations, but the Tiwanaku fit the bill due to their iconic pyramids and innovative farming methods. The Etruscans and Minoans were definite choices as they fit the bill perfectly, while the Hittites and Phoenicians both contributed to their area and era in ways that haven't been discussed extensively.

HITTITE EMPIRE

Egypt's greatest rivals, the Hittites were masters of the chariot

Where was it: Turkey, Syria and Iraq

Dates of civilisation: Ca 1700-700 BCE

Strengths: Expert chariot makers, iron manufacture, fortified city of Hattusa

Weaknesses: Drawn-out rivalry with Egyptians, city-states had no political unity, slow economical advancement

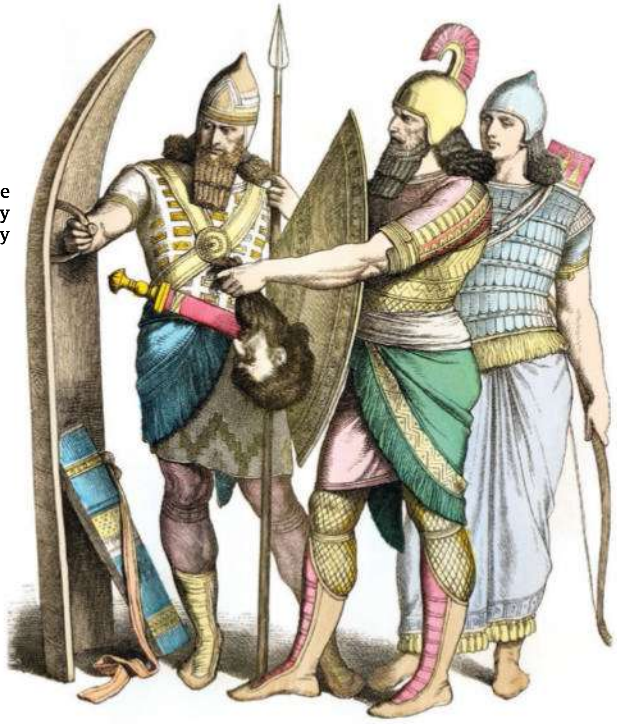
Amazing fact: Hittite battle axes were shaped like human hands!

At its peak, the Hittite Empire rivalled the more famous kingdom of Egypt, and were such a threat that Egypt's Pharaoh Ramesses II resorted to signing a peace treaty with the Hittites after the brutal Battle of Kadesh, history's biggest chariot battle. However, they slipped quietly from the historical radar after being assumed into the Assyrian Empire and because their culture varied considerably between each region. The Hittites' call to fame was their chariot building. Among the first civilisations to pioneer the manufacture of iron, their warrior-like culture thrived before being overwhelmed by the superior Assyrians.

At its largest extent, Hittites were found in modern-day Turkey, Syria and Iraq. Like many other forgotten civilisations, Hittite lands were divided up into city-states with no political unity with each other. The biggest of these was the mountain fortress of Hattusa, which was heavily fortified by King Suppiluliuma. The Hittite Empire collapsed in 1160 BCE after civil war and a scramble for the throne. Scattered and leaderless, a settlement was formed between the Syro-Hittite peoples, but this was only a brief respite before they were invaded by the Assyrians in 700 BCE.

ASSYRIA

Combining a strong military ethos with huge leaps in education, the Assyrians were a force to be reckoned with



Assyrians were innovators of weaponry and military strategy

Where was it:
Iran and Syria
When did it exist:
2400 BCE - 1300 CE
Strengths: Technological advances, iron weapons, emphasis on education
Weaknesses: Proximity to other strong empires, administration spread too thinly
Amazing fact: Assyria contained several zoos as one of their kings, Tiglath-Pileser, was obsessed with animals

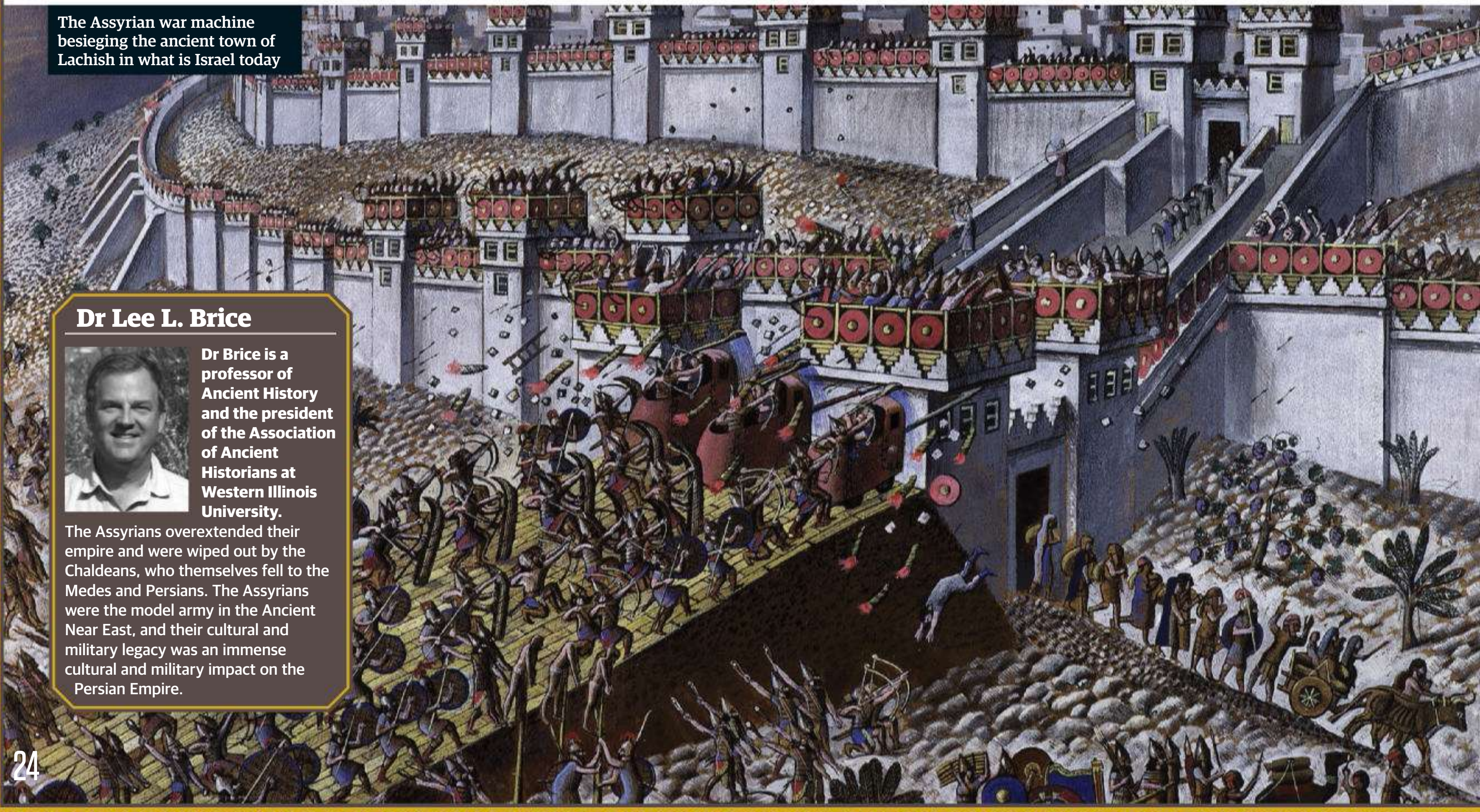
---

The Assyrians shared the area of Mesopotamia (Iraq, Turkey and Syria) with the Babylonians, but they could not have differed more. While in Babylon the kingdom was ruled by the priesthood, Assyrians were ruled by kings and generals. This allowed the Assyrians to become a much larger military power and they were able to expand their empire considerably. The benefactors of the rich and fertile land on the Arbel and Nineveh Plains, the Assyrians amassed a huge population who gathered in their largest cities, Arbel, Ashur and Nimrud. They spoke Akkadian and were some of the first peoples to record writings on stone tablets and later, parchment and papyrus.

The Assyrians were pioneers of animal domestication, pottery, controllable fire and iron smelting – it was the latter technology that gave their military a huge boost. Fighting enemies armed with bronze, the stronger iron weapons allowed them to conquer the Hittites, who were roundly defeated at the Battle of Nihriya in 1245 BCE. Assyrian policy for defeated powers was to not incorporate their people into their nation but deport them to ensure there was no rebellion under their rule. Exceptions were only made if the individual or group was believed to be of use to the greater Assyrian society, such as scholars. One of the Assyrians' greatest achievements was in education, as the School of Nisibis is believed to be the first-ever university, teaching theology, philosophy and medicine. These houses of education provided the first systematic lists of plants and animals, as well as progression in other areas, such as an early postal system.

The Assyrians are also attributed with building some of the first aqueducts and arches, hundreds of years before the Romans, and introducing the modern idea of keeping time. Pax-Assyria ruled the majority of Mesopotamia for approximately 1,800 years, where their cities were huge metropolises guarded by extensive fortifications. Unlike other settlements of the age, the Assyrians had a kingdom that was unified and not limited to separate city-states. Instead, imperial administration ruled the land as local governors reported to the central authority.

The final Assyrian demise is shrouded in mystery, but it is believed they entered a dark age in 1300 after constant wars with the Byzantine Empire. After their empire crumbled, their civilisation saw a mass influx of Jews and Arabs. Assyrians were primarily Christian, but after high taxes were put on this faith, they changed to Islam. This effectively ended the idea of being 'Assyrian'. As the Assyrians were ethnically distinct from both Arabs and Jews, this may be a contributing factor to their slip into relative obscurity.



The Assyrian war machine besieging the ancient town of Lachish in what is Israel today

Dr Lee L. Brice

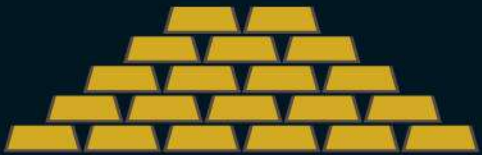
Dr Brice is a professor of Ancient History and the president of the Association of Ancient Historians at Western Illinois University.

The Assyrians overextended their empire and were wiped out by the Chaldeans, who themselves fell to the Medes and Persians. The Assyrians were the model army in the Ancient Near East, and their cultural and military legacy was an immense cultural and military impact on the Persian Empire.

THE ASSYRIAN EMPIRE IN NUMBERS

15 METRES

The thickness of the walls surrounding its capital city



1 TON

The amount of gold seized during its invasion of Jerusalem

30,000

The number of clay tablets found in the ruins of an Assyrian library

200,000

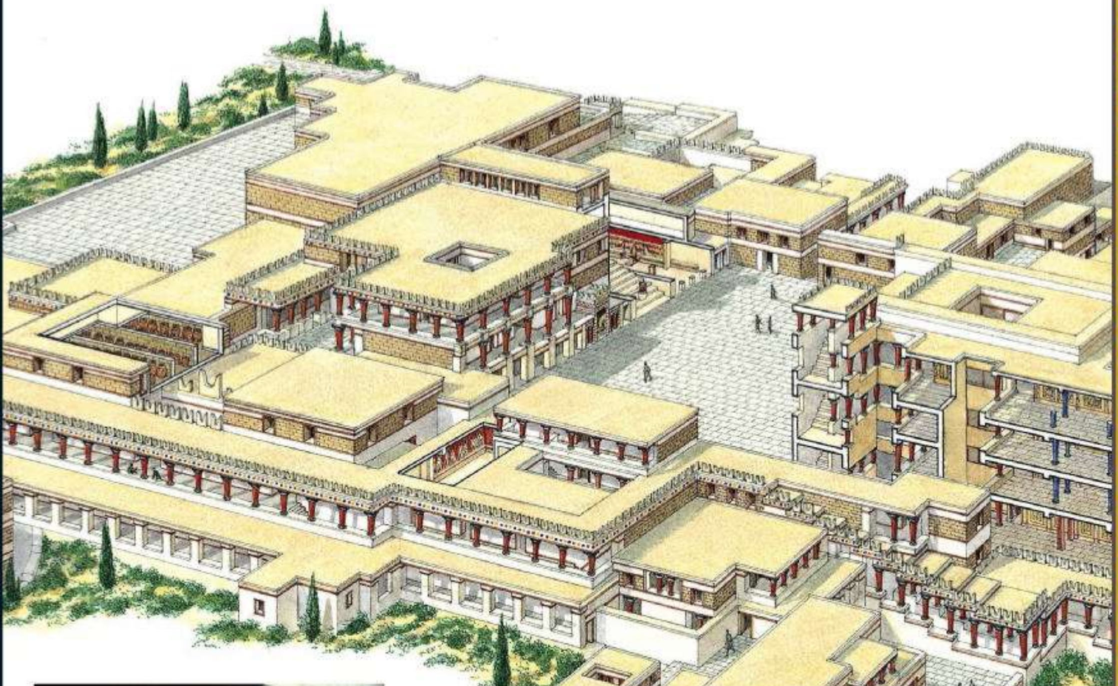
The size of the empire's army at its strongest

2,100

The number of gods in Mesopotamian religion

4 MILLION

The number of people deported by the Assyrians



The Minoan city of Knossos

MINOA

The Minoans flourished as expert traders and shipbuilders

Where was it: Crete
When did it exist: 3000-1100 BCE
Strengths: Bureaucratic hierarchy, shipbuilding, knowledge of metallurgy
Weaknesses: Weak military, natural disasters
Amazing fact: The Minoans had a sport that involved jumping over bulls' horns

---

Of all the lost civilisations, the Minoans may be the most mysterious. Isolated on the Greek island of Crete, their society flourished with little interruption for centuries. Arguably the first European civilisation, they first settled on Crete in 3000 BCE and were later influenced by the neighbouring Greek and Egyptian civilisations with whom they frequently traded with. Minoan culture originally had no centralised government and a flexible ruling system with large, grand palaces acting as the key areas of administration. Tombs known as 'tholos' were the key architectural feature of the Minoans and this, along with their paved road system, running water and pottery was incorporated by the later Greek and Roman civilisations. By 2000 BCE, kings had assumed control of the island as wine, olive oil, wool and cloth exports flourished. This signalled the beginning of a bureaucratic system and social hierarchy on the island, with nobles and peasants making up an early feudal system. Women also played a large role in society, serving as administrators and priestesses, and had the same rights as men. It was this unity that made the Minoans such a remarkable people.

The Minoans had a strong maritime presence that helped them import large sums of copper, silver and gold. In around 1700 BCE, the Minoan culture was shaken by an earthquake that destroyed many of their settlements. They managed to recover from this natural disaster, but now had company on the Mediterranean; Greeks and Mycenaeans began to threaten trade interests, especially as the Minoans had now expanded to other Greek islands such as Thera, Rhodos, Melos and Kythira. Their luck got even worse when in 1375 BCE, the island's largest city, Knossos, was devastated. Historians argue whether this was the work of an invasion force or a volcanic eruption, but either way, this crippled the Minoan people, who were dispatched by an oncoming invasion force in 1100 BCE. The people of Crete now answered to Athens. The Minoans would never trouble the history books again.

Dr Nicoletta Momigliano

Dr Momigliano is a reader in Aegean Prehistory at the University of Bristol and a specialist in Minoan archaeology. I would not say that the Minoan civilisation is 'forgotten' – instead, I would say it is not as well known as the Roman, Greek or Egyptian civilisations for three principal reasons. First, because the Minoans have been known to scholars and the general public alike for a much shorter time, having been rediscovered only in the early-20th century; second, because they have left their mark on a smaller geographical area; and third, because their artefacts and monuments, although impressive, are not as large and grandiose as those of the Egyptians, Greeks and Romans.

Phoenicians heavily influenced culture, trade and architecture

PHOENICIA

A kingdom of expert traders, this civilisation sailed the seas with no fear and colonised vast swathes of the Mediterranean

07

Where was it: Lebanon and Israel

When did it exist: 4000-332 BCE

Strengths: Peaceful and diplomatic city-states, maritime strength, dye and metal production

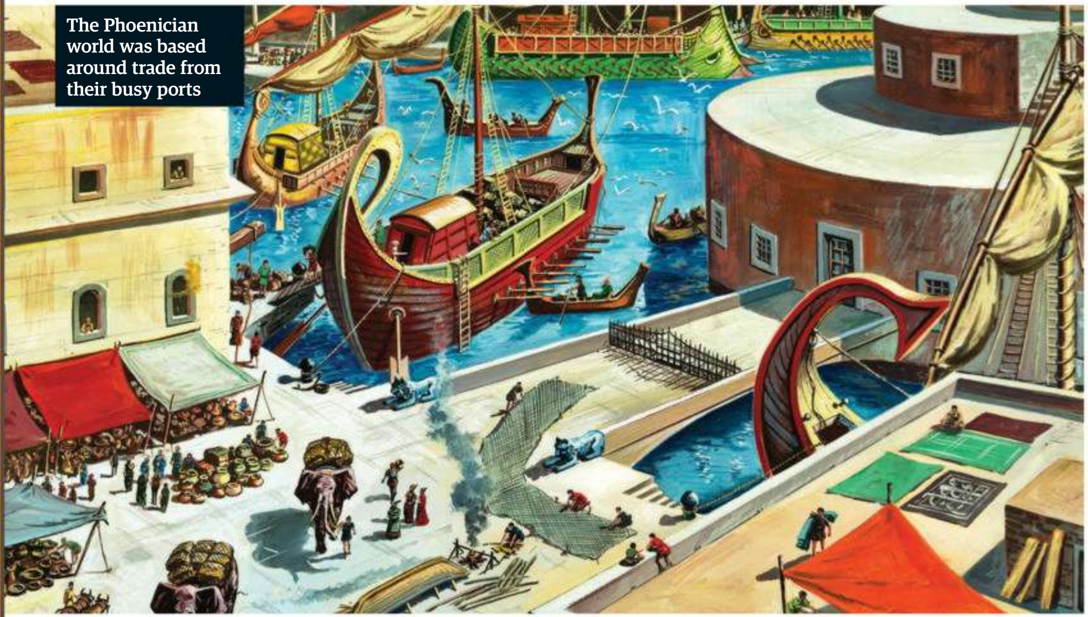
Weaknesses: Minimal military strength, no real capital city or stronghold

Amazing fact: The Ancient Olympic Games originated in Phoenicia

Before transport systems on land became popular, waterways were the best way of travelling long distances, be it for trade or conquest. The greatest pioneers of sea travel in the ancient world were the Phoenicians who made the Mediterranean their own until their demise at the hands of Alexander the Great in 322 BCE. A series of independent city-states, the biggest of their settlements were Tyre and Sidon. A peaceful people, it is believed these states never once went to war with each other, and their peaceful and diplomatic reputation helped them stave off invasion for a prolonged period, simply because their trade was too valuable to lose.

The Phoenicians' openness to dealing with all nations they came across allowed them to trade a variety of goods. They were particularly skilled in shipbuilding (they were the first people to invent the curved hull and the galley design), glass making, jewellery and even furniture. There is evidence of Phoenician involvement throughout the Mediterranean, even reaching as far west as modern-day Spain and Portugal. There are also claims they sailed to Britain in search of the island's rich tin seams. Equally unknown to many, they are credited with founding Carthage, a city that would become a major centre in both the Carthaginian and Roman Empires.

Phoenicia is known as Canaan in Hebrew and is named after 'phoinikes', the Greek word for purple, due to their production of purple dye, which would later become the colour of royalty and aristocracy in both Greece and Rome. Prior to Alexander's conquest, the Persians invaded Phoenician lands in 539 BCE, but the Macedonian invasion was much more devastating, especially for Tyre. The majority of the cities such as Sidon submitted automatically, unwilling to cause bloodshed against Alexander's vastly superior army. However, Tyre decided to take the invaders on at their own game but this backfired spectacularly as hoplites laid siege to the island city for seven months and massacred the population once they had overcome the fortifications. After the Macedonian decline, Phoenicia became a Roman state in 64 CE and developed a Hellenistic society and culture.


The Phoenician world was based around trade from their busy ports

Dr Mark Woolmer

Dr Woolmer is a fellow in Ancient History in the Department of Classics and Ancient History and assistant principal of Collingwood College, Durham University.

The Phoenicians have long been considered a lost or forgotten civilisation due to the almost complete loss of their literary culture. None of the histories, chronicles, philosophical treaties, religious manuals or scientific texts have survived the ravages of time. In one of history's greatest ironies, the very civilisation responsible for transmitting the alphabet to the West has left virtually no written legacy. Compounding this problem is the fact that until recently, there had been no systematic excavations of Phoenician sites.

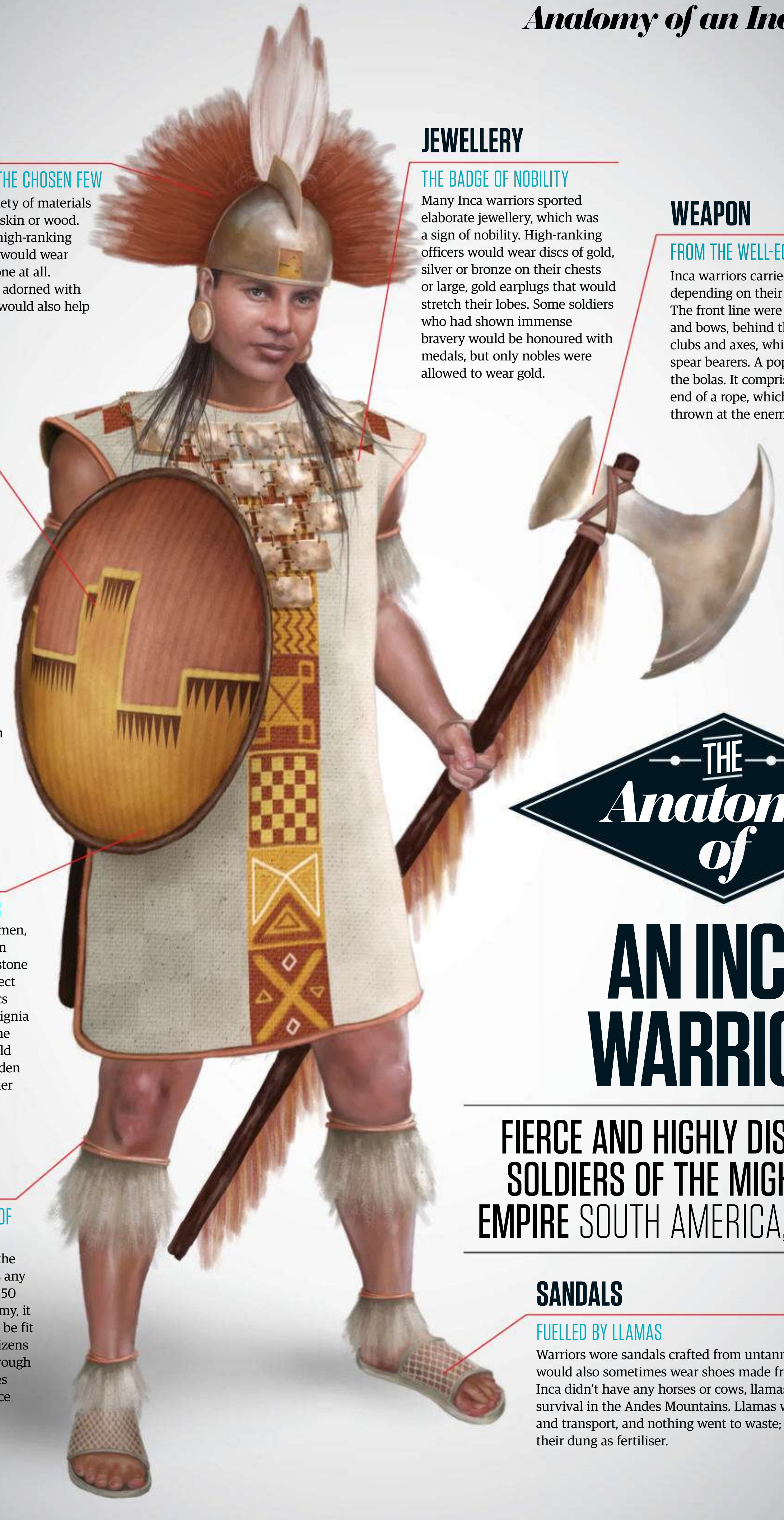
WHICH WAS THE GREATEST?

Every civilisation on our list has its own merits and drawbacks, but the Assyrians were undoubtedly the most successful of the civilisations included as they had the largest empire and survived for the longest period of time. However, where would Mediterranean trade have been without the Phoenicians? Would Rome have still risen without the Etruscans? How long would the Minoans have lasted if they weren't damaged by two natural disasters? The Tiwanaku could well be the 'true' forgotten civilisation as, out of all of our entries, they left the least amount of clues to their history and vanished under mysterious circumstances. Overall, it must be said that from our comprehensive list, the greatest forgotten civilisation must be the Assyrians for their ability to harness an extensive and populous empire and the fact that some of their descendants still roam small pockets of the Middle East in search of a homeland.

The Aqar Quf ziggurat in modern-day Iraq was built by the Hittites

THE *Anatomy of* AN INCA WARRIOR

FIERCE AND HIGHLY DISCIPLINED SOLDIERS OF THE MIGHTY INCA EMPIRE SOUTH AMERICA, 1438-1533



HELMET

MAXIMUM PROTECTION FOR THE CHOSEN FEW

Helmets were made from a variety of materials such as copper, bronze, animal skin or wood. Copper helmets were worn by high-ranking warriors, while regular fighters would wear wooden helmets, if they wore one at all. Sometimes these helmets were adorned with brightly coloured feathers that would also help to distinguish rank.

SHIELD

NOT MUCH USE AGAINST SPANISH GUNS, THOUGH

Most Inca shields were made from wood covered in leather or hide. These shields came in a variety of shapes such as square, round or rectangular and were usually used by high-ranking soldiers. As hand-to-hand fighting was the most common method for Inca armies, protection was of the utmost importance. The army was extremely well disciplined and very rarely broke formation when in battle.

TUNIC

COMFORTABLE BODY ARMOUR

Reserved for officers and noblemen, Inca tunics would be made from thick, padded cotton; plates of stone or metal were also used to protect the back and chest. These tunics were designed with specific insignia and colours corresponding to the region of the warriors, and would provide protection against wooden and stone weapons used by other South American warriors.

FRINGES

BUILDING UP THE STRENGTH OF THE COMMON MAN

Fringes of wool were worn on the biceps and below the knees. As any man between the ages of 25 of 50 could be selected to join the army, it was essential for all warriors to be fit and healthy. For lower-class citizens this offered a chance to rise through the social ranks while for nobles being chosen for military service was an honour.

JEWELLERY

THE BADGE OF NOBILITY

Many Inca warriors sported elaborate jewellery, which was a sign of nobility. High-ranking officers would wear discs of gold, silver or bronze on their chests or large, gold earplugs that would stretch their lobes. Some soldiers who had shown immense bravery would be honoured with medals, but only nobles were allowed to wear gold.

WEAPON

FROM THE WELL-EQUIPPED INCA ARMOURY

Inca warriors carried a variety of weapons depending on their position in the battle. The front line were armed with slingshots and bows, behind them were warriors with clubs and axes, while at the back stood spear bearers. A popular Inca weapon was the bolas. It comprised of stones tied to the end of a rope, which was swung around and thrown at the enemy.

SANDALS

FUELLED BY LLAMAS

Warriors wore sandals crafted from untanned llama hide, but would also sometimes wear shoes made from braided fibre. As the Inca didn't have any horses or cows, llamas were essential for their survival in the Andes Mountains. Llamas would provide wool, food and transport, and nothing went to waste; they would even use their dung as fertiliser.

© Kevin McGivern

VIKING RAIDERS

Portrayed as bloodthirsty pirates, pillaging innocent villagers, Vikings also ruled the waves with a lucrative trade network

The great white sail cracked as the vicious Atlantic wind lashed against it, but still the ship sailed on. Long and sleek, the warship, crafted from mighty oak, crashed through the waves, sending a sharp spray of water across the deck. The men inside rowed as one, their mighty muscles straining as they plunged the oars deep into the water and drove the ship forward through the turbulent waves. Their strength alone brought the ship to land and they poured out onto the beach. Dressed in thick woollen tunics, the warriors were armed with an array of weapons, from long sharpened spears to hefty battle-axes. With a booming voice one man yelled to the others, thrusting his sword into the air, and the rest bellowed in response. Then onward he ran, as the united force thundered uphill against the billowing wind. Their destination? A coastal monastery bursting full of gold, gems and hefty food supplies ripe for the taking, and only a collection of quiet, unassuming monks to protect it.

This image of monstrous invaders laying siege to innocent monasteries and pillaging them of their precious items is the first one that leaps to mind when many are confronted with the word 'Viking'. The portrayal of the Norse tribesmen as rapists and pillagers is so prevailing that it's often forgotten that the word Viking itself means to go on an expedition. It is easy to fall into the assumption that these people were nothing more than pirates - taking from those too weak to defend themselves. And it is undeniable that this happened: the Viking invaders sailed from Scandinavia to coasts of the British Isles and beyond, invading villages and monasteries, killing the inhabitants and stealing their riches. It's spoken about in first-hand accounts and it's still being evidenced today in the reams of Viking hoards discovered from anxious townsfolk who hurried to hide their riches from the merciless invaders.

However, this only tells half the story. Two things powered the Viking civilisation: the vicious raids they're famous for, and something else - trade. Not only did Vikings set up new colonies in the lands they invaded, but they also created powerful trade routes that helped their nation to become one of the most prosperous in the world.

For the majority of the year, the same Vikings who had pillaged the towns worked the land, tirelessly toiling in the field, or creating intricate and valuable ornaments and jewellery to fund their blossoming civilisation.

Vikings had excellent hygiene, bathing at least once a week

VICIOUS VIKINGS

Meet Scandinavia's most terrifying plunderers

ERIK THE RED 951 – 1003

Infamous for: Being exiled from Iceland for murder. He went on to colonise Greenland

GUTHRUM UNKNOWN – 890

Infamous for: Waging war against the king of the West Saxons - Alfred the Great

INGVAR THE FAR-TRAVELLED UNKNOWN

Infamous for: Pillaging the shores of the Caspian Sea

RODULF HARALDSSON UNKNOWN – 873

Infamous for: Leading raids in Britain, France and Germany

IVAR THE BONELESS UNKNOWN

Infamous for: Invading Anglo-Saxon kingdoms of England using the Great Heathen Army

Viking voyages

As expert ship builders, the Vikings were able to voyage further and wider than any civilisation before…

Centuries before Christopher Columbus would stumble upon the land now known as America, the Vikings had claimed the Atlantic Ocean as their own backyard. They had mastered Russia's river system and reached the Middle East; their impressive voyages helped them to become leaders of a rapidly developing world and this new Viking civilisation thrived on the power of a single creation: the ship.

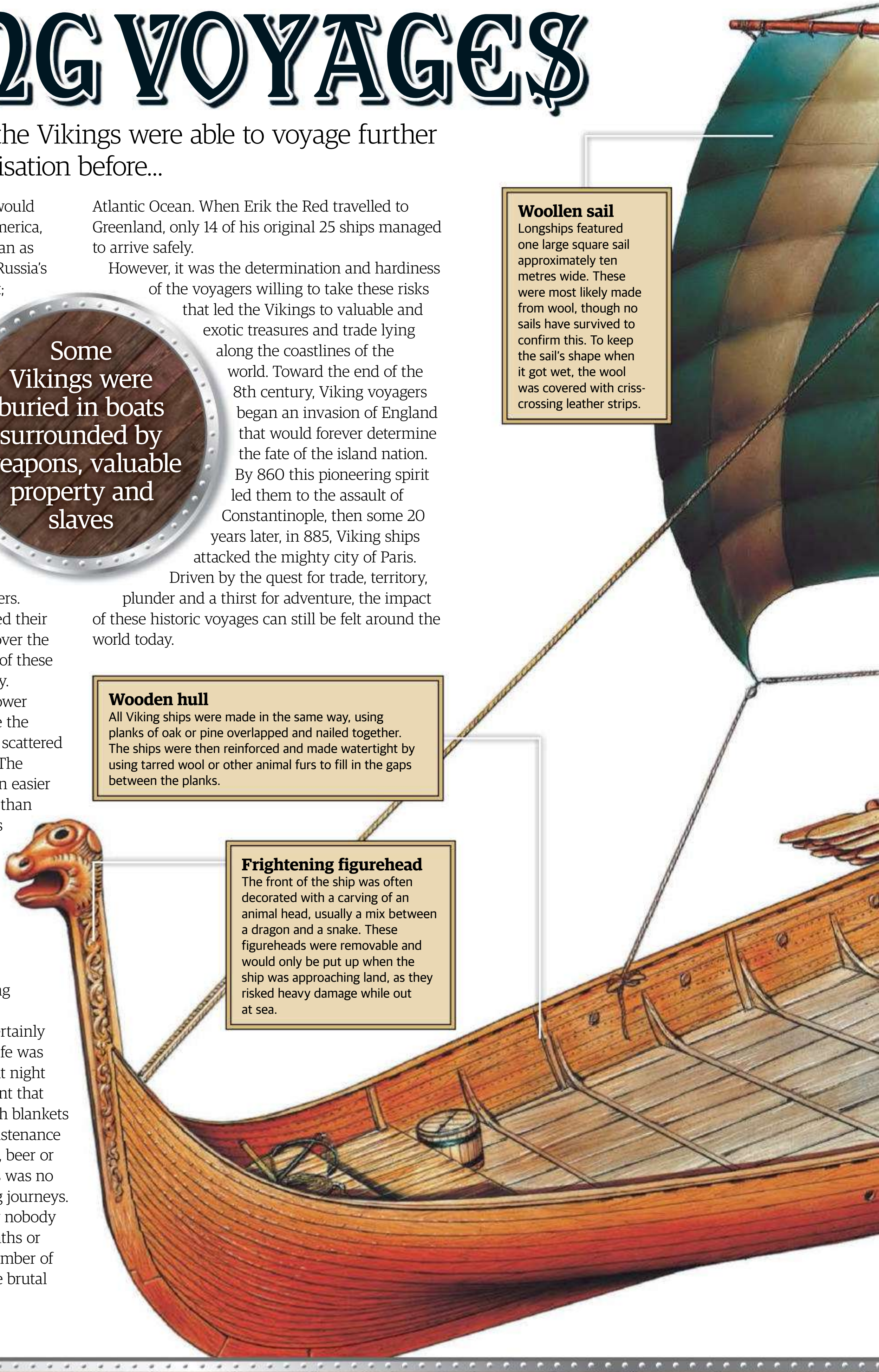
The entire Viking society was built around their ships, which were bigger, lighter and faster than any before. These vessels had been perfected over many years, with the power to brave the vicious storms of the Atlantic Ocean, but also the sleek construction to skim through shallow rivers. These powerful and efficient ships enabled their mighty passengers to create colonies all over the world, and the building and maintaining of these vessels became the basis of Viking society.

Vikings were using their mighty sea power to trade around the coast of Europe while the British Empire was merely a collection of scattered kingdoms unable to defend their shores. The Viking sailors were aware that it was often easier to take the same journey by water rather than land, with some journeys taking five days by sea, compared to a month on land, and they used this to their advantage. Longer voyages were carried out by those settling in strange and exciting foreign lands, and the Viking civilisation spread to Iceland, Greenland, and even to Canada and North America.

The image of a Viking longboat crashing through the waves with its fierce dragon figurehead and its long, sleek curves is certainly an inspiring one, but for those onboard, life was not quite so glamorous. With no shelter, at night the sailors used the sail as a makeshift tent that they would sleep under, shivering beneath blankets or animal skin sleeping bags. The only sustenance would be dried or salted meat with water, beer or sour milk to drink. The sinking of vessels was no great tragedy, but rather expected on long journeys. There would be no rescue sent as usually nobody knew about sunken ships for weeks, months or even years. It was not unusual for any number of ships to go missing on voyages across the brutal Atlantic Ocean. When Erik the Red travelled to Greenland, only 14 of his original 25 ships managed to arrive safely.

However, it was the determination and hardiness of the voyagers willing to take these risks that led the Vikings to valuable and exotic treasures and trade lying along the coastlines of the world. Toward the end of the 8th century, Viking voyagers began an invasion of England that would forever determine the fate of the island nation. By 860 this pioneering spirit led them to the assault of Constantinople, then some 20 years later, in 885, Viking ships attacked the mighty city of Paris. Driven by the quest for trade, territory, plunder and a thirst for adventure, the impact of these historic voyages can still be felt around the world today.

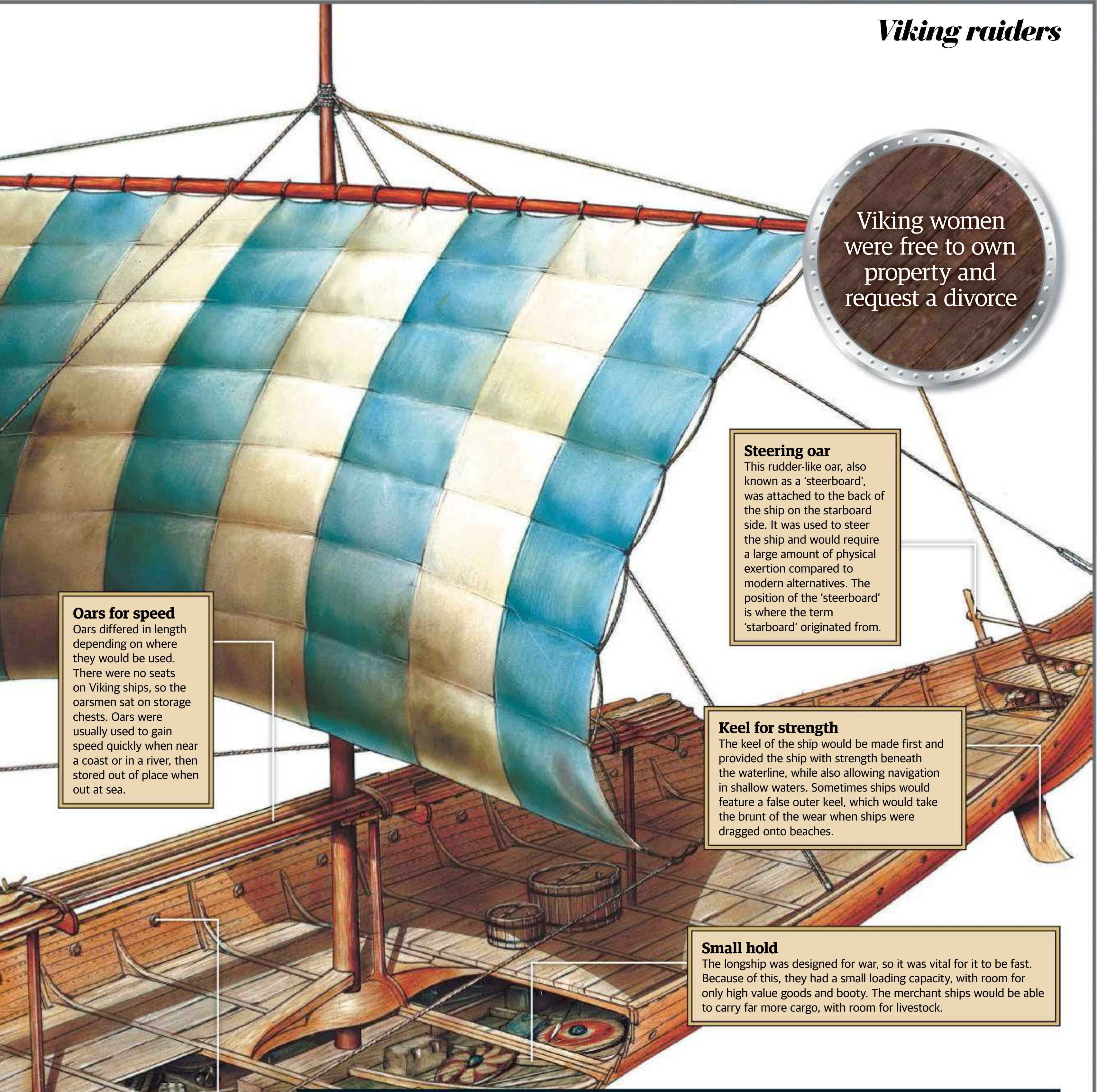
Some Vikings were buried in boats surrounded by weapons, valuable property and slaves



Woollen sail
Longships featured one large square sail approximately ten metres wide. These were most likely made from wool, though no sails have survived to confirm this. To keep the sail's shape when it got wet, the wool was covered with criss-crossing leather strips.

Wooden hull
All Viking ships were made in the same way, using planks of oak or pine overlapped and nailed together. The ships were then reinforced and made watertight by using tarred wool or other animal furs to fill in the gaps between the planks.

Frightening figurehead
The front of the ship was often decorated with a carving of an animal head, usually a mix between a dragon and a snake. These figureheads were removable and would only be put up when the ship was approaching land, as they risked heavy damage while out at sea.



Viking women were free to own property and request a divorce

Steering oar
This rudder-like oar, also known as a 'steerboard', was attached to the back of the ship on the starboard side. It was used to steer the ship and would require a large amount of physical exertion compared to modern alternatives. The position of the 'steerboard' is where the term 'starboard' originated from.

Oars for speed
Oars differed in length depending on where they would be used. There were no seats on Viking ships, so the oarsmen sat on storage chests. Oars were usually used to gain speed quickly when near a coast or in a river, then stored out of place when out at sea.

Keel for strength
The keel of the ship would be made first and provided the ship with strength beneath the waterline, while also allowing navigation in shallow waters. Sometimes ships would feature a false outer keel, which would take the brunt of the wear when ships were dragged onto beaches.

Small hold
The longship was designed for war, so it was vital for it to be fast. Because of this, they had a small loading capacity, with room for only high value goods and booty. The merchant ships would be able to carry far more cargo, with room for livestock.

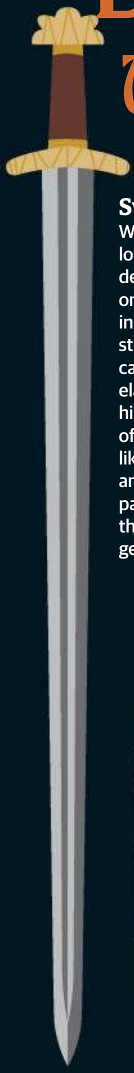
Oarports
These were holes for the oars that ran along the entire length of the ship on both sides. The holes would also be used to tie shields in place, but only when the ships were in port as the risk of losing their vital protection while the ship was in motion was too great.

Navigation

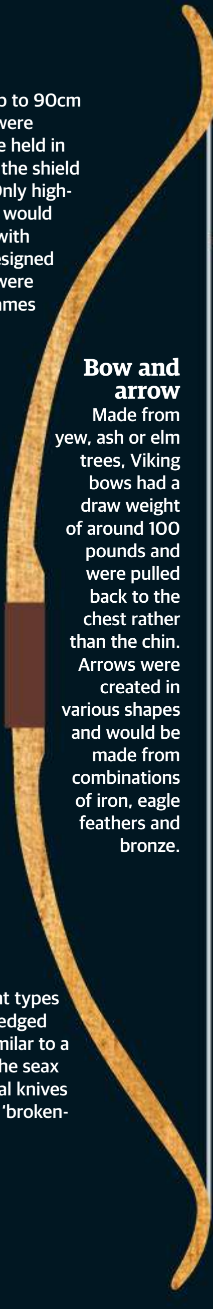
Before some of the greatest explorers in history were born, Vikings had already navigated their way around the world. But with no compasses, satellites or radios, how did this tribe of Scandinavians manage to map the globe so impressively? The answer is simpler than you might expect – experience. Rather than relying on devices, Viking travellers trusted nature to guide them. They would study the position of the stars and Sun, and even the colour of the sea and movement of the waves would give them indication of how close they were to land. Once a journey was complete, sailors would recount their voyage to others who wished to make the same journey. This ancient wisdom would be passed through generations.

The only tools Viking sailors needed were related to the Sun. For example, a sun-shadow board would be used at noon to check whether the ship was on course. A sun-stone could also be used on foggy days when the Sun was not visible. This stone would change colour to indicate the position of the Sun behind the clouds.

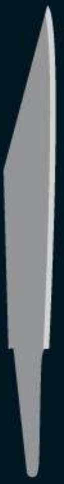
DEADLIEST WEAPONS



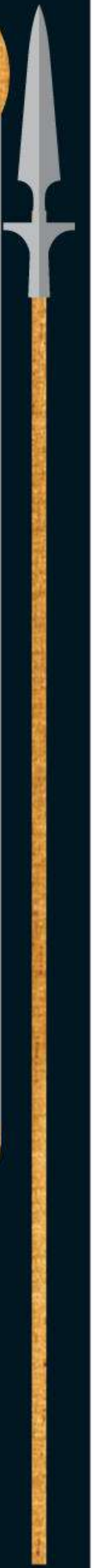
Sword
With blades up to 90cm long, swords were designed to be held in one hand and the shield in the other. Only high-status Vikings would carry swords with elaborately designed hilts. Swords were often given names like Leg-biter, and were passed down through generations.



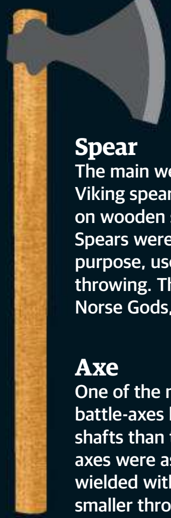
Bow and arrow
Made from yew, ash or elm trees, Viking bows had a draw weight of around 100 pounds and were pulled back to the chest rather than the chin. Arrows were created in various shapes and would be made from combinations of iron, eagle feathers and bronze.



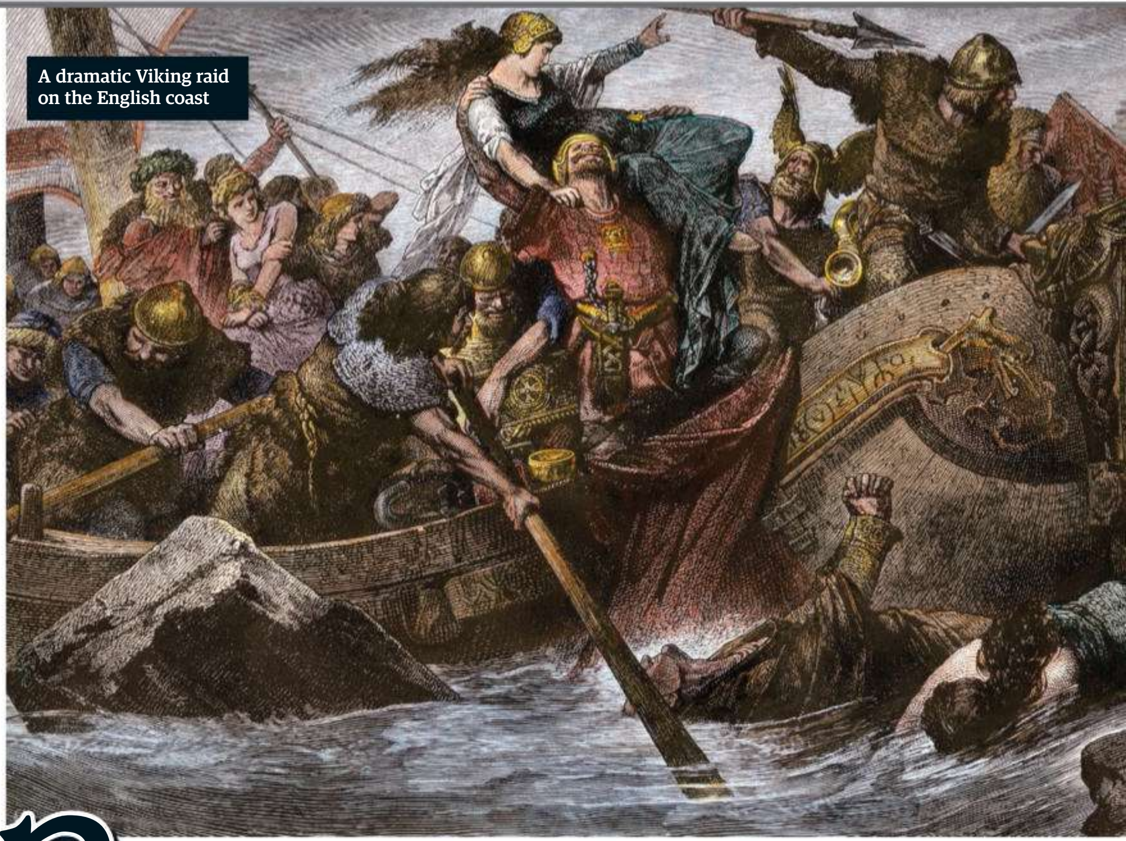
Knives
Vikings had two different types of knives – plain, single-edged knives and the seax – similar to a modern-day machete. The seax were heavier than normal knives and were fashioned in a 'broken-back' style.



Spear
The main weapon of the peasant class, Viking spears had metal heads mounted on wooden shafts of two to three metres. Spears were designed according to their purpose, used for both thrusting and throwing. The weapon of Odin, king of the Norse Gods, it had great cultural meaning.



Axe
One of the most common Viking weapons, battle-axes had larger heads and longer shafts than the ones used as tools. Some axes were as long as a man and were wielded with both hands. There were also smaller throwing axes.



A dramatic Viking raid on the English coast

RAIDS

No monastery was safe from the fiery scourge that swept over the land from beyond the sea

They had arrived in the dead of night; the darkness had been so thick that the monks had not seen their ship until it landed on the shore. It was too late, they all knew it, to call for help. A brother had run into the halls, waking the monks from their beds with shrill cries of "The demons are here! They're coming! They're coming!" Some of the brothers began to scream for help, while others leapt into action, grabbing precious items and concealing them in the folds of their cloaks. But already the doors were down and already the invaders were here. They were huge – bigger than any man the humble brethren had ever seen – with their wild blond hair and mighty weapons grasped in hand. They leapt upon the monks immediately, hacking at their bodies with a frenzied ferocity. Some pleaded for mercy, some did not have time to plead. There was no time for negotiations; how can one negotiate with pure, unbridled violence? There was only death, destruction and blood as they swung their axes and jabbed their swords. One brother alone had managed to escape the massacre. He speedily weaved through the figures and threw himself down into the tall grass outside. He watched as body after body was thrown from the doors of his home; he watched as men still alive were cast off the high cliff into the sea; and he watched as the heathens set the holy walls alight with flame. The hot wind lashed against his face and robes in the flickering darkness. He grasped a golden chalice in his hands numbly, the only thing he had been able to rescue before fleeing. The invaders had the rest of it, all the precious items loaded into sacks on their large ships. And almost as quickly as they had arrived, they slipped away from the shore and returned to the darkness.

In 793, a Viking crew sailing near northeast England raided a Christian monastery at Lindisfarne. For the Vikings the strange, exposed building packed full of valuable treasures was an opportunity too good to miss, but for many in England this shocking and unprovoked attack marked the beginning of the scourge of Viking raids. These sporadic but violent assaults continued across the coasts of England, and by 855 a force known as the Great Heathen Army had arrived in East Anglia. The army made their way across the country, capturing cities as they went, overrunning and overpowering the land. The Scandinavian warriors also launched invasions across the coasts of Ireland and all over mainland Europe. These raids even stretched to the Baltic Sea and Persia. The initial reasons for such rapid expansion are hotly contested between historians, with some believing the raids were a brutal response to the spread of Christianity, or that the Scandinavian population grew too large for their land or perhaps they were the actions of men simply drawn by the thrill of adventure. Whatever the reasons, the invasions left a lasting scar on those who lived to see them.

Blond was a popular hair colour and Viking men would bleach their hair and beards

How the Vikings raided

1 Preparation

Vikings did not strike haphazardly; instead their raids were planned down to the finest detail. They would first identify a weak target to attack along the coasts which they knew perfectly. Because they had the fastest ships in the world they would launch their attack without any prior warning, ensuring that no help could reach their targets in time. Towards the mid-9th century these attacks had escalated to great fleets of three to four hundred ships.

2 Gather horses

Viking ships were designed to row up river, but if the target was some distance away they would leave their ships and travel by horse. With no horses on the ships, they would raid nearby villages for available mounts. These would be used to transport themselves and their booty across the land.

3 Surprise attack

The pious and humble monks did not stand a chance faced with their fierce opponents armed with superior weapons. The well-trained Vikings would launch a sudden furious, vicious attack on the monastery, slaying the holy men. Some would be stripped naked, and cast outside, some taken prisoner, and others thrown into the sea.

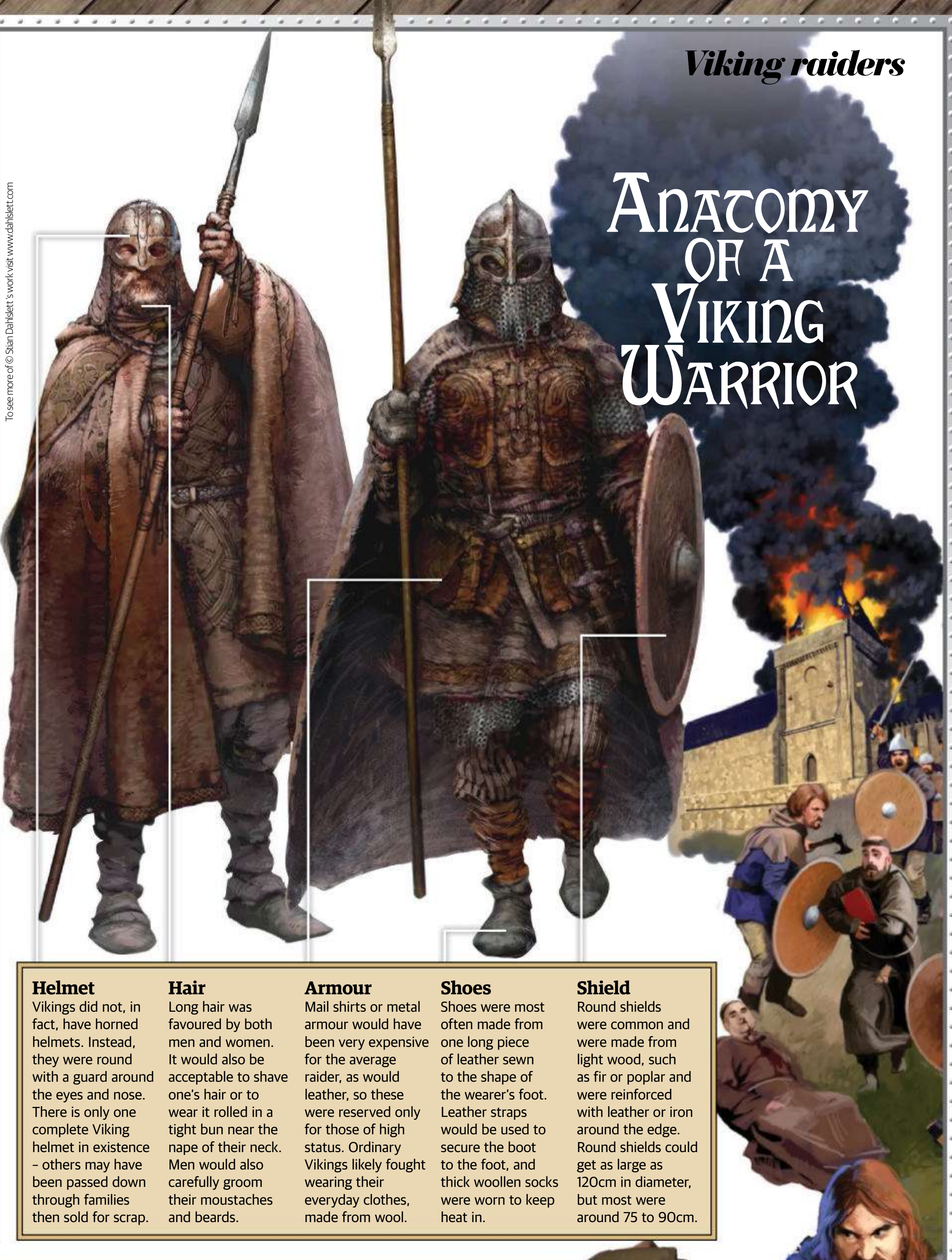
4 Loot and burn

Once the monks were dealt with, Vikings ravaged and pillaged everything they could. They plundered any valuables they could get their hands on, including storages of food, but especially precious relics. However, they often ignored the incredibly valuable bibles. Once they had looted the buildings they set fire to the monasteries and the villages surrounding them.

5 Escape

Laden down with their prisoners and booty, the Vikings would ride back to their ships, load them and sail away. They would later sell the gold, jewels and sacred emblems, and the monks would also fetch a high price in the European slave market.

ANATOMY OF A VIKING WARRIOR



To see more of © Stan Dahlslett's work visit www.dahlslett.com

Helmet

Vikings did not, in fact, have horned helmets. Instead, they were round with a guard around the eyes and nose. There is only one complete Viking helmet in existence – others may have been passed down through families then sold for scrap.

Hair

Long hair was favoured by both men and women. It would also be acceptable to shave one's hair or to wear it rolled in a tight bun near the nape of their neck. Men would also carefully groom their moustaches and beards.

Armour

Mail shirts or metal armour would have been very expensive for the average raider, as would leather, so these were reserved only for those of high status. Ordinary Vikings likely fought wearing their everyday clothes, made from wool.

Shoes

Shoes were most often made from one long piece of leather sewn to the shape of the wearer's foot. Leather straps would be used to secure the boot to the foot, and thick woollen socks were worn to keep heat in.

Shield

Round shields were common and were made from light wood, such as fir or poplar and were reinforced with leather or iron around the edge. Round shields could get as large as 120cm in diameter, but most were around 75 to 90cm.

Lindisfarne priory remains a place of pilgrimage to this day

The attack on Lindisfarne

Lindisfarne is a holy island off the northeast coast of England, and during the Middle Ages was the base of Christian evangelising in the north of the country. However, in 793 a Viking raid on the monastery of Lindisfarne sent a wave of dismay to wash over Christians worldwide. On 7 June, Viking raiders invaded the monastery and "destroyed God's church on Lindisfarne, with plunder and slaughter." Although the attack was not the first in the country, it was unusual in that it attacked the heart of the Christian nation in the north. A contemporary scholar wrote of the attack, "Never before has such terror appeared in Britain as we have now suffered from a pagan race [...] The heathens poured out the blood of saints around the altar, and trampled on the bodies of saints in the temple of God, like dung in the streets."

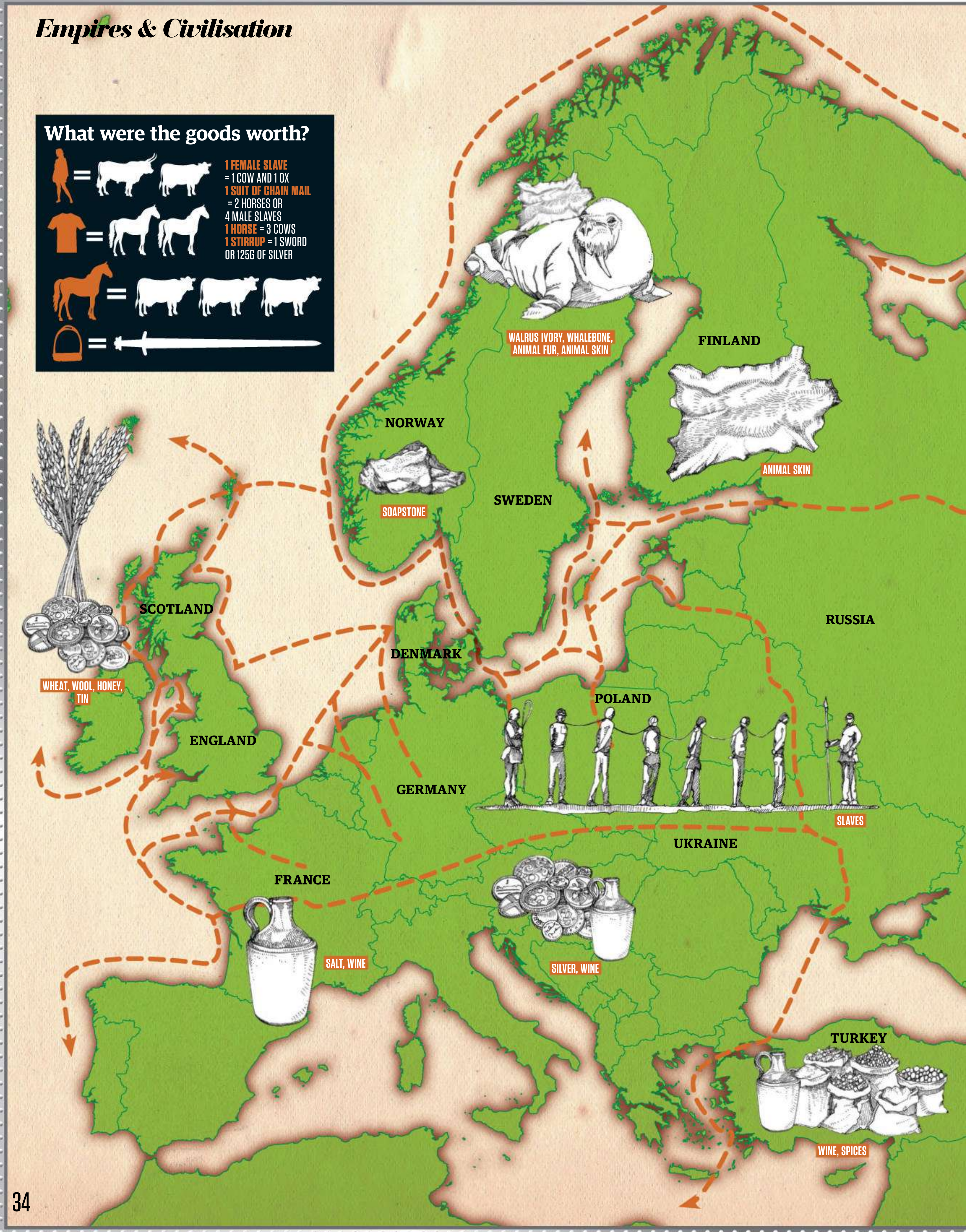
What were the goods worth?

1 FEMALE SLAVE = 1 COW AND 1 OX

1 SUIT OF CHAIN MAIL = 2 HORSES OR 4 MALE SLAVES

1 HORSE = 3 COWS

1 STIRRUP = 1 SWORD OR 125G OF SILVER


WALRUS IVORY, WHALEBONE, ANIMAL FUR, ANIMAL SKIN
FINLAND
NORWAY
ANIMAL SKIN
SOAPSTONE
SWEDEN
SCOTLAND
RUSSIA
DENMARK
WHEAT, WOOL, HONEY, TIN
POLAND
ENGLAND
GERMANY
SLAVES
UKRAINE
FRANCE
SALT, WINE
SILVER, WINE
TURKEY
WINE, SPICES

Raiders or traders?

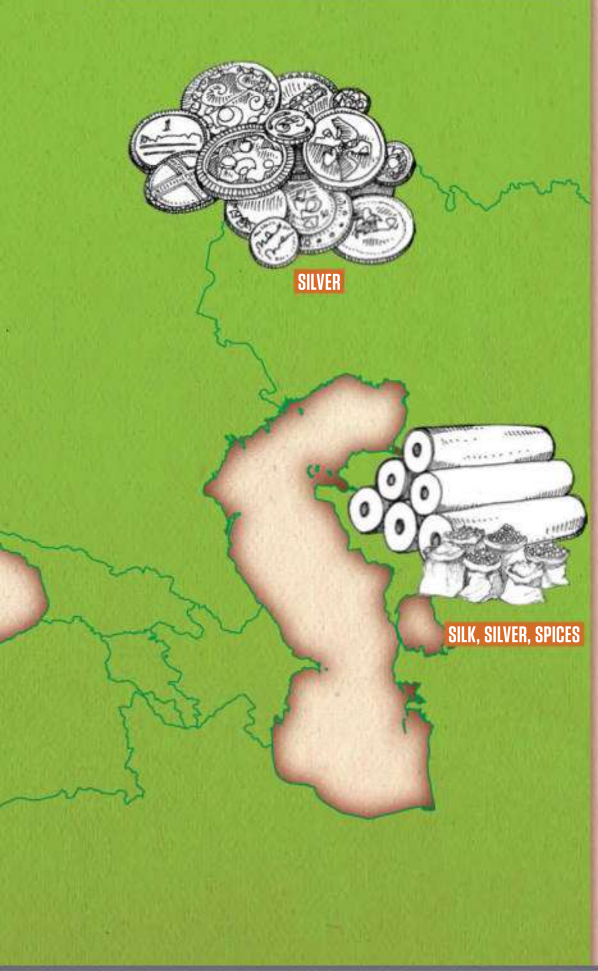
Stuart Perry, or Fastulf Geraltsson as he is known to the public, is the Jorvik Group's Interactive Team Leader. He manages a team of Viking interactives at Jorvik Viking Centre and archaeology and history interpreters across the group's five attractions

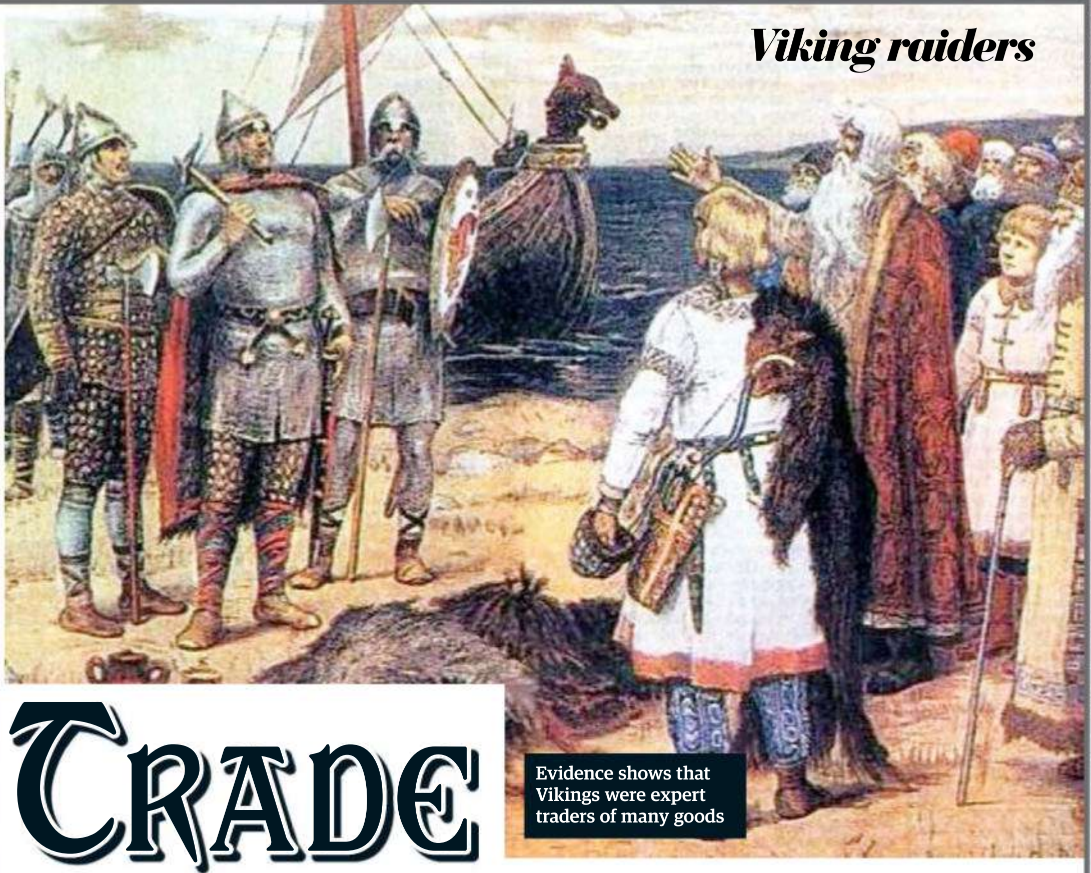
What was the motivation behind the Viking invasions? Were they simply bloodthirsty raiders, or did they have more civilised aims?

The motivation behind the Viking invasions was simple; farmland. The Vikings, or Norsemen – which is a more accurate name since a 'Viking' was a sea-borne raider that specialised in hit-and-run attacks – were searching for land.

Scandinavia is not rich in arable land – there is simply too much water and too many mountainous regions to support a population over a certain size. The Vikings had been raiding the coast of England since 793 – the famous attack on Lindisfarne – and would have had plenty of opportunity to see the abundance of good farmland, healthy crops and fat cattle all over the country. Combine this with the riches presented in the monasteries and towns they were so fond of raiding and England became a perfect area for expansion.

As for being 'bloodthirsty raiders', there is that element to the culture, yes, but it was not simply for violence that the Vikings went raiding. It was for profit. Rarely would the Vikings destroy an entire settlement, and the reason is simple; they wanted to come back and do it again! Raiding was a job for young impetuous men – but it was not the main focus of life in early medieval Scandinavia. It is this message that we convey at every opportunity here at Jorvik Viking Centre.





Evidence shows that Vikings were expert traders of many goods

TRADE

Vikings were not powered by brutality, but instead a complex and prosperous trade network

Although raiding and pillaging provided a quick intake of wealth, it was not a stable way to live or to build a civilisation. Instead, the Vikings dedicated far more of their time to building up a prosperous and powerful trading network. Because of their superior ship-building skills they were able to travel to trade in faraway lands, obtaining a host of exotic and valuable goods. Their specially designed trading ships were able to carry up to 35 tonnes of cargo, including silver and even livestock.

Trading markets began to emerge along the west Baltic Sea in the mid-8th century where people came from far and wide to trade an array of goods. As these markets flourished, traders decided to settle permanently along the routes and they transformed into trading towns. Birka in Sweden, Kaupang in Norway and Hedeby in Denmark all grew to be prosperous and bustling trading settlements, with the inhabitants all working as craftsmen and merchants. Prosperous trading routes also emerged along the British Isles, with York and Dublin developing into major trading centres.

As the trade boom increased the Vikings travelled further afield, across the Baltic Sea and along the Russian rivers. They founded more trading towns in Kiev and Novgorod. The Viking traders even went as far as Istanbul, the capital of the mighty Byzantine Empire across the Black Sea. This perilous journey was one only the Vikings dared attempt, through vicious rapids and battling hostile natives. The Vikings continued their trading journey inland, bringing their goods to Jerusalem and Baghdad. The lure of the Silk Road and the exotic riches of the East were too good to resist, and Vikings met with traders from the Far East in their trading centres in Russia, trading fur and slaves for silk and spices.

Silver coins were the most common form of payment, but this was unlike today's currency where different coins are worth a particular value. The coins were weighed in scales to determine their value; this is because a lot of coins were melted down and crafted into intricate and beautiful jewellery to trade on.

The great extent of the Viking trade network can be seen today in the hoards of silver coins, created in England, which have been found in Sweden, not to mention the 40,000 Arabic coins and the 38,000 German coins also uncovered there. Nordic bowls, Mediterranean silk and Baltic axe heads have even been discovered buried under English soil.

Viking wedding celebrations were huge occasions and could last for over a week

This vast and illustrious trade network attracted a wealth of eager and talented artists and craftsmen. Viking bead-makers would import glass from Western Europe to create an array of simple and decorative beads for the wealthy to adorn themselves with, while the ample supply of amber from the Baltic lands was fashioned into pendants and playing pieces. Skilled Viking craftsmen transformed their imported bronze to fine ornaments and mass-produced brooches, and deer antlers could even be used to make delicate and beautiful combs.

© Sol 90 Images; Abigail Daker; Alamy

What if…

The Aztecs hadn't been conquered?

MEXICO, 1519

MATTHEW RESTALL

Matthew Restall is a professor of Colonial Latin American History at Penn State University. His areas of specialisation are Yucatán and Mexico, Guatemala and Belize, Maya history, the Spanish conquest and Africans in Spanish America. He has co-authored four books published in 2011 and 2012 including *2012 And The End Of The World: The Western Roots Of The Maya Apocalypse* and *Latin America In Colonial Times*.

HELEN COWIE

Helen Cowie is a lecturer in History at the University of York. She is the author of *Conquering Nature In Spain And Its Empire, 1750-1850* and *Exhibiting Animals In Nineteenth-Century Britain: Empathy, Education, Entertainment*. She is currently writing a book on the cultural history of the alpaca.

What would have happened if the Aztecs hadn't been conquered by the Spanish?

Helen Cowie: It's easy to imagine that the conquest of the Aztecs was inevitable thanks to the superiority of the weapons used by the Spanish conquistadors (steel swords, crossbows, harquebuses and cannons against obsidian swords, slings and bows and arrows). If we look in detail at the events of the conquest, however, it becomes clear that Cortés's victory was by no means certain, and that his expedition could quite easily have ended in failure. On several occasions the Spanish stared defeat in the face – most dramatically during the so-called 'Noche Triste', when they were forced to flee Tenochtitlán after an ill-judged massacre of Aztec nobles. Without the continued support of indigenous allies such as the Tlaxcallans, the conquest could not have been achieved. It was also the devastating effects of disease, as much as technology and horses that destabilised Aztec society politically. But for luck at several critical junctures, Cortés could easily have lost.

Matthew Restall: The invasion campaign led by Hernan Cortés came very close to failure. Most of the men who crossed to Mexico from the Caribbean in 1519 and 1520 died during the war against the Aztecs, and Cortés himself narrowly escaped death. But if Cortés had perished before the Aztec defeat, the final outcome of the war would surely have been very similar: one of his fellow captains, such as Pedro de Alvarado, would have continued the campaign in much the same way. Nevertheless, it is also possible that the high mortality rate of the conquistadors and their allies, combined with the death of key captains and a failure of leadership, might have forced the survivors to retreat back to Cuba.

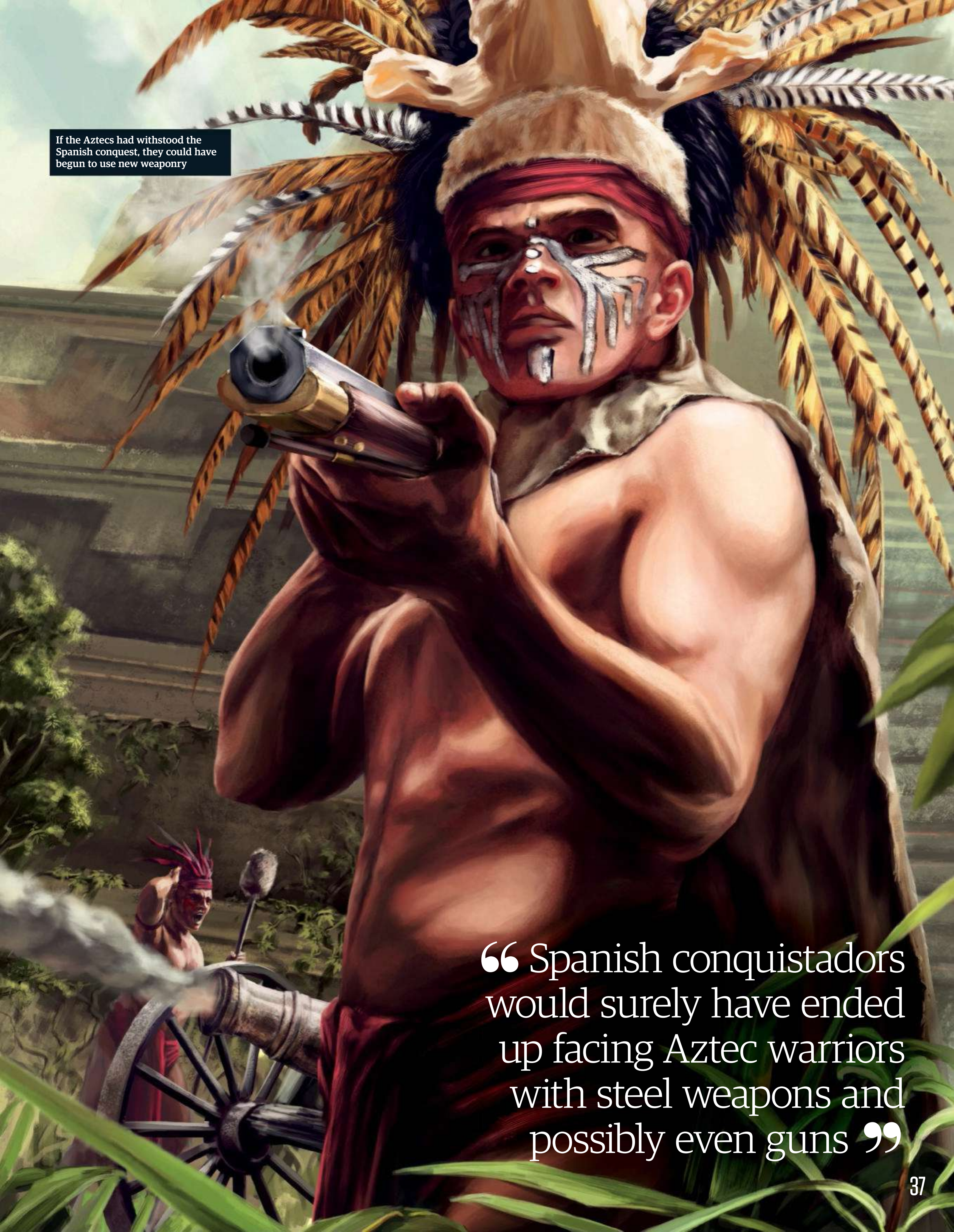
What effect would it have had on future attempts from the Old World to conquer the New?

Cowie: It's hard to imagine the Spanish would have abandoned attempts to conquer the Aztecs had Cortés been defeated. Further expeditions would probably have been mounted, perhaps with larger numbers of troops. Assisted by the effects of disease – a fatal legacy of Cortés's expedition – they would probably have won through in the end, although possibly at a much higher cost. Whether they would have been able to attract indigenous allies as easily as Cortés did in the wake of his defeat is another question. The Spanish attracted [indigenous] supporters because they appeared to be a successful fighting force, capable of standing up to their Aztec enemies. Had Cortés been defeated or killed, this aura of invincibility would have been lost, making indigenous backing harder to find.

What would the Aztecs have learnt from the Europeans? Would they have modernised over time using European technology such as guns to their advantage?

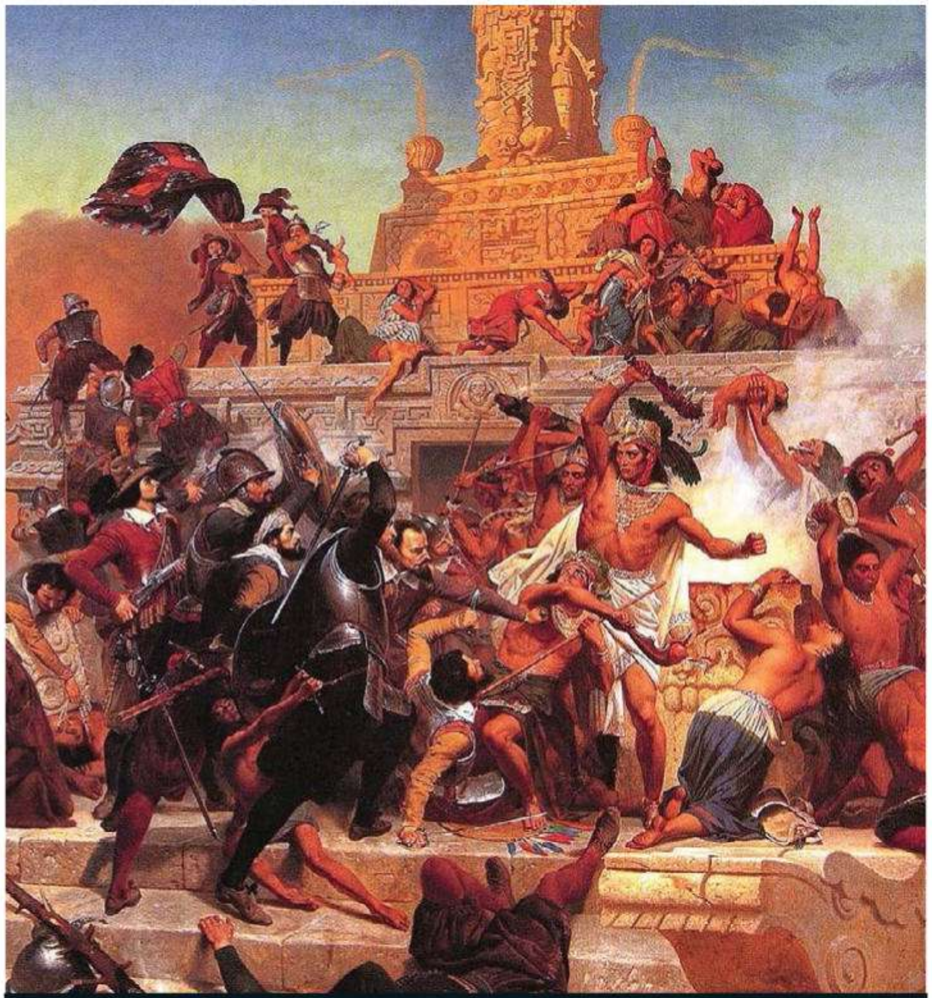
Restall: Yes, they would certainly would have done so, just as other indigenous or Native American groups did in later centuries – think of the warriors of the northern plains riding horses and using rifles, both to great effect. Indeed, during the Spanish-Aztec war, Aztecs captured and used Spanish weapons and armour. Had the war turned into a series of campaigns over years or decades, Spanish conquistadors would surely have ended up facing Aztec warriors with steel weapons and possibly even guns.

Cowie: There is evidence the Aztecs were already starting to learn how to counteract European weaponry and tactics during the course of Cortés's campaign. To avoid the projectiles fired by Spanish cannon and harquebuses, for instance, Aztec soldiers moved from side to side while marching, rather than in straight lines. To neutralise the advantage of Spanish cavalry, they erected barricades in the streets and avoided combat on flat, open terrain, which favoured horses. Had Cortés lost, it is possible the Aztecs might have adapted their military tactics further and become more capable of defeating European soldiers. They might also have learned something of the Spaniards' aims and mentality in war and adopted a more aggressive strategy in dealing with future attempted invasions.



If the Aztecs had withstood the Spanish conquest, they could have begun to use new weaponry

> “Spanish conquistadors would surely have ended up facing Aztec warriors with steel weapons and possibly even guns”



Fierce fighting broke out in Tenochtitlán during the conquest. Despite having better weaponry, the Spanish could have been defeated if deadly smallpox hadn't spread throughout the Aztec nation

> "The fact the Aztec Empire collapsed after two years of warfare has influenced how we see the Aztecs"

Would the Aztecs have expanded and conquered the rest of the continent?

Restall: It is interesting to speculate on how the Aztec acquisition of horses and Spanish technologies of war might have allowed them to consolidate and expand their empire. The Aztecs appeared to have been poised to expand south into the Maya area by 1519, and [there is] no doubt they would have been able to achieve that.

Cowie: This is doubtful as the Aztec Empire was quite loosely structured. Rather than imposing their own systems of government, language and religion on the people they conquered, they tended to leave existing leaders in place and simply extract tribute (a form of taxation) from them. There's little reason to imagine this system of government would have changed following a failed Spanish conquest, though the Aztecs would probably have exacted punishment on those former allies who proved disloyal and re-doubled their efforts to crush the Tlaxcallans. Though they traded across a wide region for luxury items such as jade, feathers and jaguar pelts, it seems unlikely the Aztecs would have been able to enforce a more formal empire of conquest.

Would they have become a trading partner to the European powers?

Restall: Had the Aztecs been able to fend off the Spaniards for generations, another factor would have complicated imperial interaction in the New World: the increased presence there of the Dutch, French, and English. In later centuries, the Spanish, French and English used alliances with indigenous groups to wage war against each other and compete for territory and colonial control.

Cowie: This seems unlikely. The Aztecs did trade extensively across Mesoamerica, but it is questionable whether the Spanish would have settled for a commercial relationship of this kind. The Spanish wanted vast quantities of gold and silver, which had to be mined, and souls to convert to Christianity, neither of which could have been achieved without formal conquest.

How would a failed invasion have affected Europe?

Restall: I think a failed Spanish invasion of the 1520s would have been followed by further Spanish invasions, and that the

How would it be different?

Real timeline

1428

Aztecs become the dominant force
With victory over the Tepanec at Azcapotzalco, the Aztecs become the major civilisation in Central America with their culture, architecture and language dominating the region. **1428**

Discovery of the New World
In search of new land and trading opportunities, Christopher Columbus becomes the first to discover the New World. After this, many Europeans make the journey across the Atlantic.
12 October 1492

Severe flooding
The Aztec capital Tenochtitlan is ravaged by severe flooding. This, in addition to famines and more floods, weakens the Aztecs before the Spanish conquistadors arrive.
1510

Comet spotted
A comet is reportedly spotted flying across the sky on this date. In Aztec culture they are an omen, believed to signify impending doom and worried emperor, Montezuma.
1517

First Cortés landing
The Spanish Conquistadors arrive in the Yucatán with a small force that is easily beaten after clashing with natives. They vow to return with a larger force.
February 1517

Beginning of the conquest
Cortés lands in Yucatán again after having set sail from Cuba with 11 ships and 500 men. He desires to claim this part of the New World for himself.
4 March 1519

Cortés arrives in Tenochtitlán
The conquistadors arrive in the Aztec capital, receive gifts from Aztec leader Moctezuma II and take residence in his palace.
8 November 1519

Real timeline

Alternate timeline

impact of epidemic disease and repeated invasions would have destroyed the Aztec Empire by the end of the decade. However, let us imagine the Aztecs survive such attacks, borrow Spanish technology, and maintain their empire through the 16th century. That would have drawn intense interest from other European powers, such as the English. It might seem like a stretch to imagine the English conquering the Aztecs in the 17th century. But then consider that the English (later British) did establish a considerable empire in regions to the north, east and south of what had been Aztec Mexico. Furthermore, the heirs to part of the empire - the United States - conquered and permanently acquired half of the nation that was the heir to Aztec Mexico.

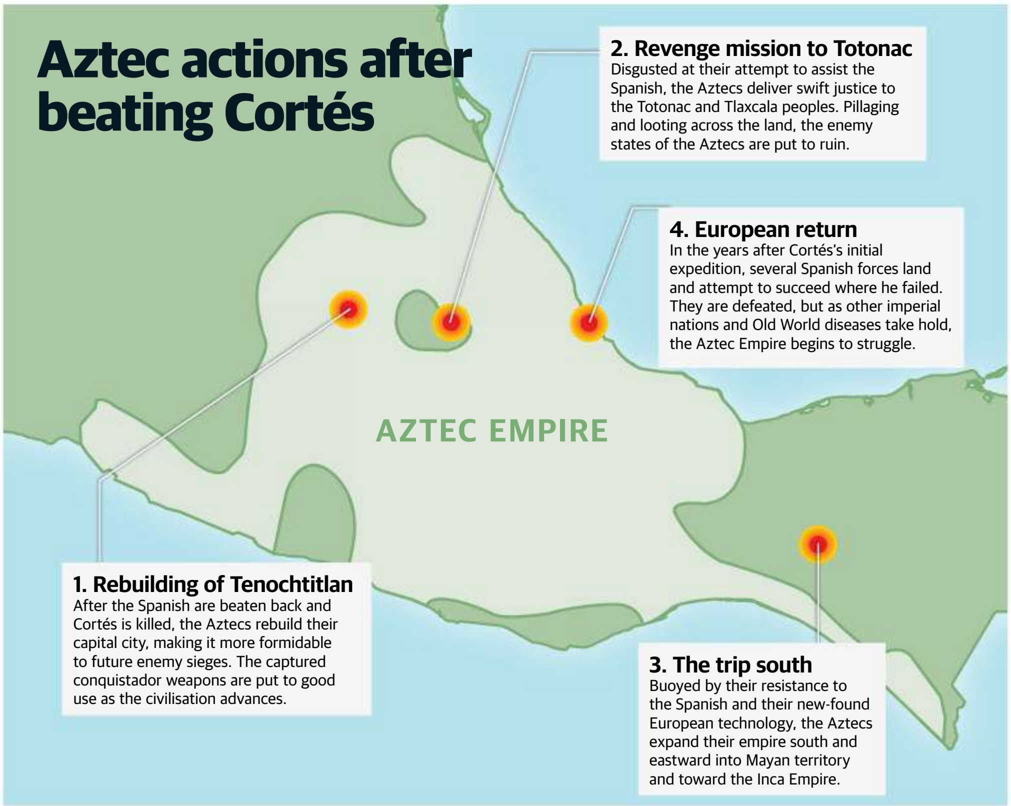
Cowie: Failure to conquer the Aztecs (and subsequently the Incas) would have had serious implications for Spain, which came to rely on American silver to finance its military campaigns in Europe. Within the context of the Reformation and the religious wars then raging in the Old World, it would also have had a significant impact on the global spread of Catholicism.

How might we look at the Aztec civilisation differently today?

Restall: The fact the Aztec Empire collapsed after two years of warfare has certainly influenced how we see the Aztecs. The Spaniards justified their invasion and colonisation of the region by portraying the Aztec civilisation as barbarian and bloody. In particular, they emphasized the Aztec practice of human sacrifice - even though the Spanish, English, and other Europeans also held public executions for political and religious reasons - and wrongly accused the Aztecs of practising cannibalism. Although we now have a complex and more balanced understanding of the Aztecs' past, the negative stereotypes propagated by the Spaniards have survived in the popular imagination. But had the Aztecs survived the Spanish invasions of 1519 to 1521, especially if their empire had lasted long enough to establish alliances or diplomatic relationships with other European powers, we would probably now know much more about life in the Aztec world and see it in less stereotypical terms.

Cowie: This is very difficult to say; it depends to a considerable degree upon whether the Aztecs were subsequently conquered by another Spanish expedition or whether they remained independent into the 19th century, when they would likely have become victims of a later wave of European imperialism. Either way, it is likely the negative images of human sacrifice would endure, assuming that at least some of the conquistadors survived to communicate them, but we might perhaps have greater respect for the Aztecs' military capability and realise the conquest was a close-run thing.

Aztec actions after beating Cortés



1. Rebuilding of Tenochtitlan
After the Spanish are beaten back and Cortés is killed, the Aztecs rebuild their capital city, making it more formidable to future enemy sieges. The captured conquistador weapons are put to good use as the civilisation advances.

2. Revenge mission to Totonac
Disgusted at their attempt to assist the Spanish, the Aztecs deliver swift justice to the Totonac and Tlaxcala peoples. Pillaging and looting across the land, the enemy states of the Aztecs are put to ruin.

3. The trip south
Buoyed by their resistance to the Spanish and their new-found European technology, the Aztecs expand their empire south and eastward into Mayan territory and toward the Inca Empire.

4. European return
In the years after Cortés's initial expedition, several Spanish forces land and attempt to succeed where he failed. They are defeated, but as other imperial nations and Old World diseases take hold, the Aztec Empire begins to struggle.

Battle of Cempoala
Cortés and his forces briefly leave Tenochtitlán to fight, and eventually defeat, fellow Spaniard Diego Velázquez, an old enemy of Cortés.
April 1520

La Noche Triste
The two forces assault the Aztecs but are driven back despite the death of Moctezuma. This escape from Tenochtitlán results in many Spanish deaths.
July 1520

Tenochtitlán falls
A combination of smallpox, horses and Spanish steel defeat Tenochtitlán after a three-month siege as the population is routed. **August 1521**

Birth of Mexico City
Tenochtitlán is rebuilt as Mexico City, the new capital of New Spain. Cuauhetemoc serves as a puppet ruler before his execution. **1522**

Death of Cortés
Immediately wary of the Old World invaders, Moctezuma instructs a full-on attack on the Spanish. Surprised and overwhelmed, Cortés is killed and his forces scattered.
8 November 1519

Cortés allies with Tlazcala
The Spanish ally with the sworn enemy of the Aztecs, the Tlaxcala. They want their civilisation to crumble as much as Cortés desires gold and riches.
July 1520

Religious changes
With Mexico still resisting invasion, the spread of Catholicism is halted while traditional Aztec religion and culture flourishes. **June 1525**

Spread of smallpox
This Old World disease is brought over by the European raiders and becomes an epidemic, wiping out swathes of the Aztec population.
August 1520

Further expeditions
Further Spanish excursions, along with the introduction of Old World diseases, gradually wears down the civilisation.
1640

Death of Cortés
Hernan Cortés dies at the age of 62. The conqueror of the Aztecs, he is remembered as a great explorer but also as a man of greed.
1567

New technology
Using trial and error and interrogating Spanish prisoners, the Aztecs gain the knowledge of horse riding, making steel weapons and using guns. **January 1520**

Financial effects on the Old World
Having no Aztec gold to speak of, Spain struggles financially and thus modernises at a slower rate.
February 1520

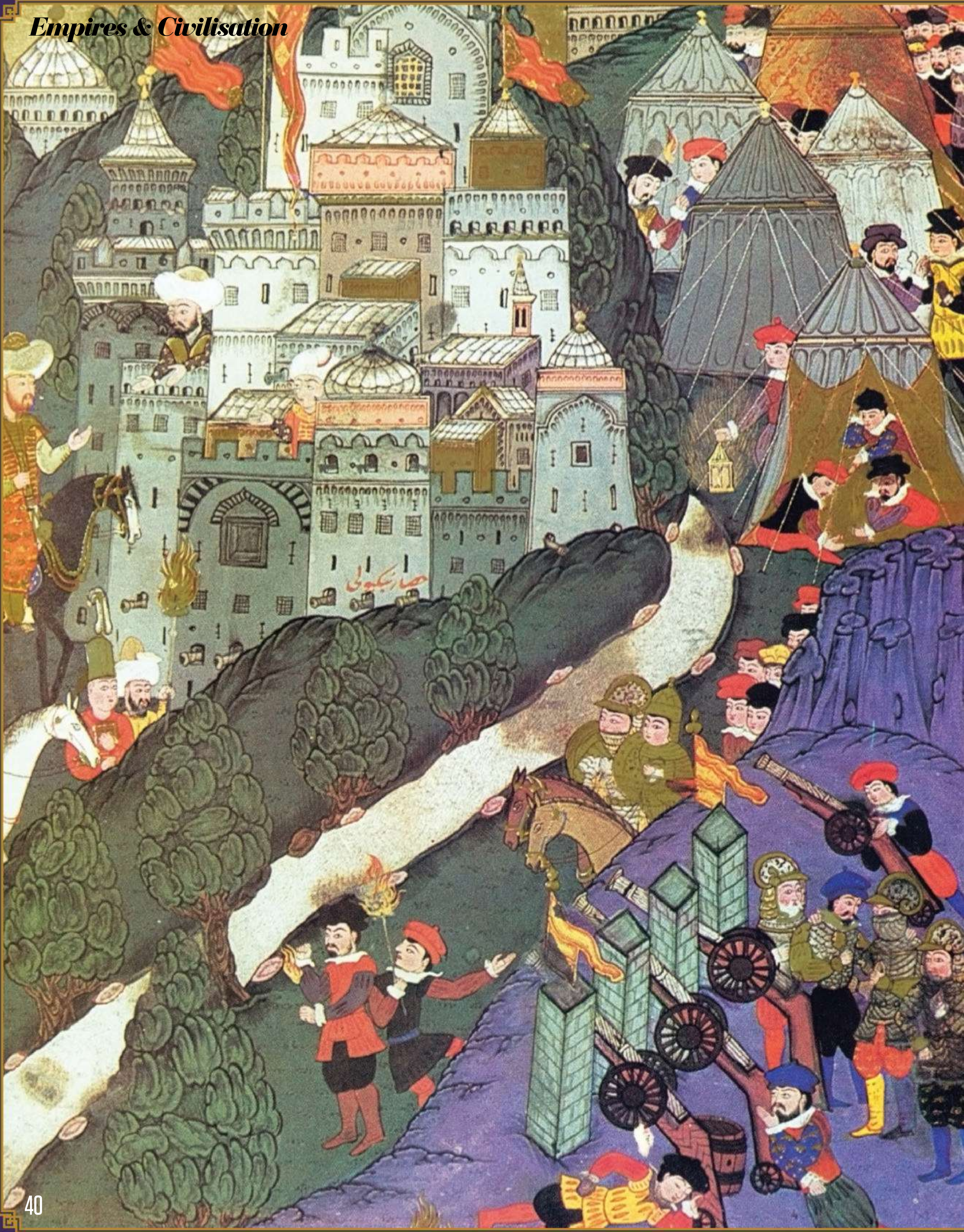
Destruction of Tlaxcala
As punishment for allying with the Spanish, the Tlaxcalans are completely massacred, ensuring they will never trouble the Aztecs again.
April 1520

Cancellation of Pizarro conquest
The planned occupation of Peru and the Inca Empire is cancelled, as the Spanish cannot afford it.
1532

Further advancements
Having mastered steel, the Aztecs incorporate other Western technology into their military such as musket and cannon.
1781

Fall of the Aztecs
After repeated Spanish invasions, continuing disease and even French and British involvement, the Aztecs fall.
1819

© Illustration by Ian Hinley


حصار بکولی

THE RISE OF THE OTTOMAN EMPIRE

From humble beginnings, the Ottomans went on to conquer lands in three continents, forging an empire that lasted for 700 years

It was an empire founded on the promise of a dream that visited the Turkish tribal chief Osman as he slept one night outside the home of a holy man. During his slumber, Osman saw a moon rise from the holy man's breast and sink into his own. Then a tree sprouted from his own navel, spreading its branches and encompassing the entire world. The holy man interpreted this night-vision as God giving Osman imperial office. The dream became reality.

In truth, this vision was first communicated in the 15th century, 100 years after Osman's death, but it stands as one of the empire's key founding myths and provided temporal and divine authority for the Ottomans' remarkable success.

For the Ottoman Empire was indeed an almighty achievement. Launched from the plains of the smallest Turkish emirate in western Anatolia, at the height of its power it encompassed a vast domain, stretching from Hungary to the Persian Gulf and from North Africa to the Caucasus, before beginning a slow decline through the 17th century to its final demise in the 1920s.

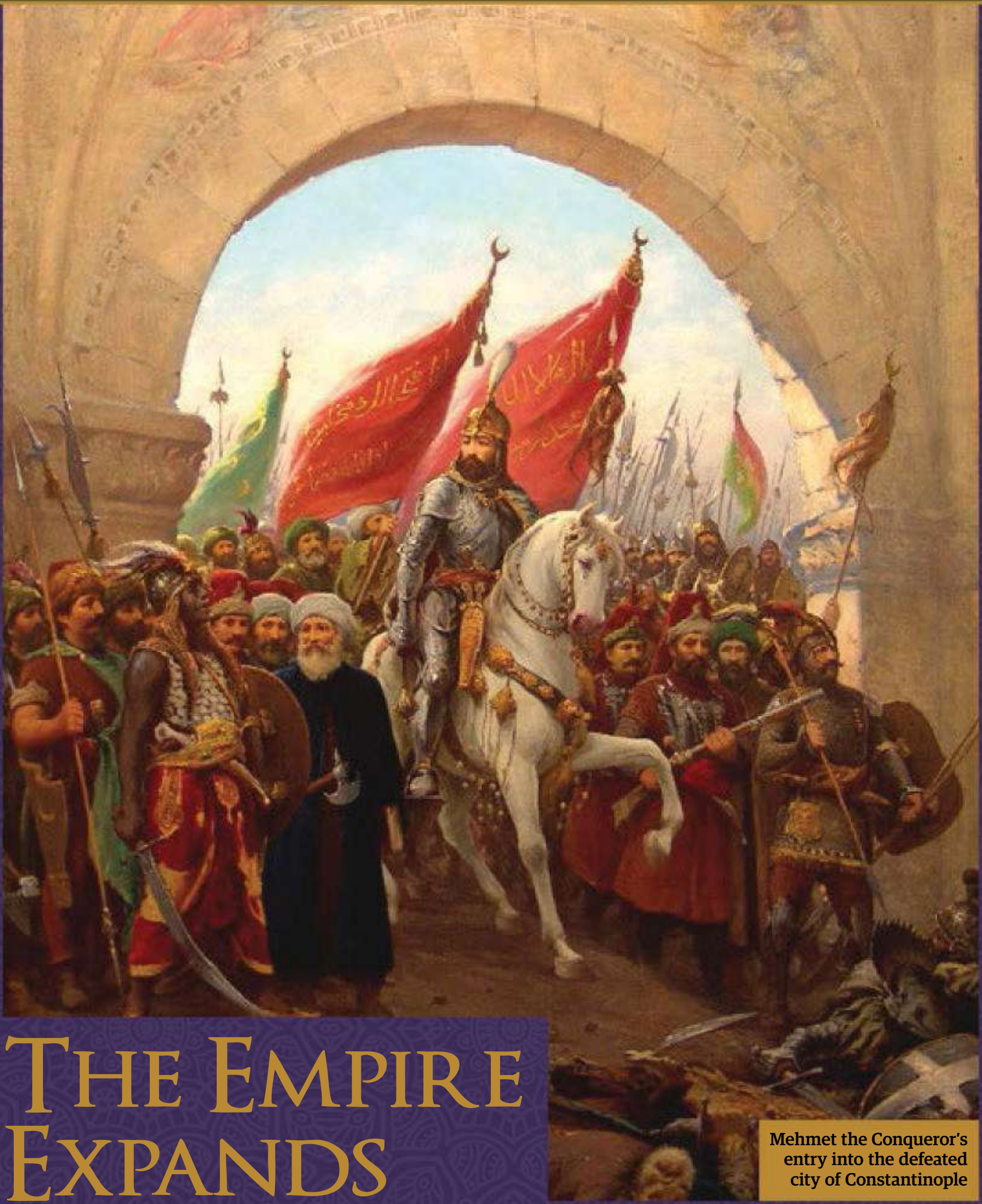
The Ottomans first made their mark at the turn of the 14th century, when they were just one among many Turkish tribal groups from central Asia vying for prominence in Anatolia, the swathe of land nestled between the Black Sea, the Aegean and the Mediterranean.

This land had once formed part of the Eastern Roman Empire and then, after the founding of Constantinople, the Byzantine Empire. Following the conquest of this great city by the Europeans of the Fourth Crusade during the previous century, however, the Byzantine Empire had diminished, and by 1300 its Asian holdings comprised only a few ports on the Anatolian coast.

The Ottomans' first step towards toppling the Byzantines and establishing a regional authority came under the leadership of Osman, and at the expense of their fellow Turkish tribes in Anatolia. The region flexed its autonomous muscles during the 1291 succession dispute among their Mongol overlords in Persia. But, as the other Turkish tribes gradually gave up the fight, Osman continued fighting and by 1299, his Ottomans were besieging the city of Nicaea. The Ottomans' great period of conquest was about to begin.

In 1302, the Byzantine emperor Andronicus II, alarmed at Osman's growing influence and his perennial raiding of the Byzantine borderlands, mustered his army to put the Turkish tribesmen in their place. The Byzantine force met the Ottomans not far from Constantinople, on the southern shore of the Sea of Marmara, where they were ambushed and routed from the field.

This was the Ottomans' first great victory over the Byzantines and greatly enhanced Osman's reputation, as did his follow-up campaign, which severed communications between the cities of Brusa and Nicaea. Thousands of immigrant Turkish households rallied to his banner. As Osman's power grew, Andronicus sought alliances, though these came to nought, and Ottoman raiding continued until Osman's death around 1323/24. Leadership passed to Osman's son, Orhan, who went on to capture Brusa, establishing the first Ottoman capital. This was in 1326, a date that is often cited as the birth of the empire itself.



Mehmet the Conqueror's entry into the defeated city of Constantinople

THE EMPIRE EXPANDS

Between the 14th and 16th centuries, the Ottoman Empire flowered, threatening the very heart of Europe

In the 1340s, civil war erupted within the Byzantine Empire and the Ottomans were invited to step into imperial affairs, leading to the capture of Gallipoli in 1354, their first foothold in Europe. They extended their influence into the continent when, in 1361, Murad I captured the city of Adrianople, which was renamed Edirne before emerging as the new Ottoman capital in 1365.

The Ottomans' freshly acquired territories now encircled Constantinople and the emperor, John V, signed a treaty that saw his once mighty city become little more than an Ottoman vassal.

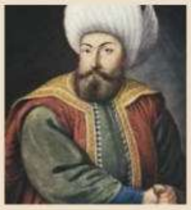
With a European base at Edirne, the Ottomans struck out against the Balkans. The Serbian Empire was also burgeoning during this period, but the decisive battle of Kosovo in 1389, though claiming the life of Murad I, saw the Ottomans emerge victorious once again. Murad's son Bayezid succeeded his father and earned the name 'the Thunderbolt', such was his military prowess.

Claiming he would water his horse at the altar of St Peter's in Rome, he quelled rebellion within the empire before taking Bosnia and Bulgaria, and then finally coming face to face with Western Europe, winning his first engagement against European heavy cavalry at the battle of Nicopolis in 1396. The Ottomans did not escape without setbacks, and the rise of the fabled leader Tamerlane, the successor to the Mongols in the east, checked their power when defeating and capturing Bayezid at Anakara in 1402. It seemed as though the empire would disintegrate amid the power struggle that followed Bayezid's death.

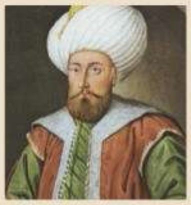
Ottoman fortunes began to revive, however, picking up pace when Sultan Murad II led the first, albeit unsuccessful, siege of Constantinople in 1422. He launched a Hungarian offensive in 1439 that culminated in one of the greatest Ottoman victories at Varna in 1444, where the Hungarians and Western crusading forces, which included the mighty Teutonic Knights, were heavily defeated.

It was Murad's successor, Mehmet II, who was to cement Ottoman power in the European sphere. Known to history as Mehmet the Conqueror, he finally toppled Constantinople in 1453 and ravaged

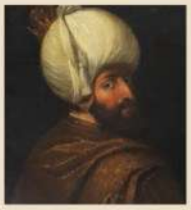
The early Ottoman leaders



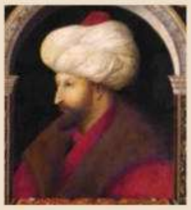
Osman I: The founder
Little is known about the background of this ruler of a small principality in north-western Anatolia. Both the name of the dynasty and the empire that the dynasty established are derived from his name's Arabic form, Uthmān. He died in 1323/24.



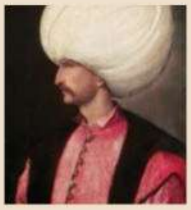
Murad I: The first sultan
Ruling from 1360 to 1389, Murad oversaw rapid Ottoman expansion in Anatolia and the Balkans. During his reign, new forms of government and administration emerged to consolidate Ottoman rule. The Janissaries and the child-levy flowered under his stewardship.



Bayezid I: 'The Thunderbolt'
The most ambitious of the Ottoman leaders, Bayezid ruled from 1389-1402 and founded the first centralised Ottoman state based on traditional Muslim institutions. He also stressed the need to extend Ottoman conquest in Anatolia as well as waging war against the infidels.

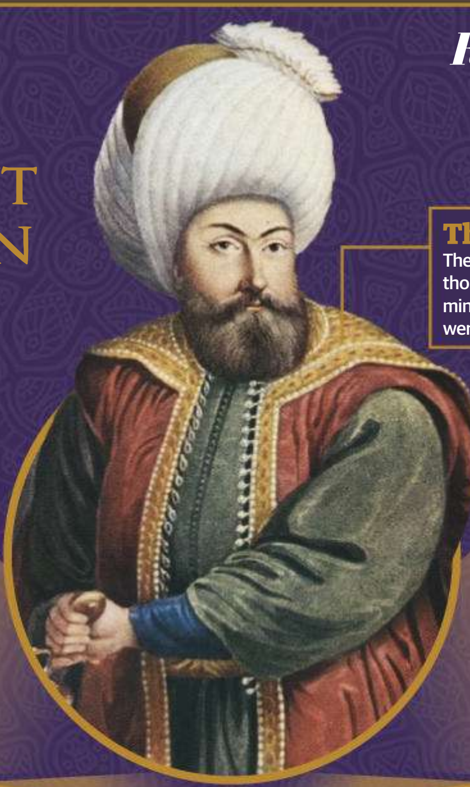


Mehmet II: 'The Conqueror'
Mehmet ruled from 1444-46 and then again from 1451-81. Despite his youth, he overruled his advisers and conquered Constantinople, bringing down the Byzantine Empire and establishing what would remain the Ottoman heartland for the next 400 years.



Suleiman I: 'The Magnificent'
Sultan of the Ottoman Empire from 1520 to 1566, Suleiman's bold military campaigns expanded the realm – he evicted the Hospitallers from Rhodes and won the great victory at Mohacs – while making great strides in the fields of law, literature, architecture and art.

THE GOVERNMENT OF THE OTTOMAN EMPIRE



The sultan
The sultan had absolute power, though he maintained a council of ministers called a Divan. All laws were made in his name.

The civil service
The Ottomans, like the Romans, enjoyed a powerful civil service with the Grand Vizier chief among them.

The millets
Non-Muslim communities were afforded independence and allowed to appoint their own religious leaders and laws.

The holy men
While the sultan was 'caliph', the successor to the Prophet Muhammad, the religious elite, or ulama, were important lawmakers.

The military elite
The standing army helped police the vast empire and the Ottomans used vassal kings and tribal chiefs to keep their subjects under control.

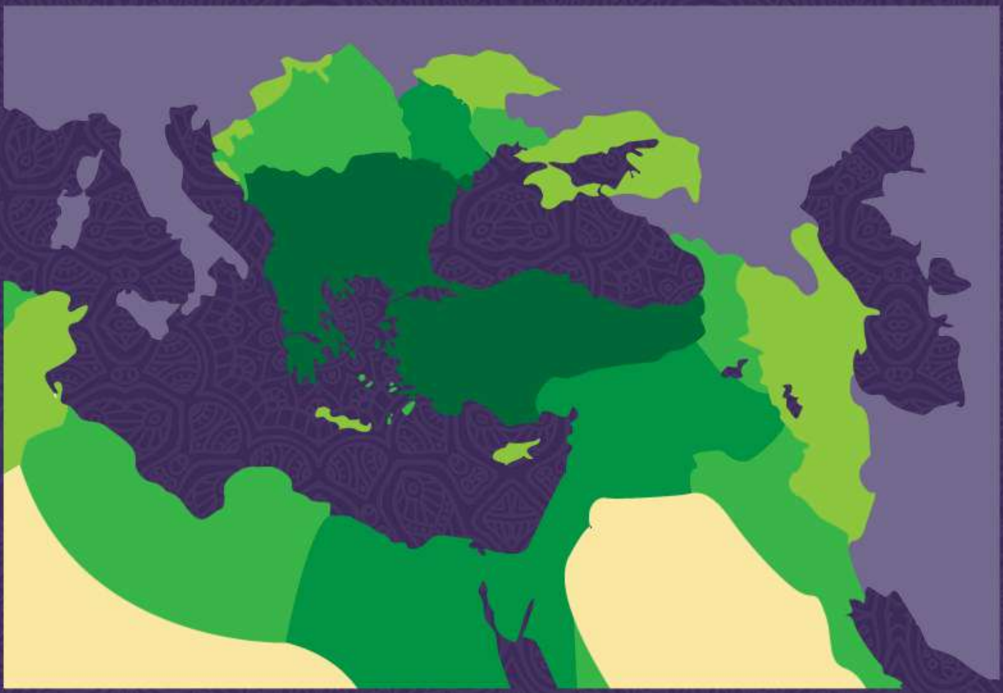
the Balkan states. In Greece, the Duchy of Athens surrendered in 1456 and the Ottomans soon conquered the Peloponnese.

The infamous Vlad Tepes (the Impaler) caused problems for the Ottomans in Wallachia and the Knights Hospitaller successfully defended Rhodes, though Mehmet remained unperturbed. He launched his most audacious campaign in 1480 with the invasion of Italy, causing panic in Western Europe. Italy was saved not by Europe's military might but by Mehmet's death in 1481.

In 1520, the man widely perceived as the Ottomans' greatest sultan, Suleiman 'the Magnificent', came to power, capturing Belgrade a year after his accession, taking the Hospitaller island of Rhodes the year after that and then winning his greatest victory in 1526 - when he brought about the collapse of Medieval Hungary.

From now on, the Ottomans would hammer away at the great empire of the Hapsburg dynasty as the rest of Europe trembled. They expanded into North Africa and fought many more famous battles – the Great Siege of Malta (1565), the capture of Cyprus, the great naval conflict at Lepanto (1571) and the slaughter at Kerestes (1596). The enemy was at the gates and war for the European heartland was not far behind.

OTTOMAN CONQUESTS 1481-1683



🟩 Ottoman Empire in 1481 🟩 Conquests of Selim I, 1512-20 🟩 Conquests of Suleiman, 1520-66 🟩 Conquests, 1566-1683 🟨 Desert

THE JANISSARIES

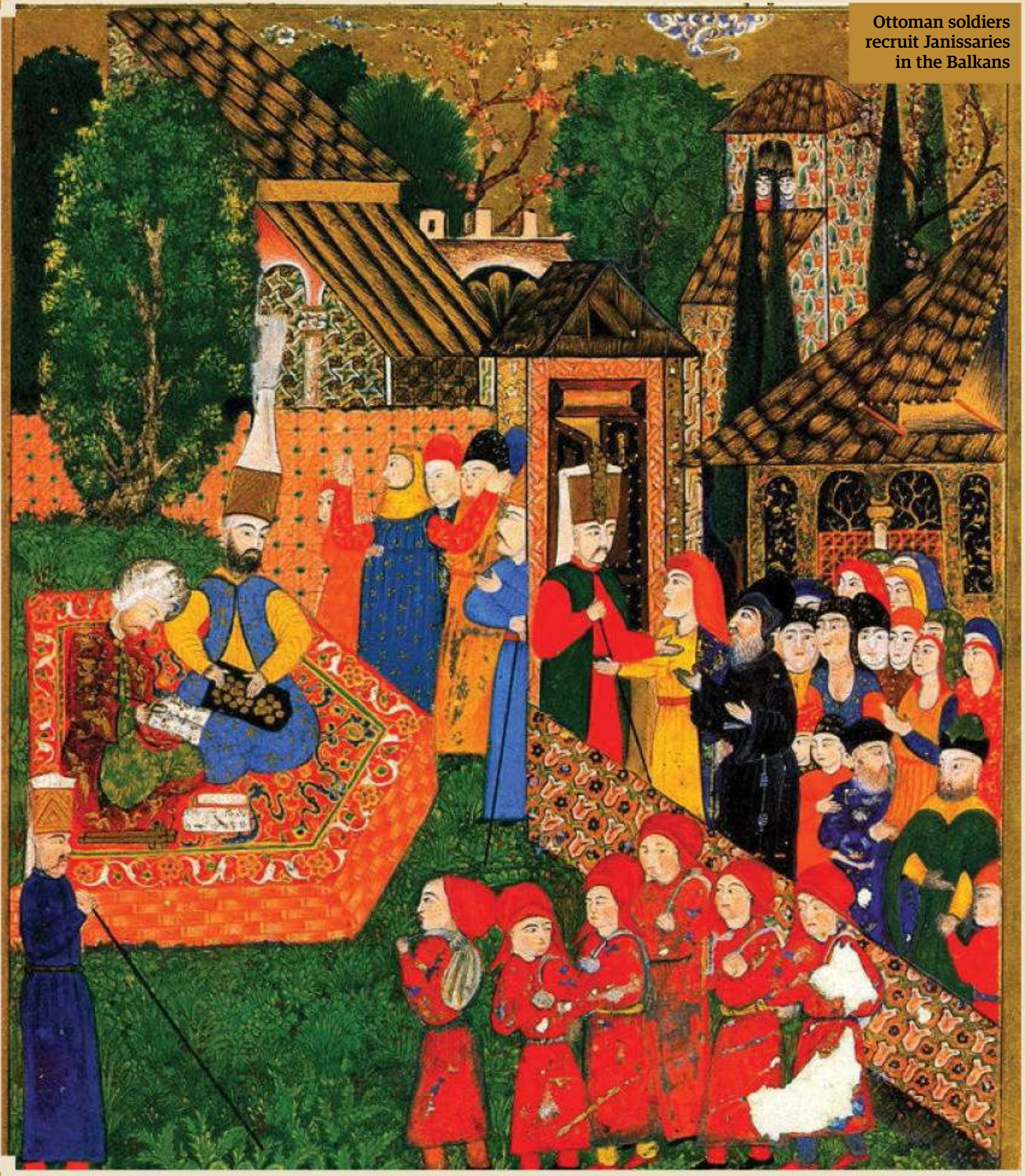
The Ottoman army was a fearsome machine, unlike anything else that Medieval Europe had ever seen, and their elite troops were the mighty Janissaries

In Medieval Europe, the Ottoman army was unique - the entire empire lived for war and one conquest fuelled the next. Even later in the empire's life, during the siege of Baghdad in 1683 when the Persians demanded the contest be settled by single combat, the sultan, Mehmet IV, stepped forward and cut down the Persian champion himself.

Unlike the European armies they so regularly routed, the Ottoman forces were full-time professionals. Chief among their myriad units were the Janissaries, the Ottoman elite infantry, who lived solely for war. Even marriage and family were forbidden to them.

Their only love was combat; the only person to who they owed loyalty was the sultan. They were his men, forming his personal bodyguard. They were recruited from Christian slave boys – to enslave fellow Muslims was contrary to religious law – though to describe the Janissaries as a slave-army fails to recognise the honour and prestige they enjoyed within the Ottoman Empire.

The boys surrendered little when they left their homes. Recruited mostly from the Balkan states, they left behind poverty in a rural life that offered little hope of professional advancement. Once converted to Islam, educated and trained, they became important players in an empire that admired martial ability and, as time developed, like the Praetorian Guard in ancient Rome they even became kingmakers, famously rebelling against Osman II in 1622 and restoring Mustapha to the Sultanate.



Ottoman soldiers recruit Janissaries in the Balkans

Recruitment

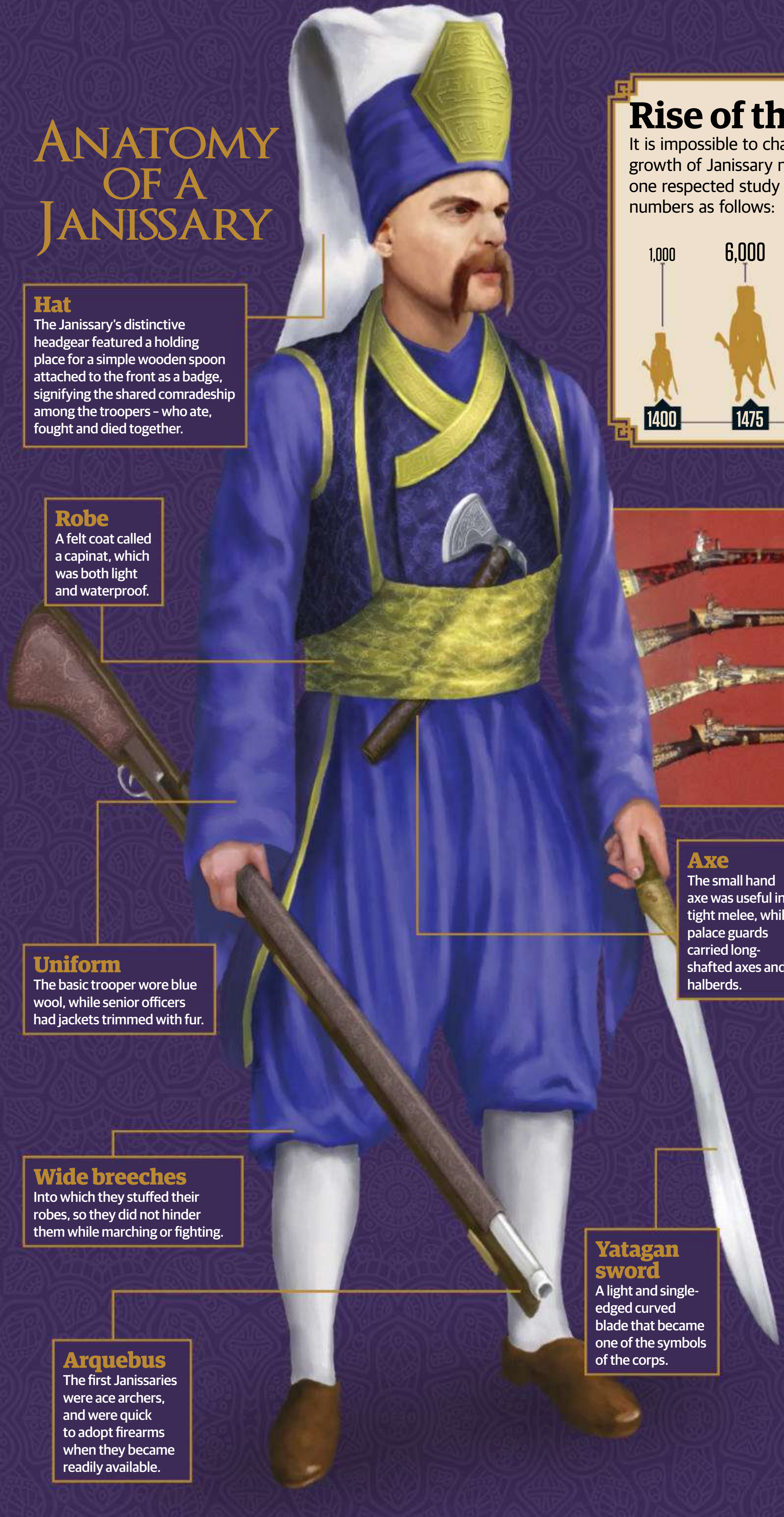
Murad I is widely regarded as the founder of the Janissary units following his recruitment of Christian prisoners of war into his army some time after 1377. It was a move that was enhanced by his successor, Bayezid, who introduced the 'gathering' during the 1380s, a levy on Christian boys, aged between eight and 18 years, from the Balkan states. "We light our lamp with oil taken from the hearts of the infidels," wrote the Sultan Mehmet II in the 1400s.

Ottoman officials would visit the Balkan villages every three to seven years and drafted the best-looking, strongest and most intelligent boys to be employed in service of the empire, either as soldiers (in the case of the Janissaries) or administrators or as palace servants.

In the earlier years of empire, the Ottomans were careful not to impoverish their subjects and so would absolve from the levy any boy who was the oldest or the only male child in his family, or any who was a widow's son, and they would never deplete a village of its entire stock. It was in the Ottoman interests to keep Balkan agriculture as buoyant as possible to fuel their empire and keep rebellions quiet. During the 1500s it is estimated that the yearly draft was about 1,000-3,000 boys.

Often families from poor mountain districts would volunteer their sons willingly, delighted to see them step onto the Ottoman career ladder. Though technically slaves, the Janissaries could maintain contact with their families and, as possessions of the Sultan himself, could not be bought or sold.

ANATOMY OF A JANISSARY



Hat
The Janissary's distinctive headgear featured a holding place for a simple wooden spoon attached to the front as a badge, signifying the shared comradeship among the troopers – who ate, fought and died together.

Robe
A felt coat called a capinat, which was both light and waterproof.

Uniform
The basic trooper wore blue wool, while senior officers had jackets trimmed with fur.

Wide breeches
Into which they stuffed their robes, so they did not hinder them while marching or fighting.

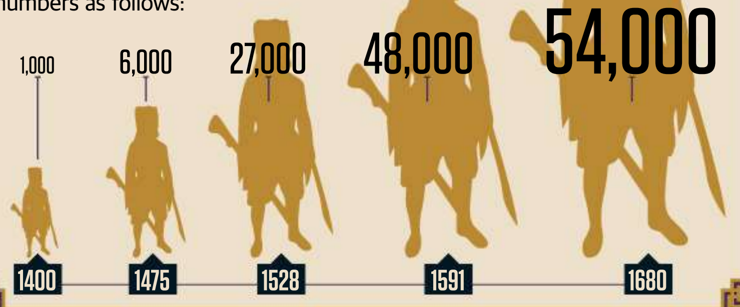
Arquebus
The first Janissaries were ace archers, and were quick to adopt firearms when they became readily available.

Axe
The small hand axe was useful in a tight melee, while palace guards carried long-shafted axes and halberds.

Yatagan sword
A light and single-edged curved blade that became one of the symbols of the corps.

Rise of the Janissaries

It is impossible to chart the exact growth of Janissary numbers, though one respected study places the numbers as follows:



Janissaries favoured the arquebus when firearms became readily available

Training

Once marched to the Ottoman capital - a test in itself - the boys were circumcised and converted to Islam. Most did this willingly and conversion back to Christianity was rare. They were then tested to discover their best potential, the brightest being selected for the palace schools and future jobs in the Ottoman palaces or civil service.

Those not selected for such lofty positions were marked for military duties and were hired out to Turkish villagers for up to seven years. After this service, they were then packed off to the training crops, with the majority trained for the regular infantry, learning weapon skills and strict discipline, as well as mathematics.

Some of the more promising were selected for education in the households of powerful families, where they were taught more technical skills such as gunnery and carriage driving.

The barrack life instilled a sense of loyalty among the recruits, who also acted as policemen and firemen when the main military bodies were away on campaign. They had the tradition of regimental life drummed into them during these formative years, swearing loyalty to their fellows upon a tray that contained salt, a *Koran* and a sword, though their ultimate fealty belonged to the sultan. Across the empire they were his eyes, his ears and his ultimate fighting machine.

THE FALL OF CONSTANTINOPLE

Though masters of the surrounding landscape, the toppling of Constantinople proved a symbolic victory for the Ottomans

It was Mehmet the Conqueror who launched the final assault on Constantinople and brought the last vestige of a once-mighty empire into the Ottoman fold. Though the city had long proved little more than a vassal state, he coveted the glory its fall would bring. Succeeding to the Sultanate in 1451, he swiftly mobilised his armies and picked off remaining Byzantine possessions along the Black Sea coast. In 1452, he erected a castle on the European shore of the Bosphorus, opposite a Turkish castle on the Asiatic shore, taking strategic command of this vital waterway.

The Turks now controlled all shipping in and out of the Black Sea and Mehmet's artillery were quick to sink a Venetian ship that defied his order to halt. Mehmet beheaded the crew and impaled the captain, Antonio Rizzi. "As Rizzi's body mouldered in the rain," writes one historian, "the Byzantines made their last, desperate appeals to the West." With the great trading states of Genoa, Venice and Ragusa deeply involved in mercantile activity with the Ottomans, and at odds among themselves, they offered little in the way of support to the Byzantines. The Holy Roman Emperor issued a stern warning to Mehmet, but it fell on deaf ears. The sultan had a warning of his own: the Byzantines should leave the city by 5 March 1453, or suffer his wrath.

The Attack

It has been said that Mehmet rallied the whole of his empire for the assault on Christendom's most easterly outcrop, and if figures of 300,000 men seem exaggerated, the forces assembled outside Constantinople's walls certainly dwarfed those inside, perhaps numbering as few as 12,000.

As the vast Turkish fleet sailed into the Sea of Marmara, a frightening weapon of war was uncovered before the city's outermost walls, a 28-foot cannon with the bronze of its barrel said to be eight inches thick. It had to be dragged into position by 700 men and 60 oxen.

Constantinople's stone defences were almost as formidable, comprising two sets of mighty walls dotted with towers. The emperor also ordered a mighty chain to be slung along the entrance to the Golden Horn, preventing any Turkish ships from launching an assault on the inner sea walls.

The Turks found the opening days difficult, their artillery proving less effective than they'd hoped against the city's lofty walls, while their siege towers were set ablaze and mining efforts repulsed. To add further insult, in April a small flotilla of supply ships successfully ran the Turkish blockade and safely entered the Golden Horn.

Mehmet upped his game and soon pulled off an extraordinary feat of engineering, building a wooden roadway from the Bosphorus to the Springs – over which he hauled 70 ships that took to the Golden Horn. He could now mount seaborne assaults from much closer quarters.

On 29 May 1453, Mehmet launched his most intense assault, a simultaneous attack from land and sea, his Janissaries achieving the final victory as they pressed through a breached wall. It is presumed the brave Byzantine Emperor, Constantine, died while rallying his men.

With the city at the Ottomans' mercy, Mehmet allowed three days of looting and thousands of civilians were dragged off into slavery before the sultan took ownership of this renowned city and began its reconstruction as a Muslim metropolis.

Why was the Ottoman Empire so successful?

A STANDING ARMY

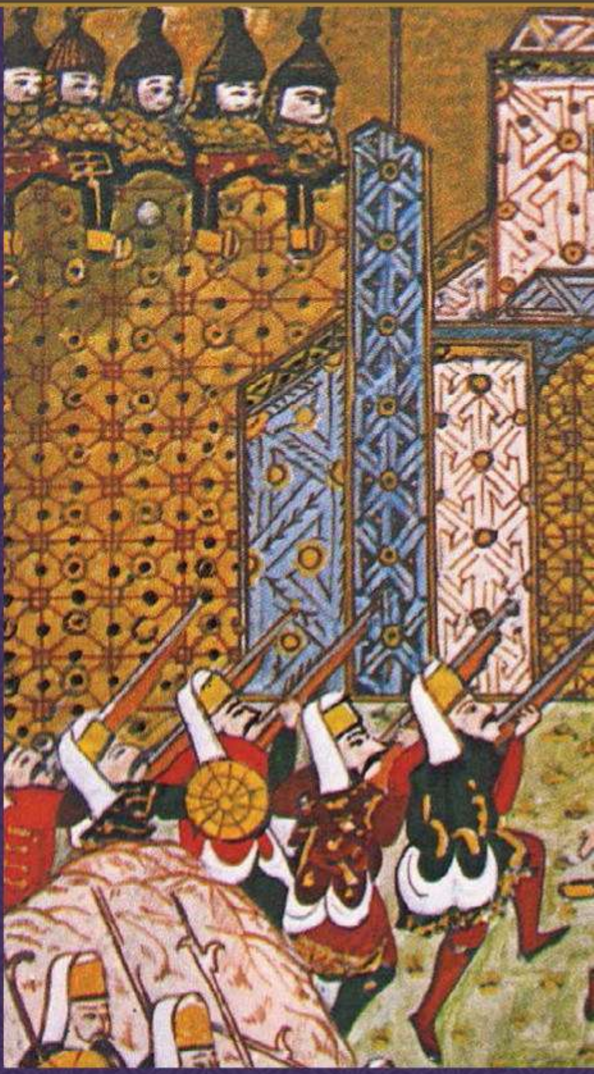
1 The Ottomans were the first since the Roman Empire to maintain a professional army with a brilliant logistical supply chain. While European rulers had to coax their squabbling lords into combat, the Ottomans could call into action a well-oiled war machine.

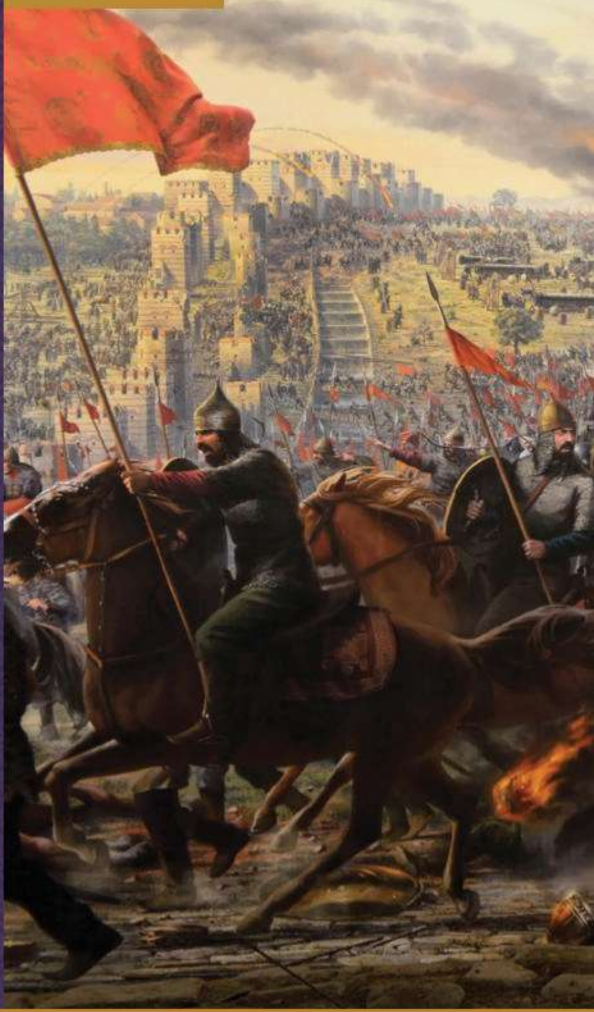
EXCELLENT MORALE

2 The Ottoman army contained the Janissaries, who lived for war, while their other troops were often motivated by a religious fervour that demanded they wage war against the infidel. Their leaders successfully analysed strategy and tactics and kept morale high.

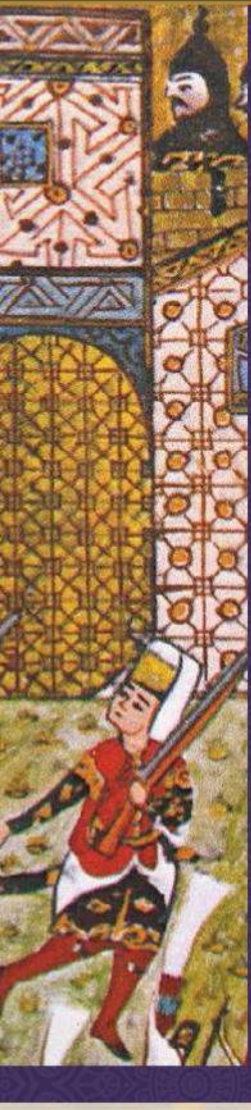
FLEXIBLE GOVERNANCE

3 While heavy-handed in conquest, the Ottomans were light-handed in governance, tolerating different religious dominations where conversion proved too difficult. They also maintained local laws and customs so that their subjects would better fuel the Ottoman war machine.





The conquest of Constantinople in 1453



Bombardment begins 6 April

1 The Ottomans dig in along the Theodosian land wall and employ heavy artillery to batter the Byzantine defences, while the sappers bid to mine beneath the great towers. The Ottomans also use siege towers that loom higher than the city walls in an effort to destroy the defences.

A flotilla arrives 20 April

2 Three papal galleys and a Byzantine transport laden with corn from Sicily and other essential supplies take advantage of good winds to run across the Sea of Marmara. Turkish vessels bid to engage. A lethal game of cat and mouse ensues until finally the Christians reach the Golden Horn and are able to restock Constantinople.

Ships sail overland 22 April

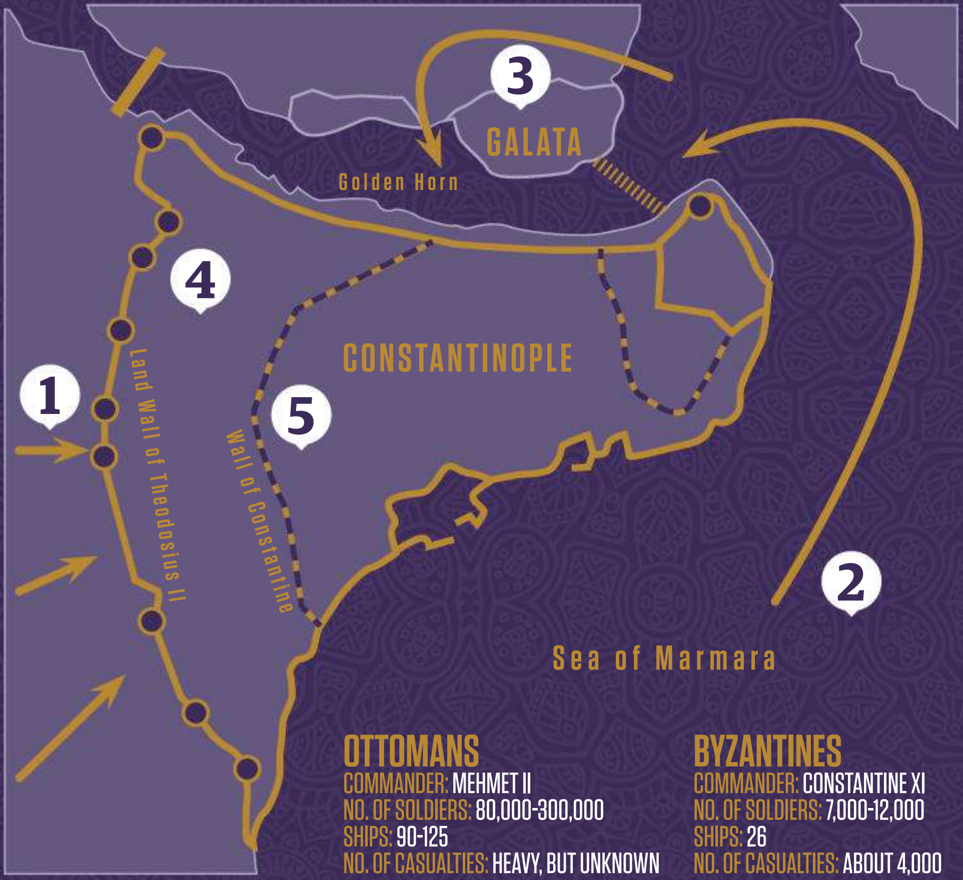
3 Mehmet transports more than 70 vessels overland and into a river feeding the Golden Horn north. A surprise attack against this newly ensconced fleet goes awry and costs the Christians many lives, which they can ill afford to lose.

Final battle 28 May

4 The weakened walls in the north west suffer the brunt of an initial attack though Mehmet's levies, and Anatolian infantry are beaten back by frenzied Christian defence. A final attack by the elite Janissaries finally turns the tide.

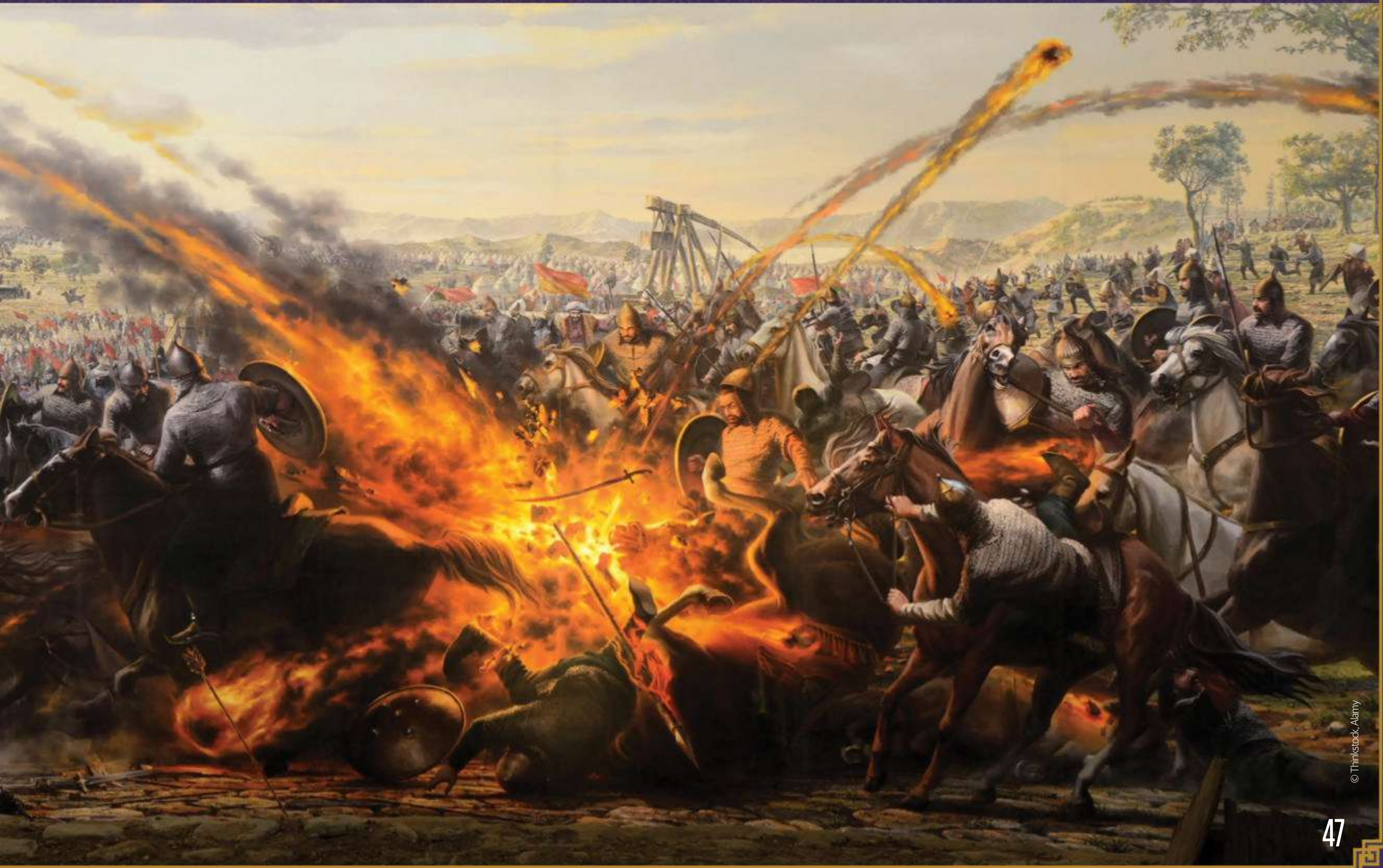
The city falls 29 May

5 The Ottomans break through, with the Circus Gate breached, and the emperor is forced to fall back to the inner walls. Many commentators claim that he is killed in battle while leading the final doomed counter attack.



OTTOMANS
COMMANDER: MEHMET II
NO. OF SOLDIERS: 80,000-300,000
SHIPS: 90-125
NO. OF CASUALTIES: HEAVY, BUT UNKNOWN

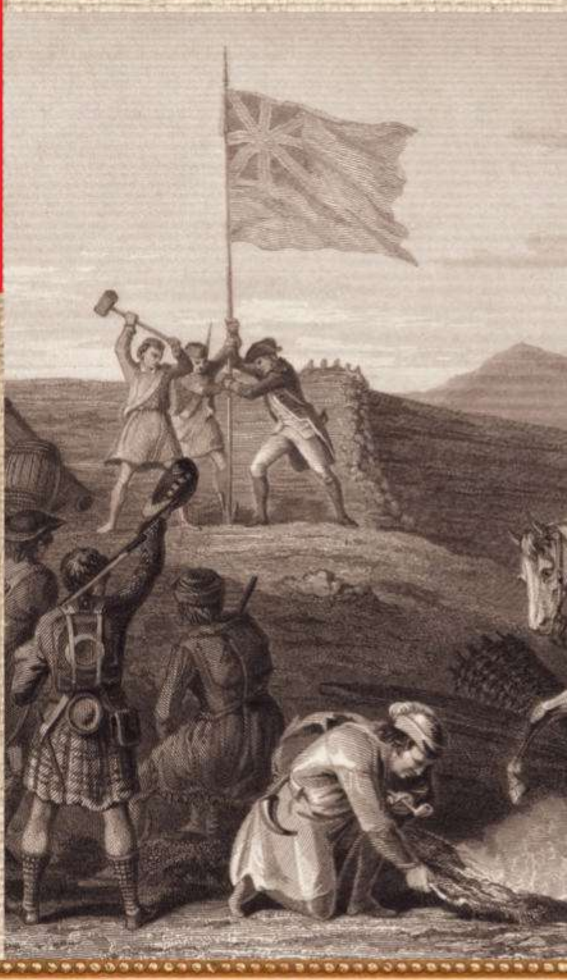
BYZANTINES
COMMANDER: CONSTANTINE XI
NO. OF SOLDIERS: 7,000-12,000
SHIPS: 26
NO. OF CASUALTIES: ABOUT 4,000



© Thinkstock, Alamy

POLITICS & POWER

The story behind some of the most controversial, loved and hated figures from throughout history



50 Anne Boleyn
The romantic beginning and disastrous end of Henry's queen

58 Washington: The first president
Washington's perilous journey to become the father of the USA

66 What if... Lincoln hadn't been assassinated?
Would impeachment have awaited the president?

70 Stalin: Russia's ultimate tyrant
How the famed dictator dyed the Soviet Union red

78 Malcolm X
Tackling racial conventions amid the Civil Rights movement

82 Mandela becomes president
Read an eyewitness account of Mandela's inauguration

WE DEMAND EQUAL RIGHTS NOW!
WE MARCH FOR INTEGRATED SCHOOLS NOW!
WE DEMAND DECENT HOUSING NOW!
WE DEMAND AN END TO BIAS NOW!
RIGHTS NOW!

ANNE BOLEYN

Follow the romantic beginning and disastrous end of the love affair that rocked the very foundations of England itself

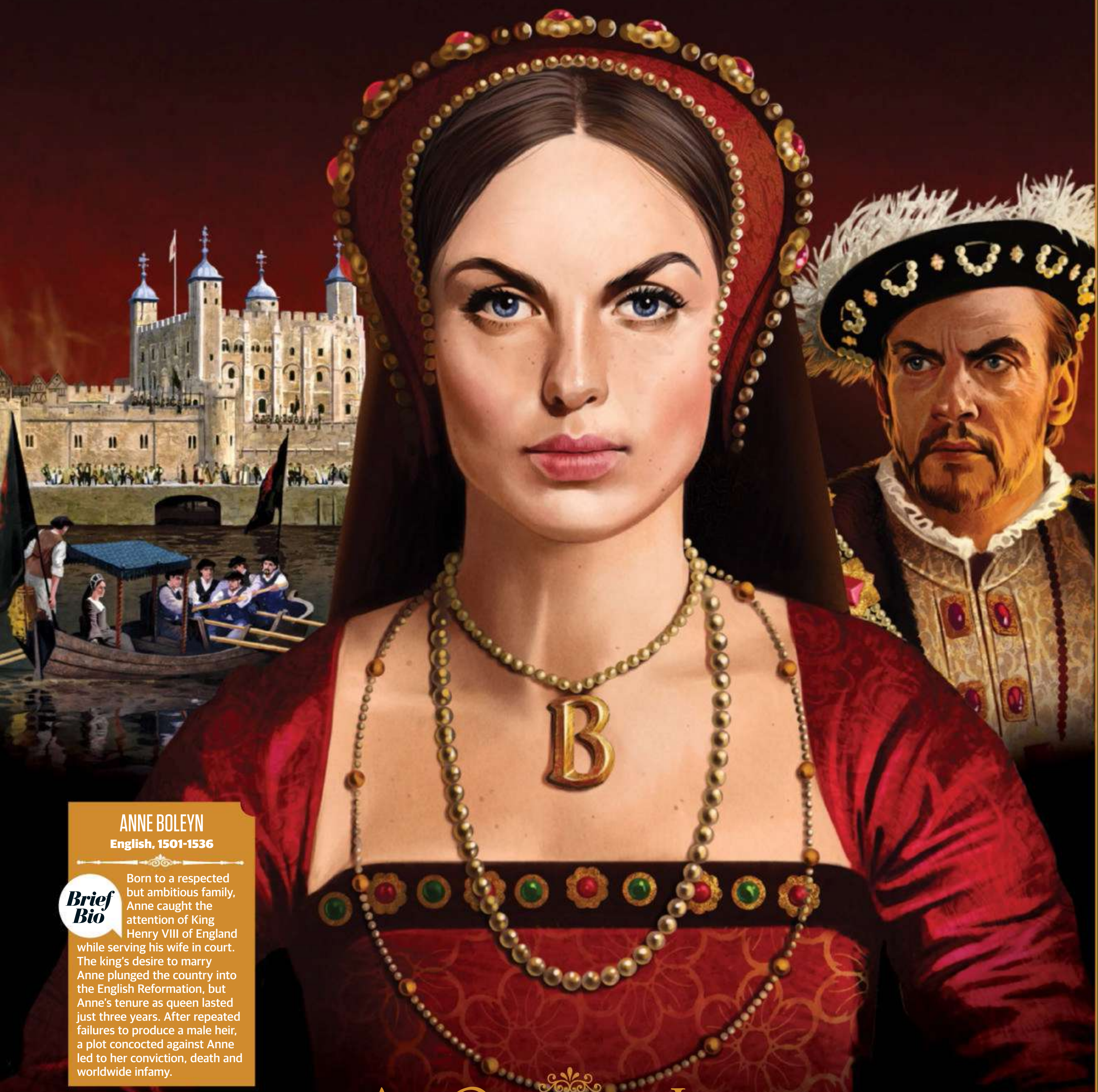
The sun streamed down on the brisk spring morning as a figure emerged near from four-turreted White Tower of the Tower of London. The crowd that had gathered there were oddly quiet; they watched silently as the slender woman passed through them. She was dressed in a loose, grey gown, so dark it was almost black, with a red petticoat underneath. An ermine mantle was draped around her neck, and her long dark hair was tied above her head, exposing her thin, dainty neck. Two of her ladies accompanied her as she climbed the scaffold that had been erected for the day's sombre event. Her steps were strong and firm, her countenance steely and unreadable.

Although the strength of her steps was remarkable for one facing her death, when she turned to the crowd and spoke her voice trembled. However, her words rang out loud and clear. She begged the people to forgive her if she had not treated them with gentleness, and then prayed that God would have mercy for those who had condemned her. She ended by praying for the king, who was a good, gentle, and sovereign lord. All these things she uttered, but not once did she admit her guilt for the crimes she would die for. Her words were so sweet, her manner so graceful, that many gathered there shed a tear for the condemned woman.

She wished farewell to her weeping ladies, and removed her headdress, tucking her long, thick hair under a coif. As she knelt upright, one of her ladies came forward and tied a blindfold over her eyes. She began to mutter under her breath "Jesu receive my soul; O Lord God have pity on my soul", over and over again. She prayed silently as she received her husband's final gift, a swordsman of Saint-Omer; he had given her the mercy of a sword in place of an axe. The executioner raised the sword high, its sharpened blade gleaming in the sunlight, then brought it down upon her thin neck. It was all over in a single stroke. The queen was dead.

It is portrayed, often unfairly, that Anne Boleyn descended on King Henry VIII like some sort of wicked, conniving temptress, luring him away with her dark looks and feminine charms from his almost 24-year-long marriage, young daughter and queen beloved by the population. But Henry had been anything but loyal to Catherine, and had already fathered his illegitimate son Henry Fitzroy before Anne was in the picture. In fact, it had been Anne's sister, Mary, who initially caught the king's attention, and he conducted an affair with the older Boleyn sister that may have resulted in two more children. When Henry was first drawn to Anne, it is highly likely that he desired her simply as another mistress. But she had other plans.

The new lady in waiting was a captivating figure. Having recently returned from serving the French Queen Claude, she boasted an elegance and poise that instantly created a stir. Her dark features were unfashionable for the time, but her deep brown eyes and unusual beauty caught the attention of more than just the king. Among those competing for her affections were Sir Thomas Wyatt, an acclaimed poet, and Henry Percy, who even went as far as to secure Anne's hand in a secret betrothal. However, all those with their gaze fixed upon the enchanting young debutante soon found themselves facing a rival they could not hope to better – the king of England.



ANNE BOLEYN

English, 1501-1536

Brief Bio

Born to a respected but ambitious family, Anne caught the attention of King Henry VIII of England while serving his wife in court. The king's desire to marry Anne plunged the country into the English Reformation, but Anne's tenure as queen lasted just three years. After repeated failures to produce a male heir, a plot concocted against Anne led to her conviction, death and worldwide infamy.

AN OBJECT OF LUST

Appearance

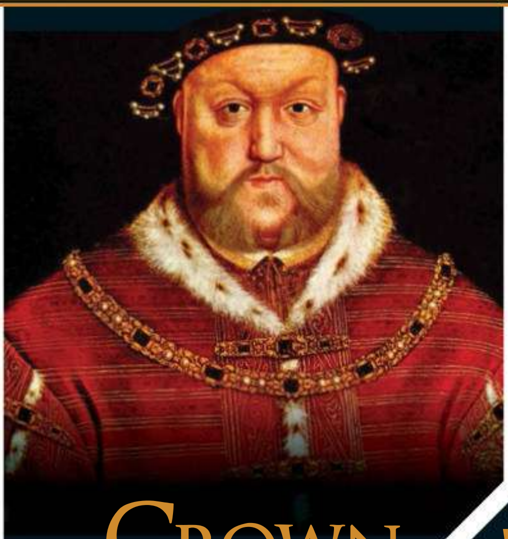
Although opinion is divided on Anne's true appearance, she presented herself with great grace and manners. She was dressed in the latest fashions and is consistently described as being elegant and sophisticated. Henry was captivated by the bewitching and fair persona Anne presented at court.

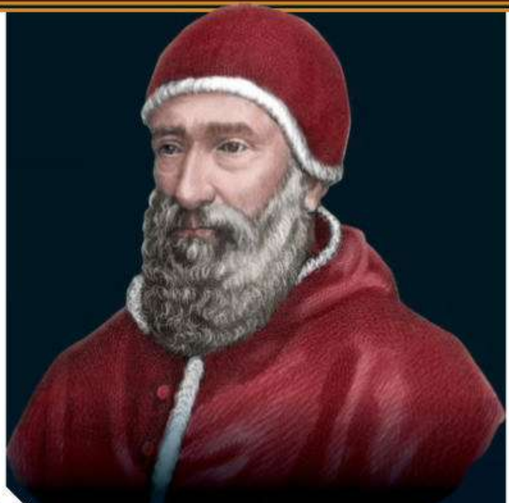
Social standing

Although her father was descended from middle-class tradesmen, through her mother Anne's ancestry was linked to Margaret of France and her husband, King Edward I. Her ambitious father boosted the family reputation at court and he entered the king's most intimate circle.

Intelligence

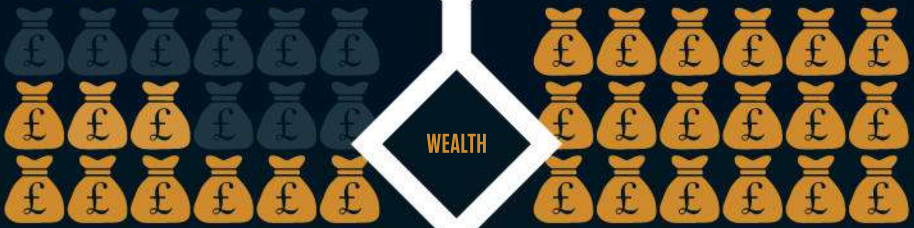
Henry was desperate to be seen as a modern, cosmopolitan man and did everything to beat his rival King Francis I of France. Not only had Anne served in the French court, but she was also intelligent, witty and an accomplished singer and musician; certainly a catch for a man looking to prove his suitability to the throne.

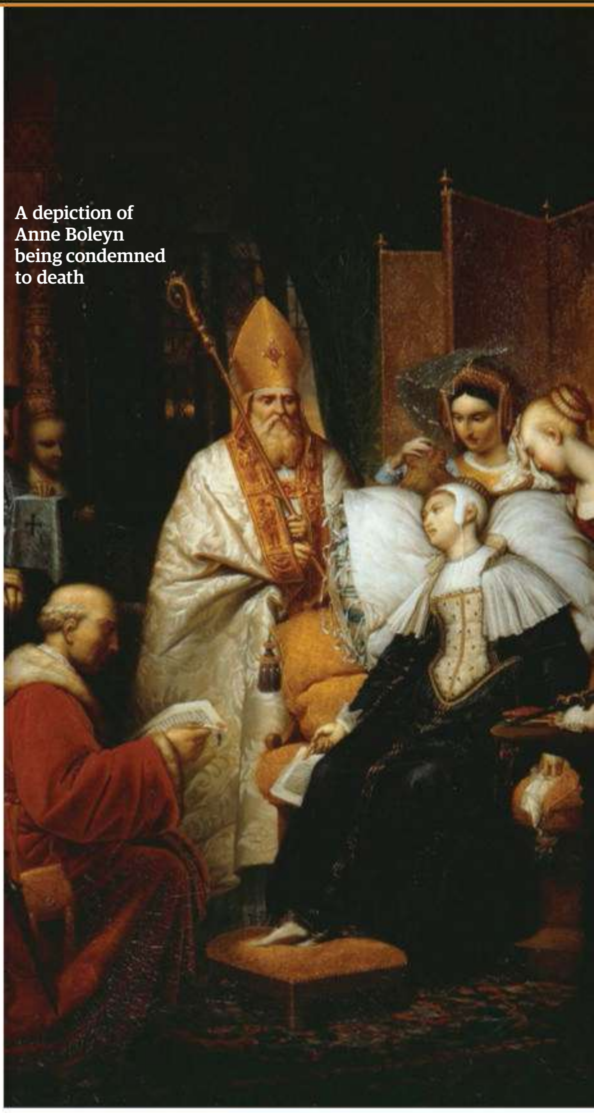




CROWN V CHURCH

KING HENRY VIII		POPE CLEMENT VII
2 MILLION	NUMBER OF FOLLOWERS	OVER 75 MILLION
“If a man shall take his brother’s wife it is an unclean thing… they shall be childless” King Henry VIII quoting the *Bible*, Leviticus, 20:21, as justification for seeking a divorce from Catherine of Aragon	ON DIVORCE	“Forbids Henry to remarry until the decision of the case, and declares that if he does all issue will be illegitimate”
PURPLE VELVET, **ITALIAN AND FRENCH FASHION,** LARGE PUFFED SLEEVES, **FEATHERED HAT,** FUR MANTLE, **MULTIPLE EXPENSIVE PIECES OF JEWELLERY**	DRESS SENSE	STRICT POPE ATTIRE, **CHOIR DRESS – A WHITE SILK CASSOCK,** SCULL CAP AND A LACE ROCHET
“For all the prelates at their consecration make an oath to the Pope clean contrary to the oath that they make to us, so that they seem to be his subjects, and not ours”	ON RELIGION	“Forbids any one in England, universities, parliaments, courts of law, etc, to make any decision in an affair the judgment of which is reserved for the Holy See”





A depiction of Anne Boleyn being condemned to death

Hever Castle was the childhood home of Anne Boleyn

TUDOR COURTSHIP

Get set up

As forced marriage is forbidden by the Church, marriages can't strictly be 'arranged', but couples are often matched up by their parents to ensure a suitor of acceptable social standing. Love matches do occur, but are only really acceptable if the wealth of both is suitable.

Shower her with gifts

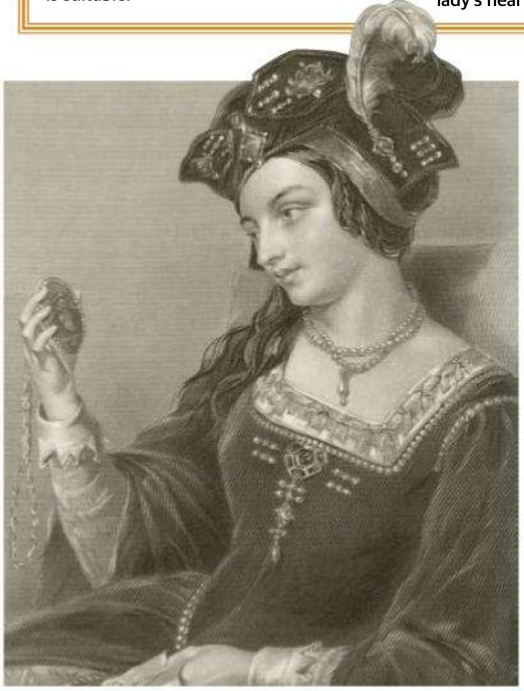
Once a suitable lady has been chosen, a Tudor gentleman will begin the first stage of courtship in which he will visit her frequently and bestow her with an array of valuable gifts to win her over. Ribbons, girdles and gloves can all be used to capture a lady's heart.

Show your commitment

Known as betrothal or handfasting, when the couple have agreed to marry they will go through a period similar to a modern-day engagement. This often involves a public ceremony where pledges are made. After the betrothal the couple are allowed to begin sexual relations.

Get married

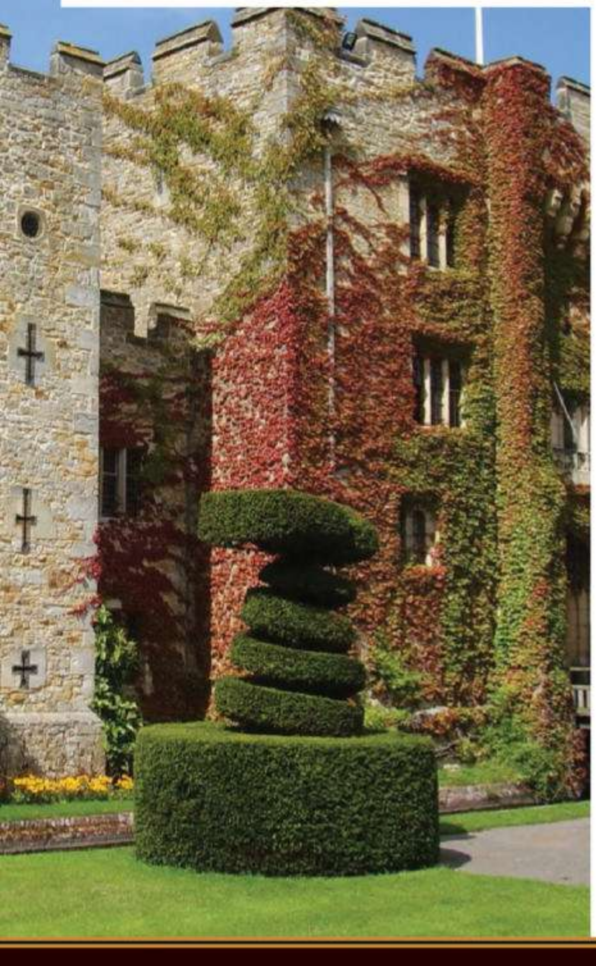
The marriage ceremony itself is a very public and high-profile affair in a church with the more guests the better. Wedding dresses will usually be the bride's best dress and, for those who can afford it, the ceremony will be followed by a great feast with food, music and dancing.



Henry prided himself on his image – he was obsessed with his appearance and was constantly attempting to prove himself as an accomplished, charismatic and capable leader. With his own claim to the throne emerging from the turbulent War of the Roses, he was determined to do everything in his power to secure his and his descendant's place as king. As models of the Renaissance man, Henry had a friendly rivalry with Francis I of France and did anything he could do to outmatch him. Anne was trained at the French courts herself, and boasted all the glamour, exceptional skills and intelligence Henry wished to embody himself. He wanted her instantly.

17 love letters that Henry wrote to Anne have survived and are stored in the Vatican Library

However, unlike her sister, Anne was not a weak-willed girl who would bow to the will of a man. Anne's courtly education in the royal palaces of the Netherlands and France had given her grace, elegance and a beautiful singing voice – but it had also given her one other thing: knowledge of the game of courtly love. She knew what became of the mistresses of kings; she had witnessed her own sister tossed aside the moment his attention had been drawn by another. She had already been denied the love of her sweetheart, Henry Percy, having been deemed unworthy by his father. Henry's obvious affections for her would provide the perfect opportunity to prove just how much she was worth. Anne did something no woman before her had dared to do: she said no to the king.



Rather than outraging him, Anne's rejection spurred Henry to chase her more fervently. He bestowed her with gifts, penned love letter after love letter, but the enchanting but strong-willed woman still said no. When he offered for her to be his official mistress, that too was rejected. She was everything all the women in his life had never been – rather than agreeing politely, she challenged his opinions, debating with him on subjects such as theology. She was passionate, brash and fiery, and she had well and truly set Henry alight. There was no doubt in his mind that such a young, virile woman would bear him the male heir that would ensure the continuation of his line. Sometime in 1527, after a year of chasing her, he proposed marriage to Anne, and finally she said yes.

While we have reams of Henry's love letters, and the extreme decisions that would follow his proposal as evidence of his strong feelings for Anne, we can only speculate on what was going on in the young woman's head. She was under immense pressure from her ambitious father and uncle to elevate the family name – something a match with a king would no doubt achieve – but the lengths to which Henry would go to ensure she became queen must have been captivating for the younger daughter of a family with commoner roots. Because Henry did indeed have great lengths to travel, there was the small matter of his current wife, the now-infertile Catherine of Aragon.

Henry, at least in the early part of his reign, was well known as a devout Catholic. He had even been named a so-called 'defender of the faith' by Pope Leo X, and it was to the *Bible* he turned to seek an annulment for his 24-year-long marriage to the mother of his only legitimate child to date. He argued with Pope Clement VII that his marriage to Catherine, who had been his late brother's wife, directly went against the words in Leviticus 20:21. But the Pope wasn't a fool; to allow the annulment would contradict the decision made by a previous infallible Pope to allow the marriage between Henry and Catherine in the first place. Again Henry was told no and again he was denied Anne and the male heir he so badly desired.

Henry had heard enough 'nos' so on 23 May 1533 he took matters into his own hands and ordered the newly elected and specially selected archbishop of Canterbury, Thomas Cranmer, to grant him the annulment he so desperately needed. That simple action would have consequences that would reach far beyond Henry or Anne's own life, forever changing the religious and political landscape of the country, leading to the English Reformation. Breaking away from Rome was a rash, dangerous and groundbreaking move, but Henry finally had what he wanted – he was allowed to marry the enchanting Anne. And it was just in time, because

ENGLISH REFORMATION IN NUMBERS

1 in 50 was in religious orders

800

religious houses taken over by Henry

10,000

monks, nuns, friars and canons lost their homes

£84,324,100

The amount the crown profited per year as a result of the Reformation

200

The years the monarchy had been trying to suppress religious power

30,000

The number of people who took part in the Pilgrimage of Grace against the Reformation

she was already pregnant, and any child born out of wedlock could not be king – male or not.

Anne was paraded through the streets of London in a grand ceremony; she sat upon swathes of fine cloth resting on two regal horses. She was crowned with St Edward's crown, a crown only worn previously by monarchs, perhaps indicating the male heir she was presumed to carry in her belly. Anne's family immediately felt the boons of their new powerful connection. Her father became Earl of Wiltshire, her cousin Earl of Ormond and even Mary, Henry's previous mistress, received an annual pension of £100. Spirits in the royal court were high, but beyond the palace gates the public were unconvinced. In their eyes not only had Anne ousted a beloved queen, but she was also responsible for the ripples created after the break with Rome; the people needed something stable to place their hopes in – they needed a male heir.

They would have to wait. On 7 September 1533 Anne gave birth, but it was not to the son she, Henry and everyone else had expected. It was a daughter. She was christened 'Elizabeth' in honour of Henry's mother, but this did little to comfort his disappointment. The documents were changed, the tournament that celebrated the birth of an heir cancelled and the people's discontent grew. Doubts also began to grow in Henry's mind; not only had Anne failed to produce the male heir she had promised him prior to their union, but also the qualities that had made the young Boleyn girl so enchanting and desirable as a mistress were proving unsuitable for the wife of a king.

After being married to Catherine of Aragon for so long, Henry was used to having an obedient, reliable and submissive wife. Anne was anything but this. She would openly speak her mind and express opinions contrary to Henry's. Catherine had silently watched as Henry indulged himself with various mistresses beneath her nose, but Anne reacted with extreme jealousy toward any woman that got close to him, as she herself was aware how easily her husband's gaze could travel. He had sacrificed his faith and rocked the very foundations of the country for her, but now Henry was not so sure about Anne, and neither was anyone else.

The pressure on Anne at this point was immeasurable. She was already aware of Henry's affections toward Jane Seymour, one of her own ladies in waiting, and when Anne witnessed her wearing a locket with a portrait of Henry inside – a gift from the king – she tore it from Jane's neck with such force that her fingers bled. She was desperate to cling to power, not only for herself, but for the good of her family and her daughter, and her only chance of keeping a grasp on it relied on something completely out of her control. Sadly for Anne, the pressure upon her was not about to ease up, and she suffered a miscarriage in 1534, just one year into her tenure as queen. Fate itself seemed positioned against her when again in 1536 she miscarried another baby, this time a boy. For Henry, and many others, there was more than fate at work here, and he accused Anne of seducing him with spells. The fact she was unable to bear a healthy son was, apparently, further proof that Anne was cursed. Considering the public's already poor opinion of her, it would not take much for them to believe that Anne was a harbinger of ill omens and quite possibly a witch sent to lead their king and country astray. Not only was she disobedient, fiery and opinionated, but she was also unable to produce a future king. Everyone was agreed – Anne needed to go.

As Anne recovered from her miscarriage, Thomas Cromwell, Henry's chief minister, set about plotting her downfall. Cromwell had his own reasons to fear the influence of Anne; the two had argued where the money from the dissolution

> Anne was a champion of the English translation of the *Bible*

THE HIGHS AND LOWS OF ANNE BOLEYN

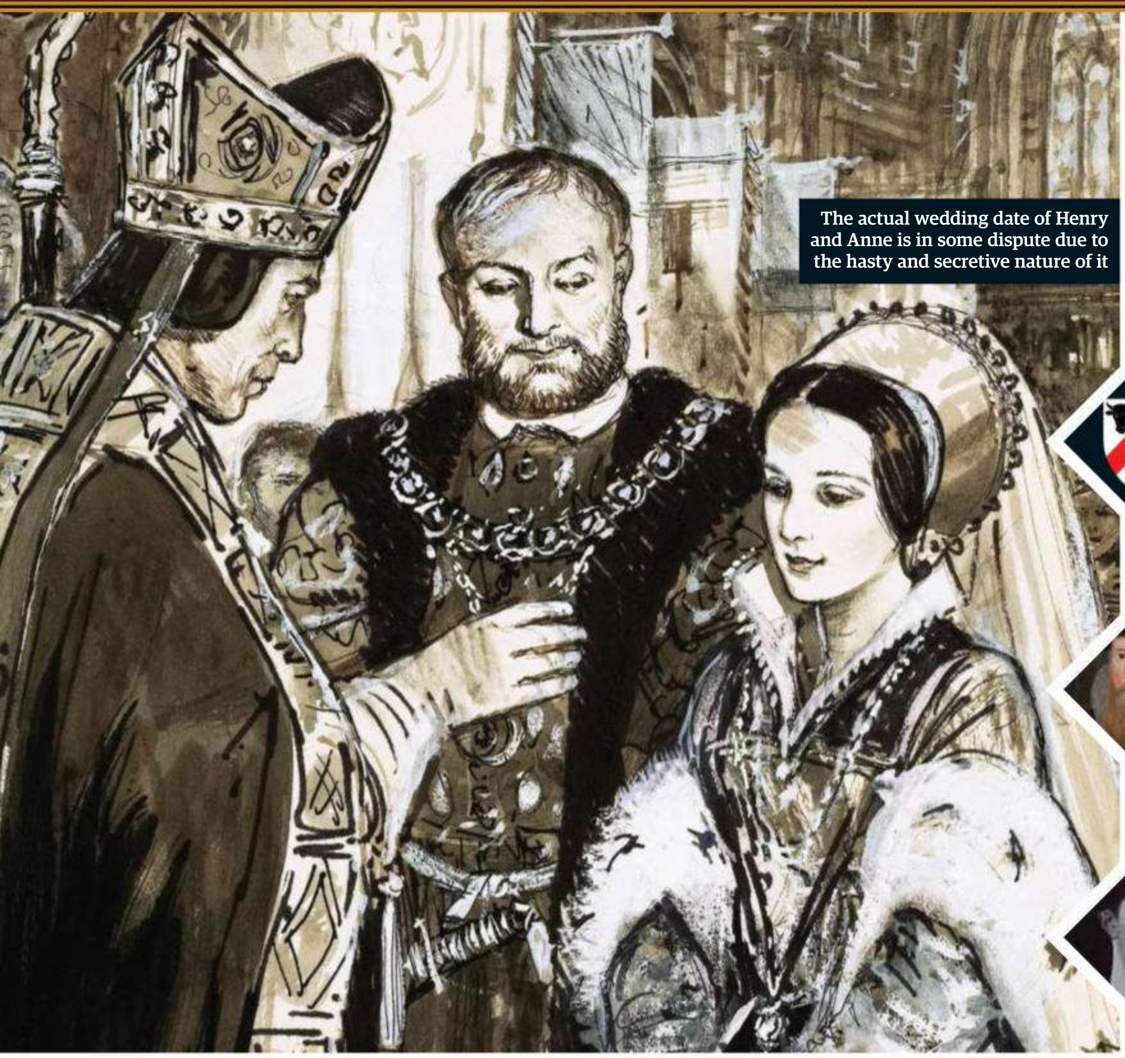
1501
Anne is born to Thomas Boleyn and Lady Elizabeth Howard, the second daughter born to the couple after Mary. The Boleyns are a very respected family of the English aristocracy. The date of Anne's birth is also argued to be 1507.

1513
Anne is sent abroad to receive an education in Europe and joins the schoolroom of Margaret of Austria. Here she learns all the skills expected of a Tudor noblewoman, such as horseback riding, dancing, singing and writing.

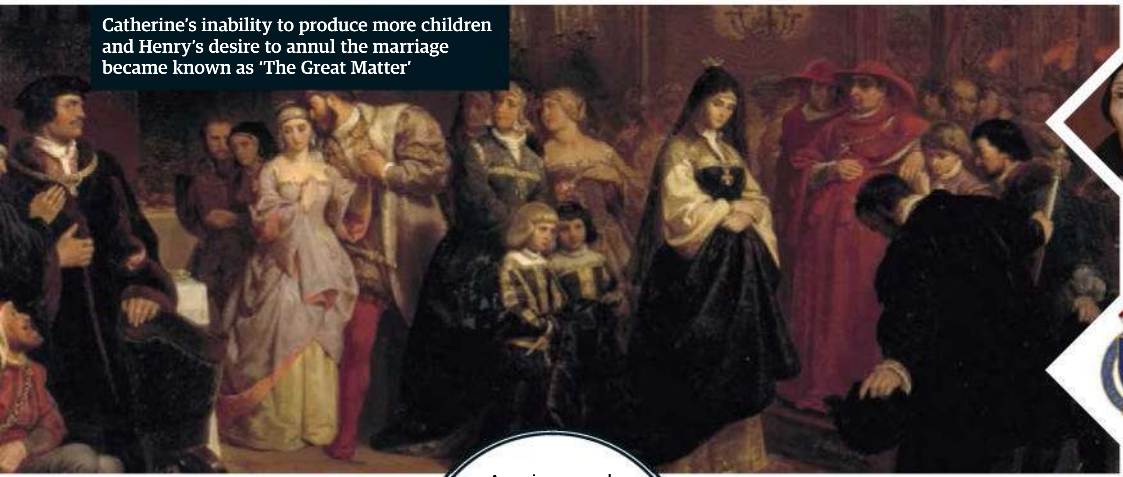
1515
Anne becomes maid of honour to Queen Claude of France. Here she develops many of the skills that will later impress the king, such as art, fashion, etiquette and most importantly, the game of courtly love.

1522
Anne's father summons her back to England to marry James Butler to settle a dispute over land and titles. The marriage arrangements come to a sudden halt, possibly because Thomas Boleyn has a grander suitor in mind for his youngest daughter.

1522
Anne makes her debut at the Chateau Vert pageant. She attracts the attention of Sir Thomas Wyatt and Sir Henry Percy. She later secretly betroths Percy, but it is cut off by his father and Anne enters into the service of Catherine of Aragon.



The actual wedding date of Henry and Anne is in some dispute due to the hasty and secretive nature of it



Catherine's inability to produce more children and Henry's desire to annul the marriage became known as 'The Great Matter'

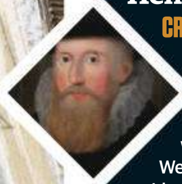
HEADLESS HALL OF FAME

George Boleyn

CRIME: INCEST, TREASON
DATE OF EXECUTION: 17 MAY 1536

Anne's brother George was charged with incest with the queen and plotting to kill the king. It is likely this was a plot devised by Thomas Cromwell to rid Henry of Anne. Despite no evidence against him he was found guilty and beheaded with the four other men.

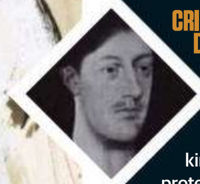
Henry Norris



CRIME: TREASON, ADULTERY
DATE OF EXECUTION: 17 MAY 1536

Norris served as groom of the stool to Henry VIII and was close to both the king and queen. The dates he was charged with adultery would be nigh-on impossible, as Anne was not in Westminster at the time. Norris was found guilty and said very little on the scaffold as he met his death.

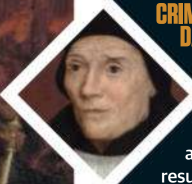
Francis Weston



CRIME: TREASON, ADULTERY
DATE OF EXECUTION: 17 MAY 1536

Weston served as a gentleman of the Privy Chamber to Henry VIII, and became a friend of the king. Aged 25, Weston was arrested for adultery with Anne and plotting to kill the king, despite no evidence supporting this. Weston protested his innocence to the end but was executed.

John Fisher



CRIME: TREASON
DATE OF EXECUTION: 22 JUNE 1535

Born in Yorkshire, John Fisher was a Roman-Catholic bishop who supported Catherine of Aragon when Henry VIII attempted to divorce her. Fisher refused to accept the king as head of the church and was beheaded as a result. Today Fisher is considered a saint.

Thomas Darcy

CRIME: HIGH TREASON
DATE OF EXECUTION: 30 JUNE 1537

An English nobleman, Darcy was opposed to Henry's dissolution of the monasteries and helped lead the popular uprising the Pilgrimage of Grace. "The most serious of all Tudor rebellions" saw 30,000 people in Yorkshire rise up against the religious reforms.

1526

Henry VIII loses interest in Anne's sister, Mary, and begins to court Anne. He sends her a series of love letters, but Anne refuses to be his mistress. Within a year Henry asks Anne to marry him and she accepts.

1533

Anne is crowned queen consort, after years of fighting for an annulment of the marriage of Henry and Catherine. Anne is already pregnant with Elizabeth and in September of that year she is born, much to Henry's disappointment.

1534

The relationship between Anne and Henry becomes strained as Anne suffers a miscarriage. By the time she falls pregnant again in 1535, Henry is already courting Jane Seymour. Anne also miscarries this child, who appears to be male.

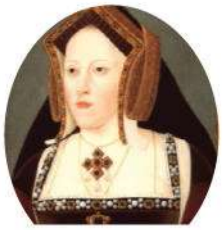
1536

Various men are arrested on charges of adultery with Anne and treason against the king in a plot masterminded by Thomas Cromwell. Anne is taken to the Tower of London, tried and found guilty of adultery, incest and high treason.

1536

Anne is executed on a scaffold by a French swordsman brought in especially for the beheading. Before her death she praises Henry, perhaps to save Elizabeth and her family from any further implications, but refuses to admit her guilt.

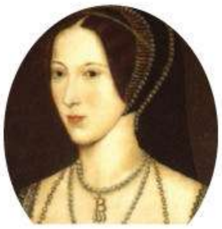
Wife Head-To-Headless



Catherine of Aragon

DATES OF MARRIAGE:
1509-1533
WHAT HAPPENED TO HER?
DIVORCED

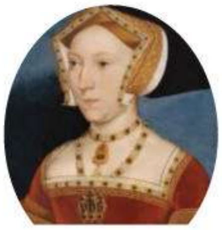
Catherine was first married to Arthur, Henry's older brother, but was betrothed to Henry after his death. Catherine had a string of failed pregnancies and finally gave birth to a healthy daughter in 1516 – Mary. Although Henry seemed to adore Catherine, the marriage was annulled on the basis that she had been his brother's wife.



Anne Boleyn

DATES OF MARRIAGE:
1533-1536
WHAT HAPPENED TO HER?
BEHEADED

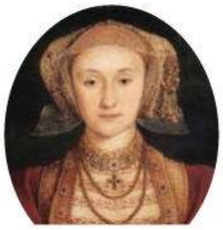
Clever, pretty and witty, Anne soon attracted Henry's attention as the handmaiden of Catherine of Aragon. She refused to become a mistress and demanded he wed her. This led Henry to seek a divorce and start the English Reformation. Although Anne produced the would-be heir, Elizabeth, her failure to produce a son had Henry plot her downfall.



Jane Seymour

DATES OF MARRIAGE:
1536-1537
WHAT HAPPENED TO HER?
DIED AFTER GIVING BIRTH

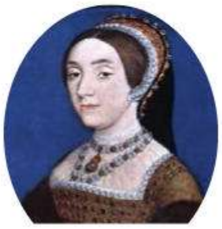
It is highly likely that Jane Seymour was the mistress who disposed of Anne, and Seymour married Henry shortly after Anne's execution. Although she was the lowest in birth of Henry's wives, her giving Henry his much-desired male heir, Edward, secured his everlasting love. She died from post-natal complications and Henry was later buried next to her.



Anne of Cleves

DATES OF MARRIAGE:
6 JANUARY 1540 - 9 JULY 1540
WHAT HAPPENED TO HER?
DIVORCED

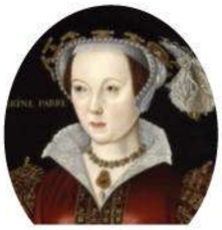
A German princess, Anne was selected by Henry from nothing more than a portrait. Henry asked the artist to paint Anne realistically, and not to flatter her. However, when Henry met her he was greatly disappointed and was not enthusiastic about the marriage. The marriage provided a vital alliance with the Germans, but was later annulled.



Catherine Howard

DATES OF MARRIAGE:
1540-1541
WHAT HAPPENED TO HER?
BEHEADED

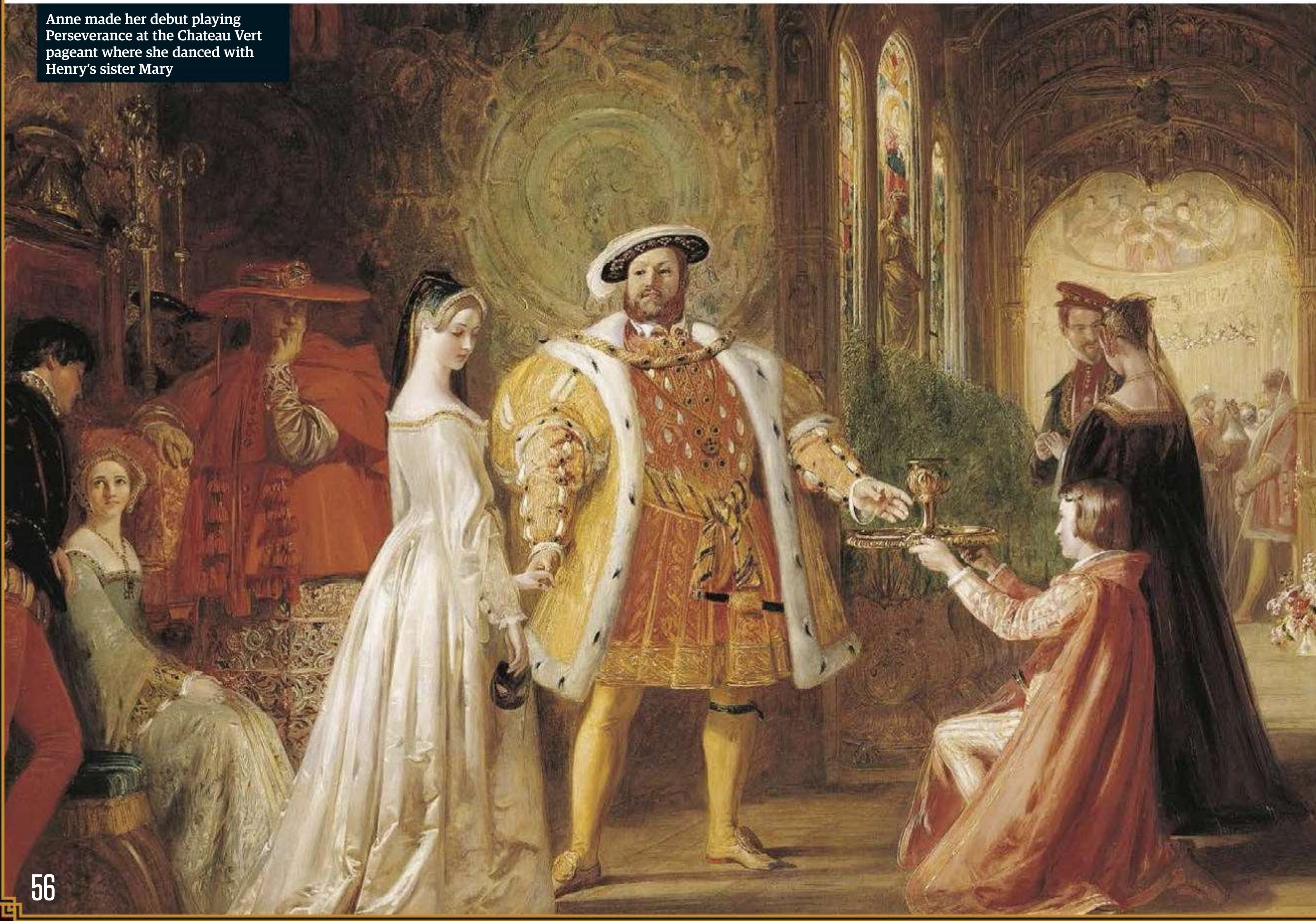
Referred to by Henry as his "rose without a thorn", the young and pretty woman quickly caught the king's eye and the two were soon married. However, in early-1941 Howard allegedly embarked upon an affair with Henry's male courtier, Thomas Culpepper. Howard was charged with treason and adultery, found guilty and executed.



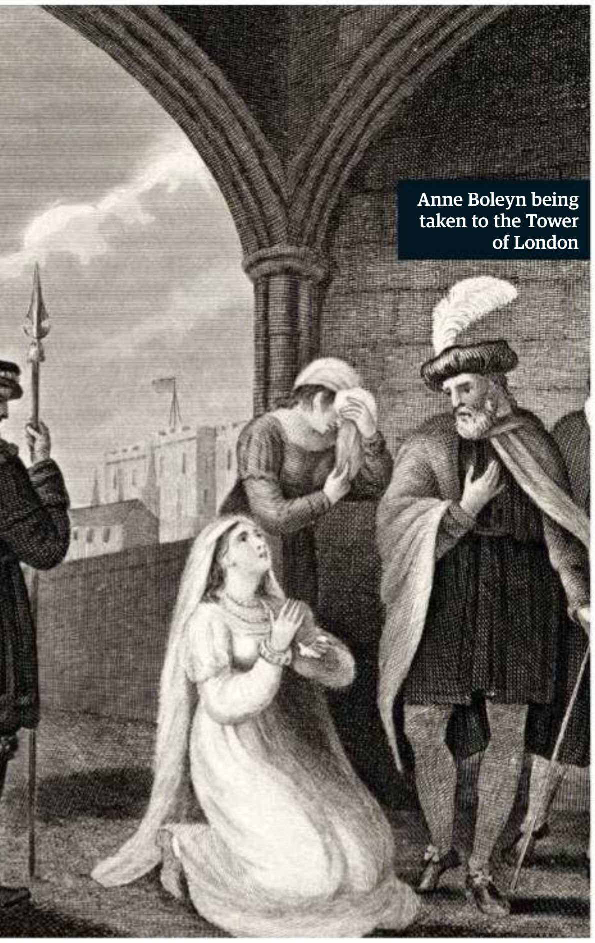
Catherine Parr

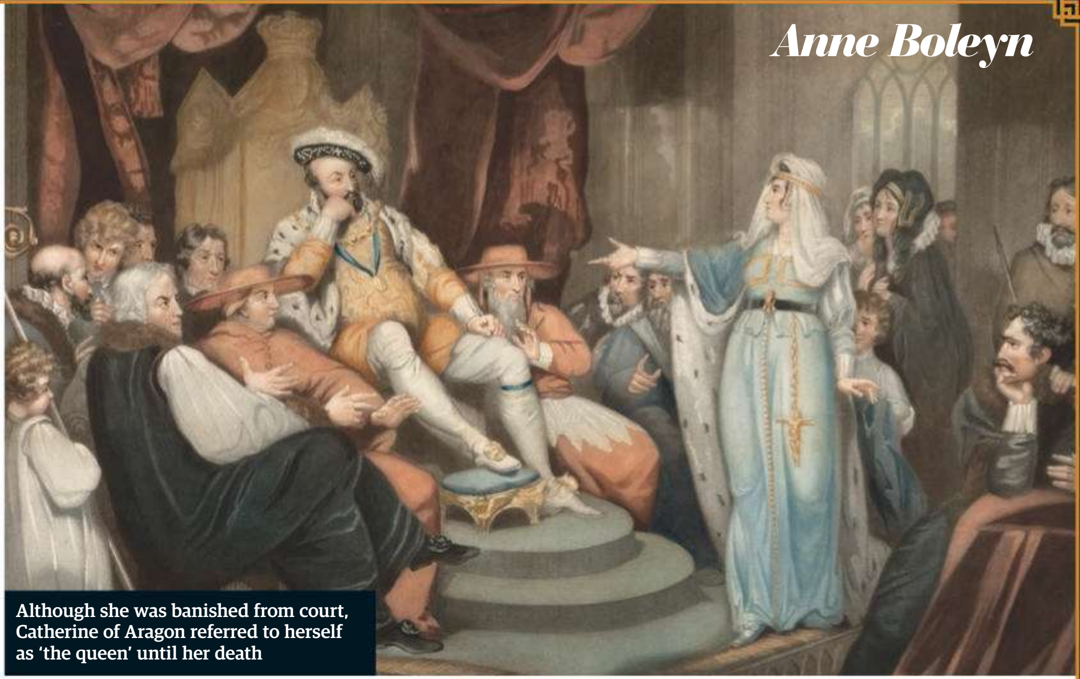
DATES OF MARRIAGE:
1543-1547
WHAT HAPPENED TO HER?
SURVIVED

Having had four husbands of which Henry was the third, Catherine Parr was the most married queen in English history. Her friendship with Henry's daughter Mary caused her to catch the king's attention. As queen, Catherine worked to restore Henry's court as a family home, and helped strengthen the Tudor line, thereby ensuring Elizabeth's eventual succession.



Anne made her debut playing Perseverance at the Chateau Vert pageant where she danced with Henry's sister Mary


Anne Boleyn being taken to the Tower of London


Although she was banished from court, Catherine of Aragon referred to herself as 'the queen' until her death

of the monasteries should go, and he had seen where Anne had sent her other enemies, such as Thomas More – to the chopping block. Under Henry's instructions, Cromwell began to investigate a variety of adulterous accusations against Anne and arrested Mark Smeaton, a court musician. Mark confessed to the charges, very likely under torture, and gave the names of a selection of other men under the same charges, including Anne's own brother – George.

Anne was far from blind to what was going on; she was very aware of what these investigations meant for herself. In April 1536, just before Smeaton was arrested, Anne came to Henry carrying the young Elizabeth in her arms and appealed to him directly. However, it seemed that her power over him had finally been extinguished. On 1 May Henry left the Mayday jousts without saying goodbye to Anne, and the following day she was arrested – it would be the final time she would ever see her husband.

> The legend that Anne had a sixth finger on her hand was most likely a vicious rumour

In a cruel twist of irony, Anne's prison cell was the very same place in the Tower of London that she had resided on her coronation night. For Anne, a woman for whom control had always been of vital importance, the hopelessness of her situation had a profound effect. Within a day of imprisonment her state of mind differed from optimism and giddiness, to bouts of hysteria and extreme depression. The queen would sob uncontrollably one moment, then burst into shocking laughter the next. Her enemies were very cunning with the methods in which they condemned Anne; four of the men were tried and found guilty of adultery and treason before her own trial took place, making it nigh-on impossible for her to prove her innocence.

Anne was forced to stand before a council of peers including her once-love Henry Percy and her own uncle in the very same room she had enjoyed her coronation feast. There was very little evidence against Anne or any of the men accused, but the king had made his will known. When the verdict was announced, Anne collapsed and had to be carried out of the courtroom. Guilty. She had been condemned to death.

On 17 May, the five condemned men were executed, including Anne's beloved younger brother, and on 19 May Anne herself was led to the scaffold. Her marriage to the king had already been deemed invalid, and he was not present to witness the final moments of the woman who had captivated him for so many years. Anne's body was buried in an unmarked grave in the Chapel of St Peter, which adjoined the Tower Green.

For the surviving Boleyns, the fall was so great they could not hope to recover from it. Anne's mother, Elizabeth, died a year later and she was soon followed by her husband. Mary died in 1542, leaving behind only a young daughter and the son that may have been Henry's. Less than eight years after Anne's coronation every immediate member of the Boleyn family was dead. Their rise had been magnificent, their fall akin to a Greek tragedy.

The future for Henry was almost as stormy. 11 years and four wives later, Henry's greed and debauched lifestyle finally got the better of him and he died aged 55. The handsome, athletic and charismatic young man that he had wished to portray himself as had faded long ago, and the portrait of a lustful, violent and egotistical king remained. Although he had finally produced the son he was so obsessed with obtaining, the young Edward VI died aged just 15.

But unbeknownst to him, he had already produced the strong, long-lasting heir he desired. Elizabeth, the daughter Anne had borne who he had been so disappointed with, went on to rule England for 45 years. She became one of the most famed and celebrated rulers in the nation's history, and Henry and Anne's most enduring legacy.

SPOUSE WARS

Henry VIII's six wives is a lot for British leaders, but it pales in a worldwide context

Fat'h Ali Shah Qajar PERSIAN, 1772-1834

NUMBER OF MARRIAGES: 158

Sobhuza II SWAZI, 1899-1982

NUMBER OF MARRIAGES: 70

Mswati III SWAZI, 1968 - PRESENT DAY

NUMBER OF MARRIAGES: 15

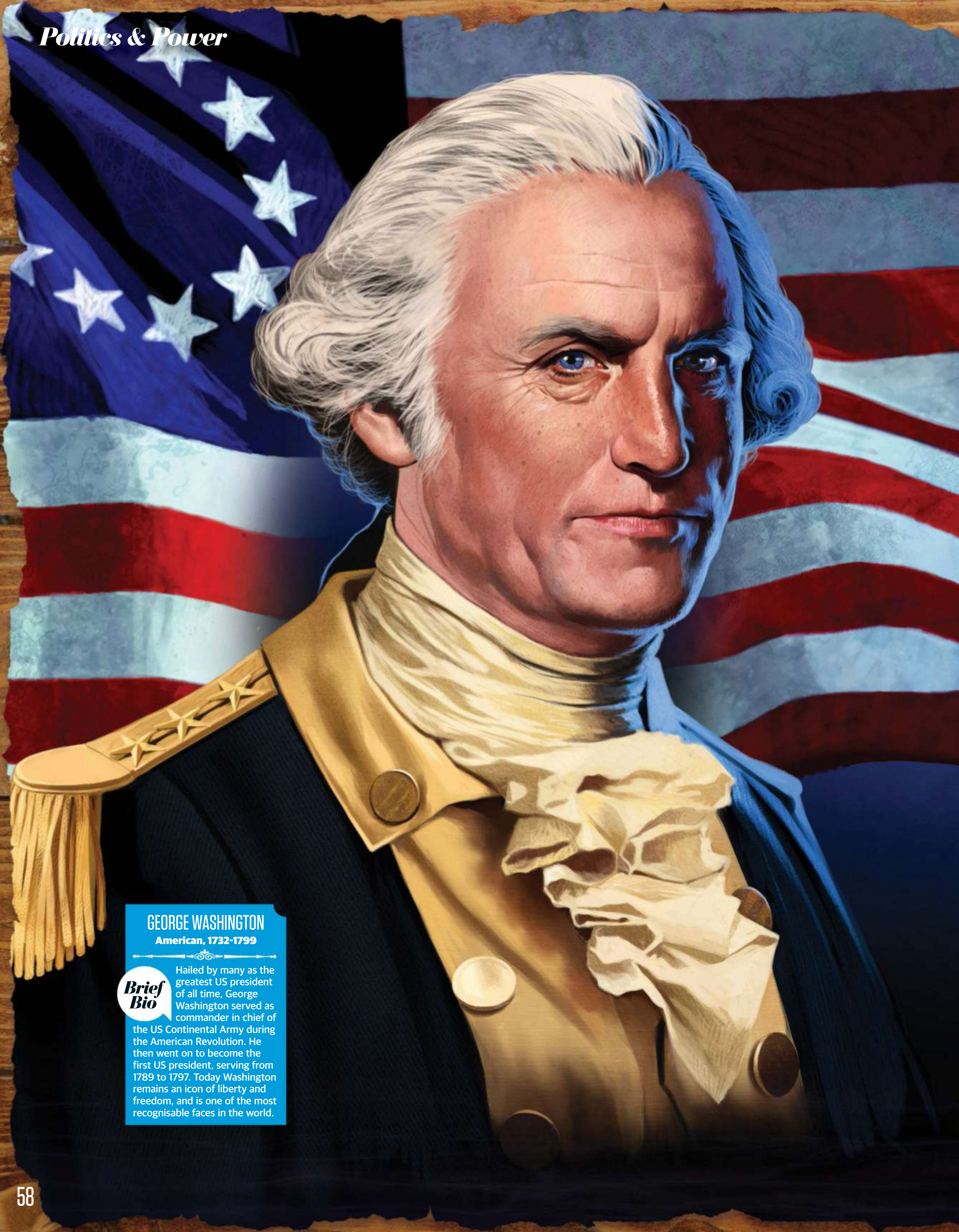
Amenhotep III EGYPTIAN, ??? - 1353 BCE

NUMBER OF MARRIAGES: 317

Abdul Hamid II OTTOMAN, 1876-1909

NUMBER OF MARRIAGES: 13

© Look & Learn, Alamy



GEORGE WASHINGTON

American, 1732-1799

Brief Bio Hailed by many as the greatest US president of all time, George Washington served as commander in chief of the US Continental Army during the American Revolution. He then went on to become the first US president, serving from 1789 to 1797. Today Washington remains an icon of liberty and freedom, and is one of the most recognisable faces in the world.

In his final will Washington freed all his slaves

THE FIRST PRESIDENT
WASHINGTON

Today George Washington is hailed as the father of the USA, but his journey to legendary hero was a perilous and difficult one

Long Island was supposed to be a success. The enemy was stronger and greater in number but the rebels had got there first. The commander had prepared everything for his foe's arrival in New York, strengthening his batteries and placing his generals perfectly. But the British had broken through. First Sullivan fell, then Stirling, and the commander could only watch as the lives of his brave men were brutally wiped away. Knowing all was lost he ordered his men to retreat before the carnage could reach them. As relentless rain pelted down he used the cover of darkness to help conceal his soldiers as they climbed into every available boat he could get his hands on. He waited until the last man was on board before he boarded himself. As the boat drew away the commander looked back through the thick fog that had descended over the bay. The mist had concealed them from the British, his men were safe, but Brooklyn had been lost.

This is not the story of a failed general, forgotten by the history books, but instead that of the most glorified and worshipped president in US history - George Washington. Just as his men were hidden by the fog that grim morning in Brooklyn, today Washington himself is cloaked and obscured by layers of myths and legends. He has become an almost messianic figure in the United States, a legend of justice and freedom, a brilliant commander who led his underdog army to the greatest victory in US history. But as with most legends, the stories are not always true. Far from being a brilliant military strategist, Washington actually lost more battles than he won. He was no Alexander or Caesar, but an entirely different kind of hero altogether - one who persevered in the face of devastating failure for his men and country.

Making history

3 reasons why Washington is considered the USA's greatest leader

1 Virtue

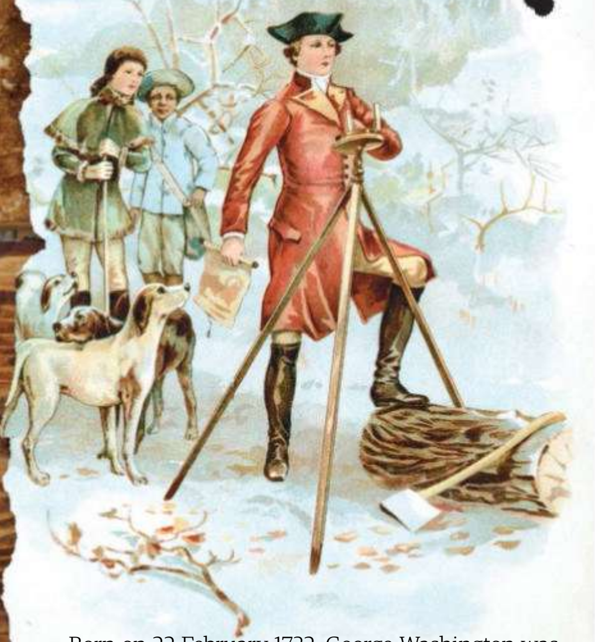
Washington twice gave up the chance of ultimate power. First at the end of the Revolutionary War when he surrendered his role as commander in chief, and again when he refused to rule as president for a third term. When George III was presented with the idea of Washington doing this, he said, "If he does that he will be the greatest man in the world."

2 Commitment to country

Washington did not become involved in the hostile arguments and squabbling of political debates, but instead acted as a peacekeeper between the groups. A true non-partisan, his primary aim was always the betterment of the country, rather than any personal gain.

3 Persistence

Washington was not the most gifted military leader; he suffered multiple losses and personal humiliations, but his determination to persevere in spite of repeated setbacks inspired his soldiers to do the same, which resulted in him creating one of the most celebrated underdog success stories in world history.



Born on 22 February 1732, George Washington was the son of a slave-owning tobacco planter. George received a mixed education from a variety of tutors, and plans for him to join the British Royal Navy were cut short when his mother objected. Fate instead led Washington to become a surveyor, and he travelled for two years surveying land in the Culpeper, Frederick and Augusta counties. This position began a lifelong interest in landholdings, and he purchased his first piece of land as soon as his sizable income filled his pockets. And when his older brother died in 1752, Washington inherited not only his father's vast lands, but also the position of major in the Virginia militia.

It would not be long until Washington's natural leadership and drive would send him straight into the heat of battle. At a staggering 188 centimetres (6'2") tall, the young man towered above his contemporaries, and Virginia's Lieutenant General Robert Dinwiddie saw fit to use his imposing but inspiring nature to try to persuade the French to remove themselves from land claimed by Britain. When they refused, Washington returned with a small force and attacked the French post at Fort Duquesne, killing the commander and nine men and taking the others as prisoners, all in 15 minutes. The event had huge international implications, and Great Britain and France began to pump forces into North America - The French and Indian War had begun. In a matter of minutes the name Washington became synonymous with three things - bravery, daring and recklessness.

Washington was rewarded for his quick thinking by being appointed commander in chief and colonel of the Virginia Regiment, the first full-time American military unit. With command of a thousand soldiers, Washington was tasked with defending Virginia's frontier, and he demonstrated his resolve and forthright approach as his unit engaged in 20 battles over 12 months. But his reckless attitude and inexperience was demonstrated when his unit exchanged friendly fire with another British force, killing 14 men.

> "He was no Alexander or Caesar, but an entirely different kind of hero altogether"

His time commanding an army had taught Washington many things - how to bring the best out of his men, the importance of stamina and bravery, as well as discipline and training. It had also given him valuable insight into the British military tactics, and his struggles in dealing with government officials convinced him that a national government was the only way forward. However, when Washington retired from service in 1758, as far as he was concerned his time on the battlefield was over.

In 1759 Washington married the intelligent and wealthy Martha Dandridge Custis and together with her two children they moved to the plantation of Mount Vernon. Enjoying the newly inherited wealth from his marriage, Washington was now one of Virginia's wealthiest men and he concentrated on expanding and making the most out of his plantation. Little did he know that revolution was bubbling, and soon he would find himself back on the battlefield in what would become the most famous war in American history.

Washington wasn't the most likely of revolutionary leaders; although he opposed the controversial Stamp Act of 1765, during the early stirrings of revolution he was actually opposed to the colonies declaring independence. It wasn't until the passing of the Townshend acts of 1767 that he took an active role in the resistance. In an act of rebellion he encouraged the people of Virginia to boycott English goods until the acts were repealed. However, when the Intolerable acts were passed in 1774, Washington decided that more forthright action needed to be taken.

Passionate and charismatic, Washington was an obvious choice to attend the First Continental Congress. Although the delegates appealed to the crown to revoke the intolerable acts, they didn't even make a dink in the steely British armour, and a Second Continental Congress was called the following year.

A lot had changed in a year, and Washington too had undergone something of a transformation. The battles at Lexington and Concord had shown the colonies that they were capable of taking on the might of the British, and when Washington arrived in Pennsylvania for the state meeting dressed head to toe in military gear, it sent a strong message: he was prepared for war. So was Congress. It formed the Continental Army on 14 June 1775 and it needed a leader. Reluctant and somewhat modest,

The march to revolution

Follow the path leading to the greatest war in American history

1754-1763

French and Indian War
The French and Indian War was part of a much longer conflict between Great Britain and France, known as the Seven Years War. The war was fought in the north of North America between the colonies of the two powers, ending with France losing its territory in North America. However, funding the war created a huge national debt in Britain and gave France a good reason to support American independence.

1765

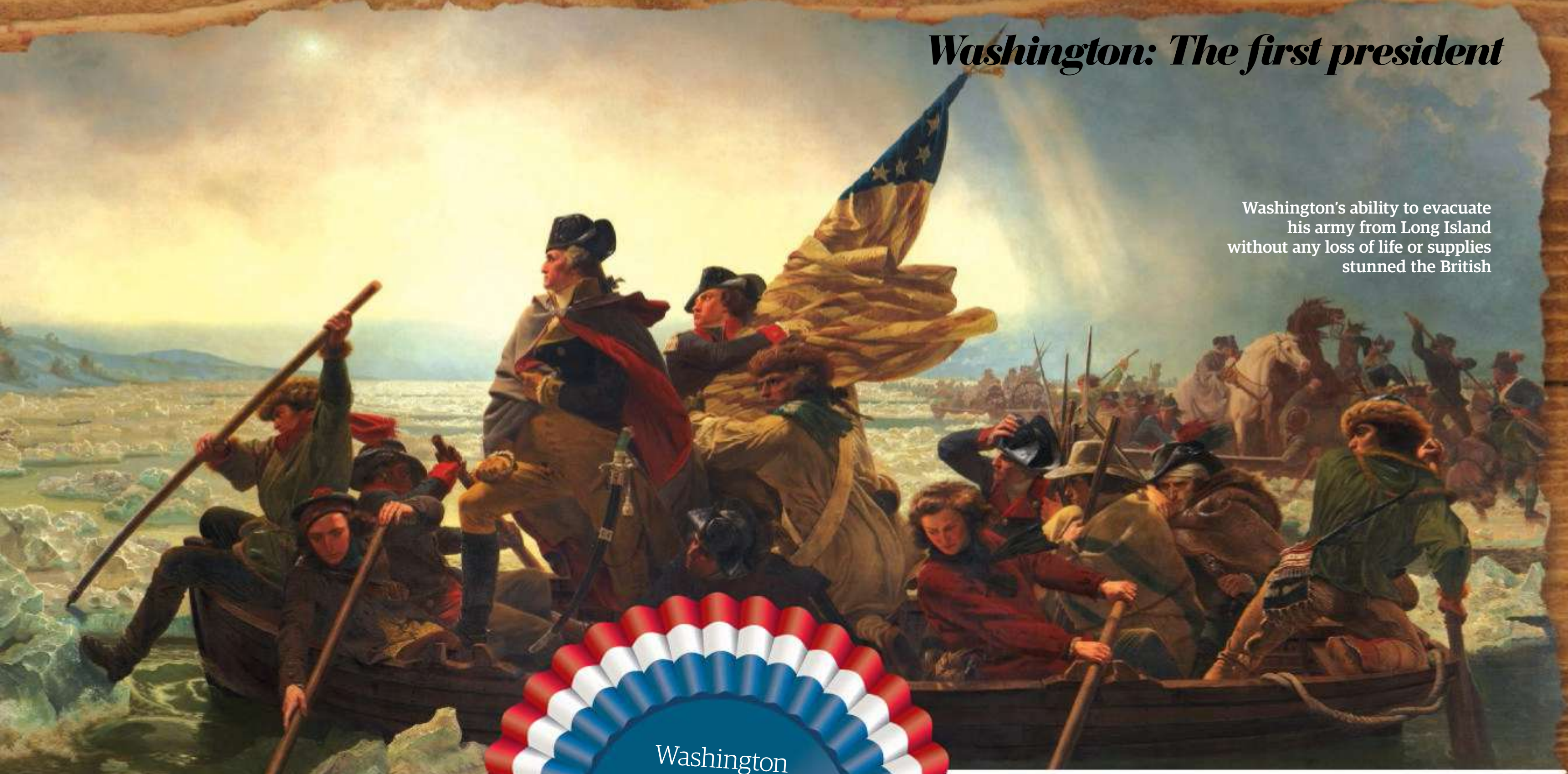
Stamp Act
The resulting national debt of the Seven Years War in Britain had reached £130 million by 1764. Britain also needed a way to pay for its army in North America and decided the colonies should subsidise it. The Stamp Act forced citizens to pay taxes on documents and paper goods and was immediately unpopular as it was carried out without any consent. The outrage soon turned violent and the tax was never collected.

1767-1770

Townshend Acts
The Townshend Acts were a series of acts passed by the British Parliament upon the colonies in North America. These acts placed duties on vital, high-volume imported items such as glass, paints, paper and tea, among other things. The money raised was intended to pay to keep governors and judges loyal, and also to set a general precedent that the British had the right to tax the American colonies.

1770

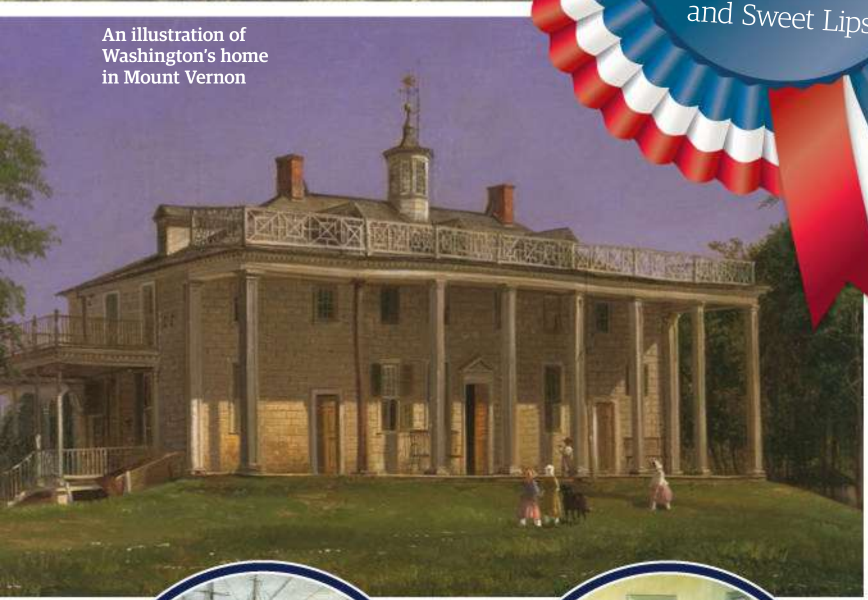
Boston Massacre
This incident occurred when a heckling crowd gathered around a British guard, who was quickly joined by eight more British soldiers. The soldiers fired at the crowd, killing three people and wounding multiple others. Two more later died of their wounds. The soldiers were arrested for manslaughter but were released without charge. This event helped to create an immensely anti-British sentiment in the colonies.



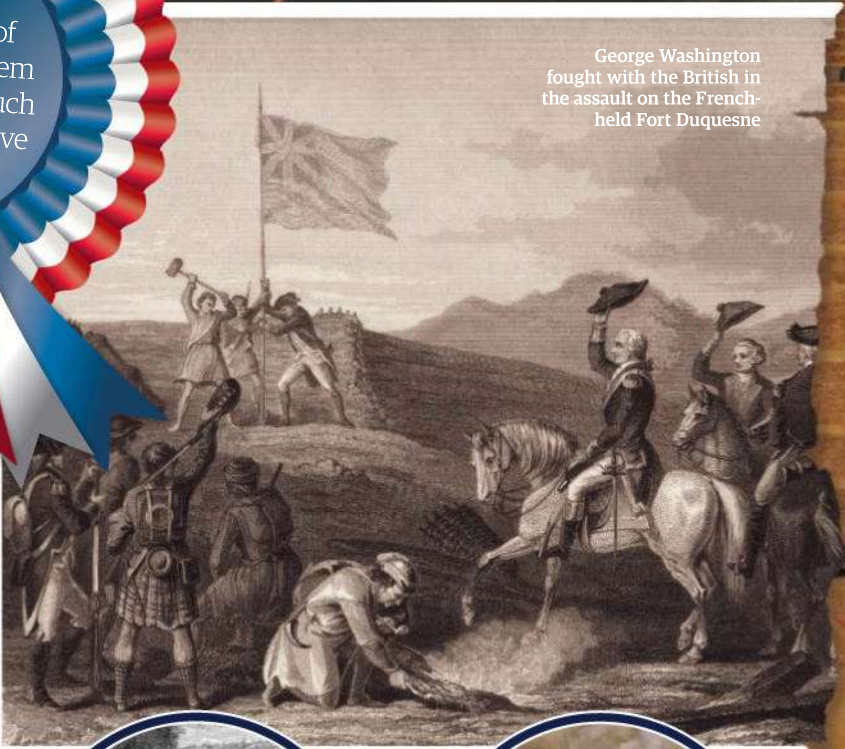
Washington's ability to evacuate his army from Long Island without any loss of life or supplies stunned the British

Washington was very fond of dogs and gave them unusual names such as Tarter, True Love and Sweet Lips

An illustration of Washington's home in Mount Vernon



George Washington fought with the British in the assault on the French-held Fort Duquesne



1773

Boston Tea Party

In an effort to force the colonies to accept the Townshend duty on Tea, Britain passed the Tea Act, allowing the East India Company to ship its tea to North America. In defiance, protestors boarded the ships and threw chests full of tea into Boston Harbour. Parliament responded harshly, by passing the Intolerable Acts, which took away the rights of the state of Massachusetts to govern itself.

1774

First Continental Congress

Delegates from 12 of the 13 British colonies in America met at Carpenters' Hall in Philadelphia to discuss ways to halt the Intolerable Acts. They made plans to refuse to import British goods until their grievances were met. When these efforts proved unsuccessful, a Second Continental Congress was held the next year to prepare the country for the impending American Revolutionary War.

1775

The Battles of Lexington and Concord

When American intelligence learned that British troops planned to march on Concord, they were quick to assemble their forces and take up arms against them. However only 77 militiamen faced 700 British at Lexington and were quickly defeated. The British continued to Concord to search for arms, but they were forced back by 500 militiamen, winning the colonies their first war victory.

1775

Battle of Bunker Hill

Set during the Siege of Boston, this battle saw the British mount an attack against the colonial troops stationed in Bunker Hill and Breed's Hill. Although the British were victorious, the heavy losses suffered by the redcoats led it to be a hollow victory, and it proved the Americans could hold their own against their foes in battle. Shortly after the conflict, King George III officially declared the colonies to be in a state of rebellion.

Washington did not see himself as a leader capable of leading such a vitally important force, but for those around him there was no other choice. With proven military experience, a devoted patriot and a strong, commanding presence, Washington was appointed commander in chief of the force that would take on the mightiest nation on Earth.

It did not take long for the new commander to prove his worth. In early-March 1776, Washington turned the Siege of Boston around by placing artillery on Dorchester Heights, low hills with a good view of Boston and its harbour. The perfectly placed, powerful cannons forced the British to retreat from the city, and the American commander moved his army into New York City. Even the critical British papers couldn't deny the skills of the captivating and exciting new leader who seemed capable of repelling their great empire with ease.

Victory and gossip aside, in truth Washington was out of his depth. He had commanded men before, but only a force of a thousand soldiers - far from the tens of thousands at his disposal now. He had only fought in frontier warfare, far removed from the open-field battles he now faced. He had never commanded legions of cavalry or artillery - he was constantly learning on the job. Washington had to rely on his own intelligence and courage to have any hope of snatching victory from his seasoned, experienced rivals.

This inexperience manifested itself in the crippling defeat the commander suffered during the Battle of Long Island. In an effort to seize New York, the British general William Howe unleashed a devastating campaign that Washington failed to subdue. So great was the British attack that Washington was forced to retreat his entire army across the East River under cover of darkness. Although this feat itself was remarkable, for the self-critical leader it was a swift and brutal reminder of his own inadequacies as a general, and he quickly realised this war would not be easily won.

But the British had a crippling weakness, too. They were simply too sure they were going to win. Howe so fatally underestimated the will of the American troops and their reckless leader that he left his Hessian soldiers at Trenton, confident the war would be won in the next few months. Washington, on the other hand, was acutely aware of the morale of his soldiers. After the defeat in New York and the humiliating retreat, they needed something positive to inspire them, and Trenton was right there for the taking.

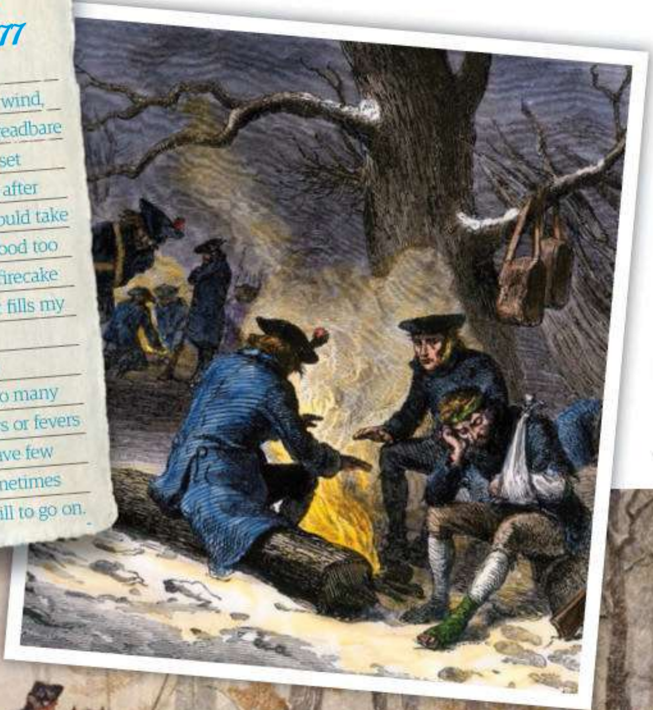
The plan was one only Washington could have thought up - bold, gutsy and downright dangerous, he led his soldiers across the perilous and icy Delaware River on a freezing Boxing Day in 1776. Only 2,400 of his men were able to make it across without turning back, but it was enough. Completely unprepared for the attack, the Hessians

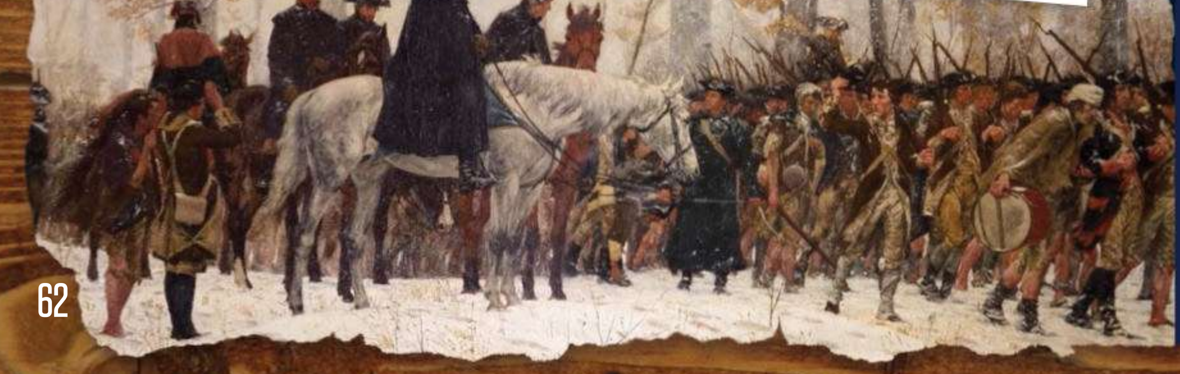
Valley Forge

Pennsylvania, 28 January 1777

The cold today was worse than it has ever been. The crowded wooden huts provide shelter from the biting wind, but the cold passes between the slats, through my threadbare shirt and nestles in my bones. My quest to procure a set of shoes continues to be unsuccessful. I thought that after marching through the snow in bare feet someone would take pity on me - but there are no supplies coming. The food too is running low. For the past week I have only eaten firecake - a sticky, bland abomination of water and flour that fills my stomach but leaves the soul ravenous.

I shouldn't complain - I am one of the lucky few untouched by the diseases that ravage the camp. So many men have been plagued by itchy rashes and blisters or fevers that refuse to calm. The only relief here are the brave few women who wash and mend our uniforms, or sometimes simply provide a shoulder to men who have no will to go on.





Rebels

Organisation

There were 35,000 continentals in the United States with 44,500 militia. Their French allies increased their numbers with 12,000 French soldiers in America and 63,000 at Gibraltar. They also had 53 ships in service throughout the war. George Washington was commander in chief and Nathanael Greene served as major general.

Weapons

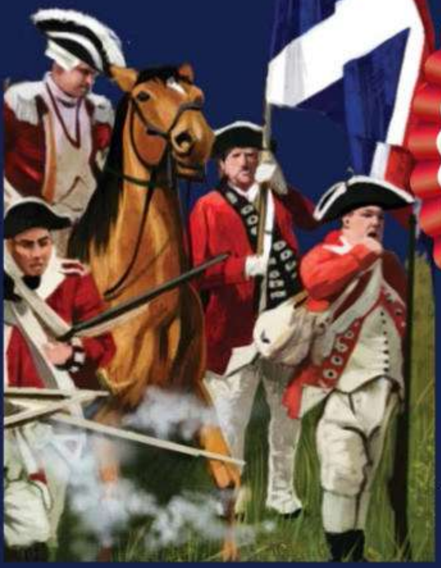
When the war began the colonies did not have a professional standing army of any kind, with many colonies only able to supply minutemen who were required to equip themselves - with most carrying rifles. The army's weapon of choice was the flintlock musket and they also carried bayonets.

Resources

The Continental Army suffered from massive supply issues. Supplies were repeatedly seized by British patrols. They also had to combat a primitive road system, which resulted in regular shortages of food, clothing, ammunition, tents and a host of essential military equipment, constantly pitching the odds against them.

Morale

The rebels' greatest weapon was the belief in their grand cause - fighting for their liberty from the oppressive British Crown. It was this strong morale belief in their cause that encouraged American leaders, who knew they were facing a well equipped and disciplined foe, to push on despite multiple crippling defeats.



Redcoats

Organisation

There were 56,000 British redcoats in North America along with a combined force of 52,000 loyalists, freed slaves and natives. They also had 78 Royal Navy ships at their service. William Howe served as commander in chief, but there were many decorated generals and officers such as Thomas Gage and Henry Clinton.

Weapons

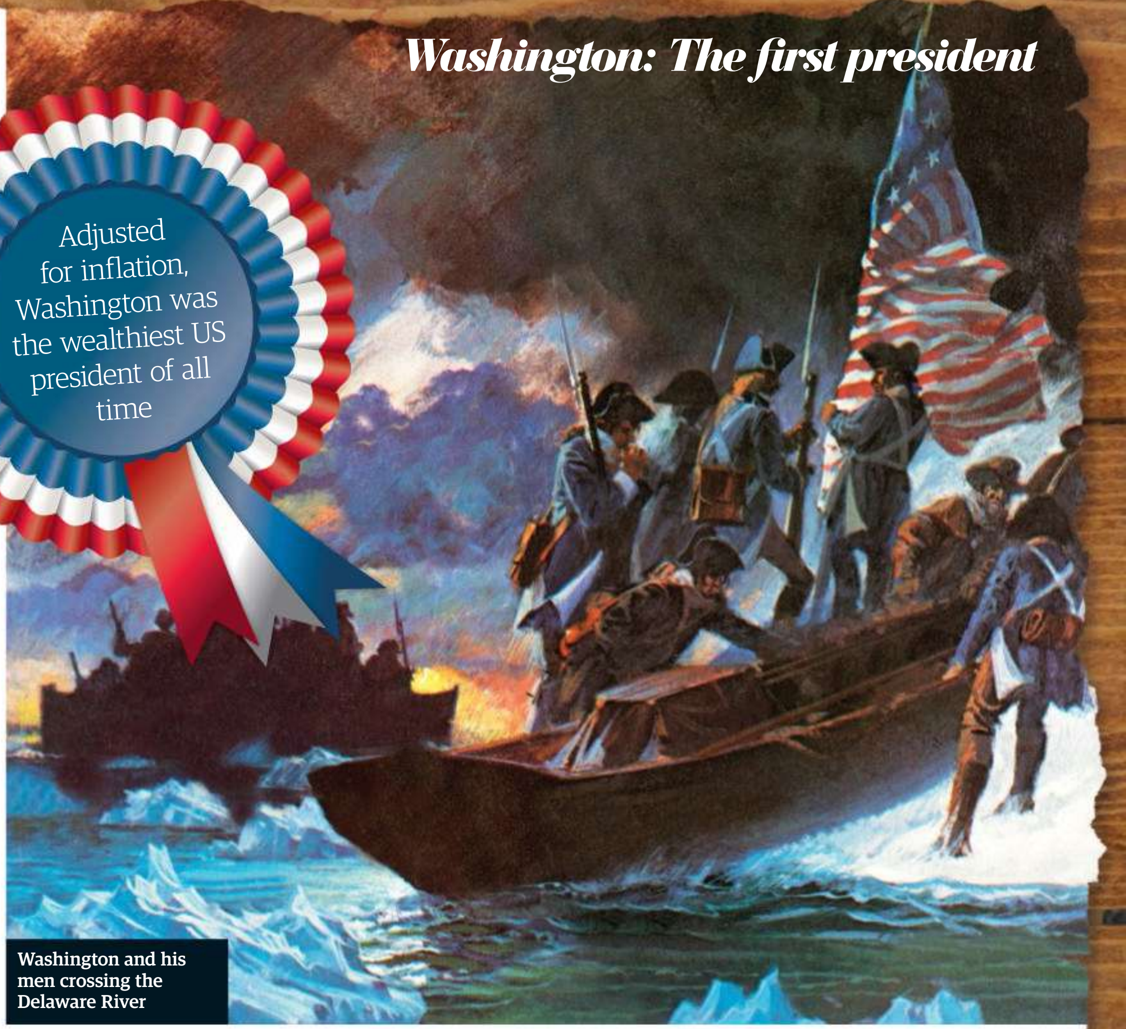
The British army depended on the .75-calibre flintlock musket popularly known as "Brown Bess." They also carried bayonets and, occasionally, short-barrel muskets. The redcoats also used cannons to great effect, to the degree that if an American unit was without cannon, they would not face a cannon-supported British troop.

Resources

Although British soldiers were better equipped than their American counterparts, they were fighting away from home, and supplies could take months to reach their destinations. Many British had to rely on loyal locals supplying them with food and praying the vital supplies would survive the 4,800km (3,000mi) trip across the ocean.

Morale

The British believed they could easily steamroll the rebels and this underestimation of their foe cost them dearly. The war was also expensive, and support at home was mixed at best. For many soldiers struggling in terrible conditions away from home, there was little motivation to fight.



Adjusted for inflation, Washington was the wealthiest US president of all time

Washington and his men crossing the Delaware River

at Trenton were overwhelmed and swiftly defeated by Washington and his men. A few days later the commander led a counter-attack on a British force sent to attack his army at Princeton, achieving another small - but essential - American victory.

Meanwhile, the British redcoats still believed the rebellion could be stopped like a cork in a bottle. Howe thought that by taking control of key colonial cities, the river of rebellion would turn into a drought and the population would surrender to British rule. When Howe set his sights on the revolutionary hub of Philadelphia, Washington rode out to meet him, but, perhaps with his previous victories clouding his judgement, the commander was outmatched and Philadelphia fell to the British. However, the colonists' cause received a major boon when British General Burgoyne was forced to surrender his entire army of 6,300 men at the Battle of Saratoga. It seemed that major world players were finally beginning to believe the Americans had a chance of besting the mighty British Empire, and France openly allied itself with the rebels.

While General Howe concentrated on capturing key cities, Washington had a revelation. Although individual battles were important, the key to victory was not military success, but instead his ability to keep the heart of the resistance alive and pumping. This was something out of British hands and solely in his own.

> "When Washington retired from service in 1758, as far as he was concerned, his time on the battlefield was over"

This spirit of rebellion faced its most challenging obstacle yet over the long winter of 1977. For six long months the soldiers at the military camp of Valley Forge suffered thousands of disease-ridden deaths. With starvation rife and supplies low, many feared the horrendous conditions would force the desperate army to mutiny. Washington himself faced immense criticism from the American public and Congress, who urged him to hurry the war effort, while behind the scenes anti-Washington movements gained ground. Washington simply replied: "Whenever the public gets dissatisfied with my service [...] I shall quit the helm [...] and retire to a private life." The critics soon fell silent.

Although the conditions had been testing, to put it mildly, the soldiers emerged from the winter in good spirits. Washington demonstrated

that his sting was stronger than ever when his forces attacked the British flank attempting to leave Monmouth Courthouse. Although the battle ultimately ended in a stalemate, Washington had finally achieved what he set out to do since the beginning of the war – hold his own in a pitched battle. This was massive for the Americans; it proved the growing Continental Army was developing its skills at an alarming speed, and if the horrendous winter they had emerged from had not crushed them, what chance did the British have? The French seemed to share this attitude. On 5 September 1781, 24 French ships emerged victorious against 19 British vessels at the Battle of Chesapeake. The success prevented the British from reinforcing the troops of Lord Cornwallis, who was blockaded in Yorktown, Virginia, and allowed crucial French troops to pour into the Continental Army, bringing vast supplies of artillery with them. This was exactly the opportunity Washington needed, and he didn't plan to let it go to waste.

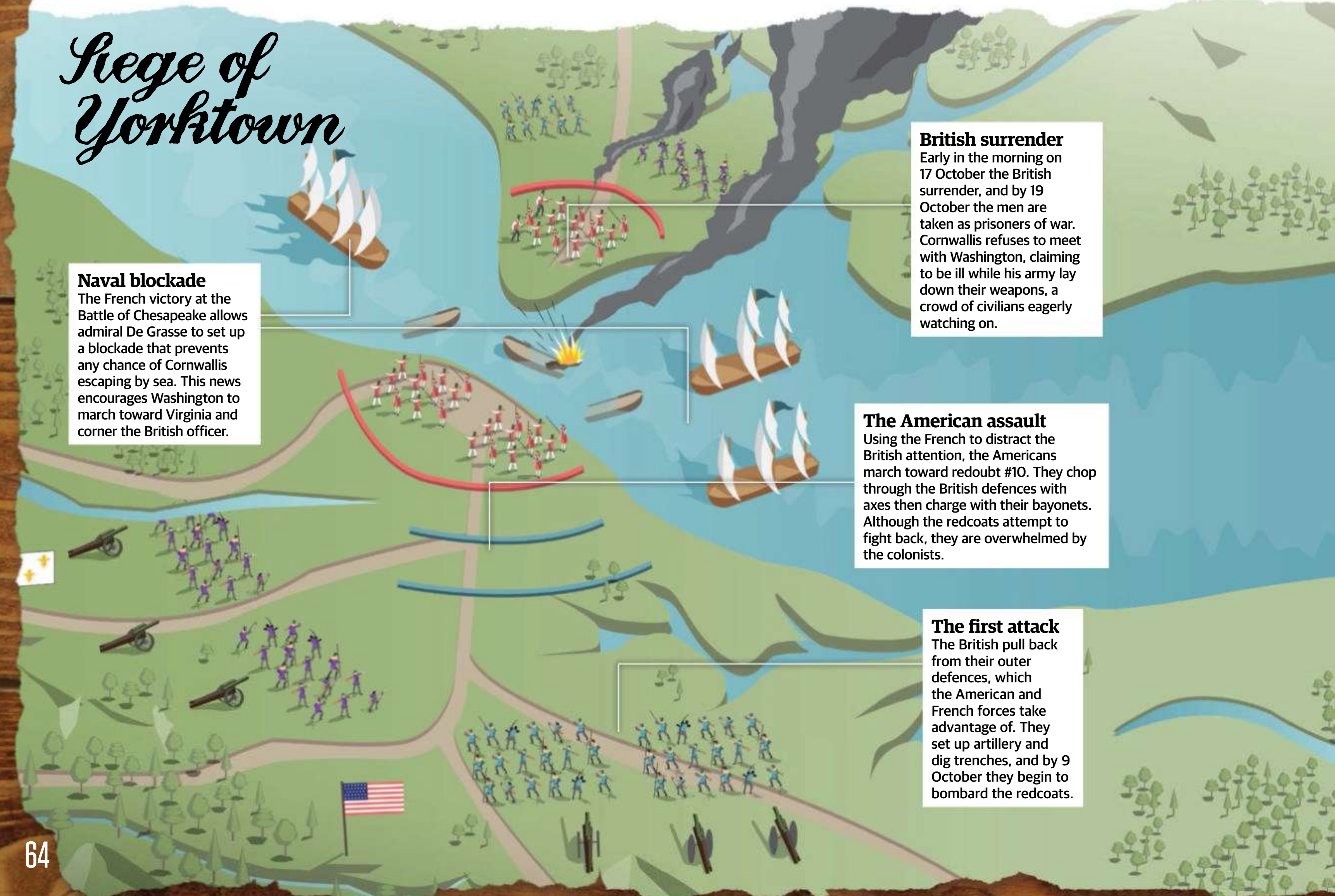
With the British army trapped and exposed, and his own swelling in size, Washington led his men out of Williamsburg and surrounded Yorktown. From late-September the Continental Army moved steadily closer to the redcoats, forcing them to pull back from their outer defences, which left them open for the Americans and French to use. As the colonists began to set up artilleries, the British pelted them with steady fire. In spite of this and at some great risk to himself, Washington continued to visit and motivate his men on the front line, and by 5 October the commander was ready to make his move.

As a vicious storm raged, Washington grasped his pickaxe in his hand and struck several blows into the dirt that would become the new trench the Americans would use to bombard the British. By 5pm on 9 October, the Americans were pelting the British with a relentless stream of cannon fire. The British ships were sunk and soldiers deserted en masse. More American trenches were dug as they gained land, and when Washington's men rushed toward the British redoubt, they overwhelmed the surprised redcoats. As Washington rained artillery fire down on the town, Cornwallis's attempts at escape across the York River were unsuccessful and he finally surrendered.

Little did Washington know that the victory he had secured at Yorktown would lead to the ultimate surrender of British hostilities, the end of the war and ultimately American freedom. On 3 September 1783 the Treaty of Paris was signed between representatives of both countries, which proclaimed that Britain recognised the independence of the United States. With victory declared, Washington

The Capitol in Washington, DC, under construction

Siege of Yorktown

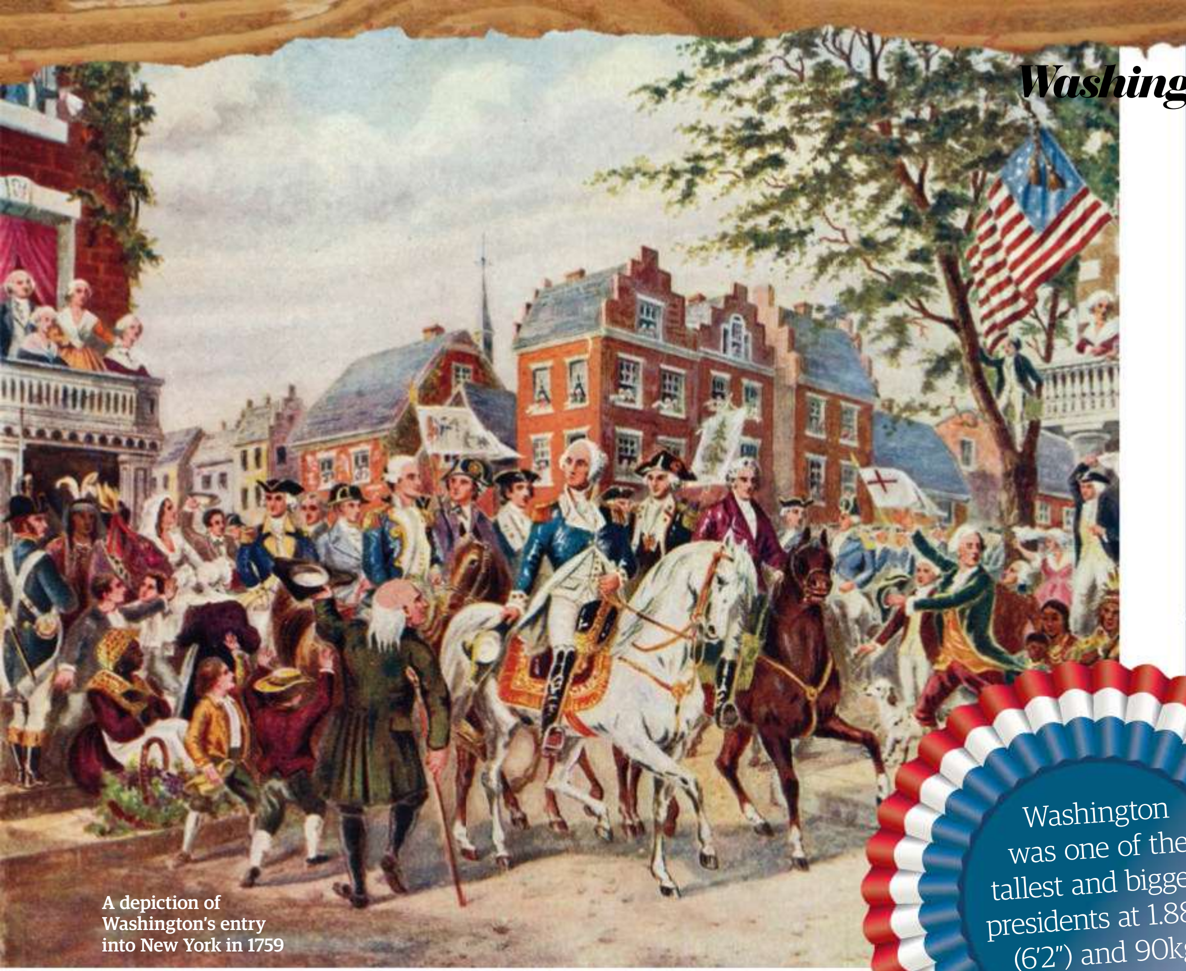


British surrender
Early in the morning on 17 October the British surrender, and by 19 October the men are taken as prisoners of war. Cornwallis refuses to meet with Washington, claiming to be ill while his army lay down their weapons, a crowd of civilians eagerly watching on.

Naval blockade
The French victory at the Battle of Chesapeake allows admiral De Grasse to set up a blockade that prevents any chance of Cornwallis escaping by sea. This news encourages Washington to march toward Virginia and corner the British officer.

The American assault
Using the French to distract the British attention, the Americans march toward redoubt #10. They chop through the British defences with axes then charge with their bayonets. Although the redcoats attempt to fight back, they are overwhelmed by the colonists.

The first attack
The British pull back from their outer defences, which the American and French forces take advantage of. They set up artillery and dig trenches, and by 9 October they begin to bombard the redcoats.



A depiction of Washington's entry into New York in 1759

Washington was one of the tallest and biggest presidents at 1.88m (6'2") and 90kg (200lb)

Washington has been immortalised on Mount Rushmore along with Thomas Jefferson, Theodore Roosevelt and Abraham Lincoln

disbanded his army and wished farewell to the men who had valued him not only as a leader, but also a fellow soldier. On 23 December 1783, in an action that would define him in the history books, Washington resigned as commander in chief of the army and humbly returned to his home in Mount Vernon.

However, without him his country was struggling. With nobody to unite them the states fought and squabbled among themselves over boundaries and inflicted harsh taxes on their own citizens. The ex-commander watched from afar as the land he had led to freedom struggled to support itself. He was dismayed, but hesitant to act. It wasn't until an armed uprising known as Shays' Rebellion took place in Massachusetts that Washington was finally persuaded to step into the limelight once more.

Washington quietly attended the Constitution Convention held in Philadelphia in 1787. There he sat and listened silently to the proceedings, speaking only once. However, his prestige spoke volumes and those gathered there agreed the national government needed more authority – it needed a figure strong and commanding enough to maintain control. Washington was unanimously chosen to fulfil this role. He became president of the convention in 1787, and by 1789 he was unanimously elected once more, but this time as the first-ever president of the United States – the only one in history to receive 100 per cent of the votes. He would serve two terms as president from 1789 to 1797 until he would yet again relinquish the power he could so easily have exploited. In the spring of 1797, he finally returned to his precious Mount Vernon, realising, perhaps more so than any one of the many people who supported him, that ultimate power in the land of the free could not lay solely in one man's hands indefinitely.

> "Washington did not see himself as a leader capable of leading such a vitally important force"

Washington myths cut down

We get an expert opinion on the myths surrounding this legendary man

Stephen Brumwell is a freelance writer and independent historian living in Amsterdam. His book, *George Washington: Gentleman Warrior*, won the 2013 George Washington Book Prize.

He had wooden teeth

George Washington was plagued with dental problems from his twenties, and by 1789, had just one of his own teeth remaining. He owned several sets of false teeth, but none was crafted from wood. Instead, Washington's dentures incorporated a variety of materials – bone, 'sea-horse', or hippopotamus ivory, and human teeth – fixed by lead, gold and metal wire. The belief that Washington's false teeth were wooden probably originated in the brown-stained appearance of surviving examples – apparently owing to his fondness for port wine.

He cut down a cherry tree and confessed to his father

Perhaps the best known of all the legends spun around Washington, the 'cherry tree story' first surfaced in a biography written after his death by Mason Locke Weems. Concerned with portraying Washington as an exemplary role model for his countrymen, 'Parson Weems' concocted the fable of the six-year-old hatcheting his father's prized cherry tree, and then deflecting parental wrath by frankly confessing to the deed with the words "I can't tell a lie, Pa."

Washington was a moonshiner

While there's no proof that Washington set up illicit liquor stills to make moonshine, he was certainly in the forefront of American whiskey production. On the advice of his Scottish farm manager, James Anderson, he established a whiskey distillery at Mount Vernon in 1797. By the year of Washington's death, 1799, this was producing almost 41,640l (11,000gal) of rye and corn whiskey, making it the largest US distillery of its day.

He threw a silver dollar across the Potomac River

Standing 188cm (6'2") tall, and with a well-muscled physique, young George Washington was renowned for his strength. Yet even Washington in his prime would have struggled to hurl a silver dollar across the Potomac River, which is more than 1.6km (1mi) wide opposite his Virginian home at Mount Vernon. Also, silver dollars were only introduced in 1794, when Washington was already in his sixties.

He wore a wig

Although wigs were fashionable during Washington's lifetime, he never wore one, preferring to keep his own hair, which was reddish-brown, long and tied back in a tight queue, or 'pigtail'. However, Washington regularly used the white hair powder that was customary among men of his wealthy social class, especially for formal occasions, and this gave the impression of a wig, apparent in many of his portraits.

What if…

Abraham Lincoln hadn't been assassinated?

UNITED STATES, 1865

PROFESSOR STEPHEN L CARTER

Stephen L Carter is a professor of law, a newspaper columnist and a best-selling novelist. He currently teaches law at Stanford University's Yale School of Law. His fifth novel, *The Impeachment Of Abraham Lincoln*, follows an alternative reality where the iconic political figure must defend his seat of office and his legacy against a seemingly inescapable political trap.

What if Abraham Lincoln hadn't been assassinated?
It's a question that many historians - and many writers - have pondered over since that fateful day in 1866. In short, had Lincoln survived his assassination (or if someone else had been shot in his place, such as the original intended target, Andrew Johnson) history would have certainly deviated. However, Lincoln's actions before and during the Civil War would have ultimately sealed his position as one of the most tenacious yet pragmatic politicians to have ever held office in the United States.

Had Lincoln lived, would there have been further attempts on his life?
From the records we have, it appears that most of the former leaders of the Confederacy, including many of the members of the planter aristocracy, were appalled at Lincoln's assassination. This was not, as some Southern apologists used to argue, because of some sense of honour, still less from a moral squeamishness. The leaders saw Lincoln, who had so crushed them, as their best hope of holding off radical demands for further punishment of the South.

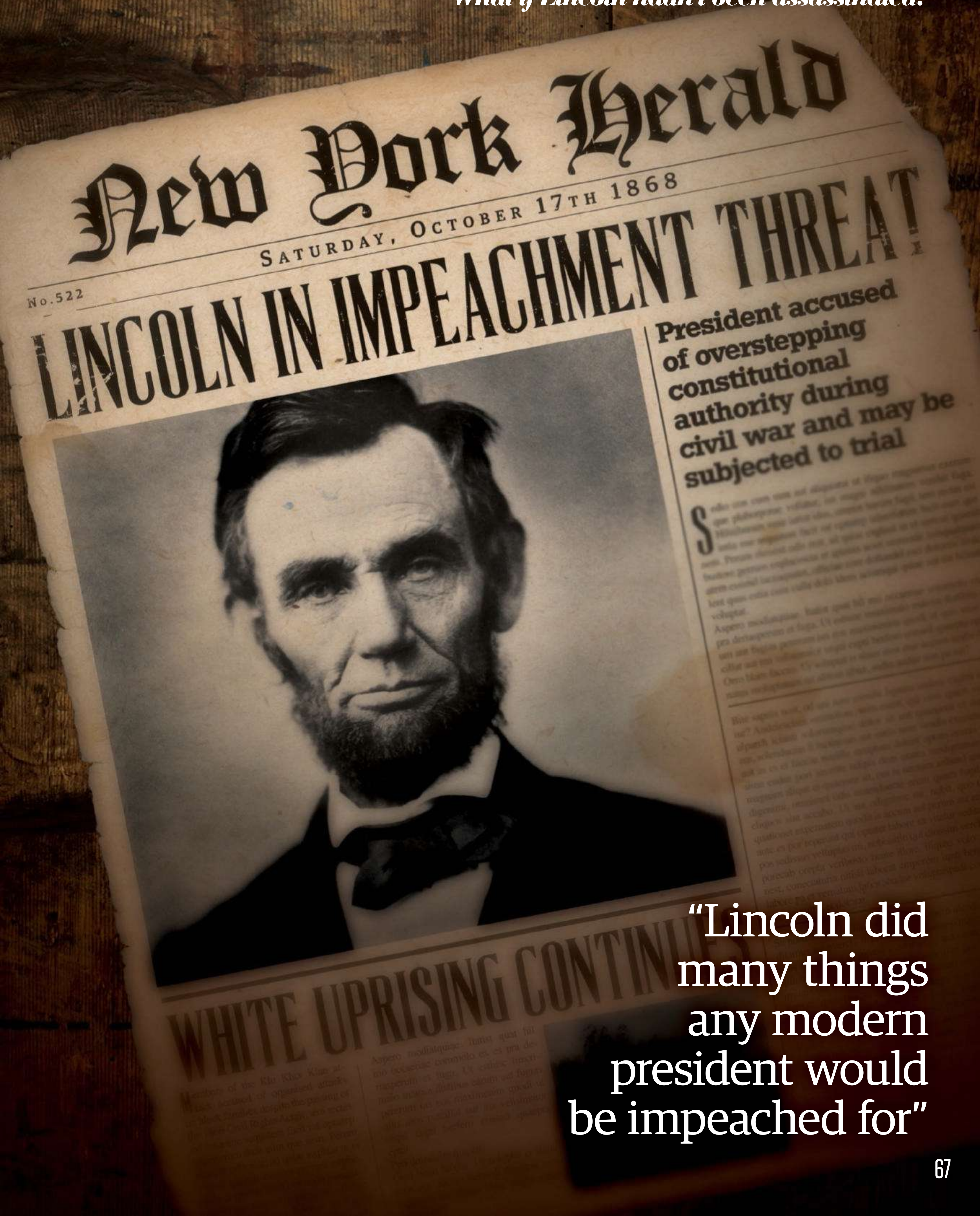
Incidentally, some of Lincoln's rivals did worry that he might seek a third term in office, contrary to what was then still the unbroken practice of US presidents. There were even rumours that he planned to serve as president for life. How these fears would have played out had he lived - or even whether he would have run again in 1868 - there is no way to know [whether that would have happened].

What were Lincoln's reconstruction plans for the country after the Civil War had ended?
Carter: Lincoln was somewhat cagey on his precise plan for reconstruction. He began publicly discussing how to reconstruct the South in 1863 and 1864, while the war was still going on. Many historians therefore take the view that Lincoln's plan should be taken with a grain of salt: he was quite likely dangling it as a carrot, to induce some or all of the states in rebellion to surrender. We don't know for sure what he would have done later.

This plan had three essential elements. The best known is probably the "ten per cent" rule, holding that a state in rebellion could be readmitted once ten per cent of its eligible voters foreswore the Confederacy and pledged allegiance to the Union. At that point, the state would be allowed to form a new government, create a constitution and send representatives to Congress. Second, Lincoln promised to pardon all those who took part in the rebellion, apart from the high-ranking leaders. Third, he promised to protect private property other than slaves.

This last point was particularly clever. It's often forgotten that slaves were owned mainly by the planter aristocracy. The poor and working-class men who fought for the Confederacy were very unlikely to come from slaveholding families. Throughout the South, resentment of the slave-holding class was considerable. This resentment helped the northwestern corner of Virginia to secede from the state during the war (laying the foundation for the state of West Virginia), and might easily have led to secession (and return to the Union) of the western hills of North Carolina, where poor farms were plentiful and slaves were few.

Would Lincoln have been willing to compromise?
Lincoln was a wily politician - one of the best at the art of horse-trading. Had he lived, he likely would have reached a compromise with the radicals. He preferred, as he liked to say, an oath in which a man would pledge to do no wrong hereafter (as opposed to an oath insisting he had never done wrong), but he also made it clear that he could live with the



New York Herald

Saturday, October 17th 1868

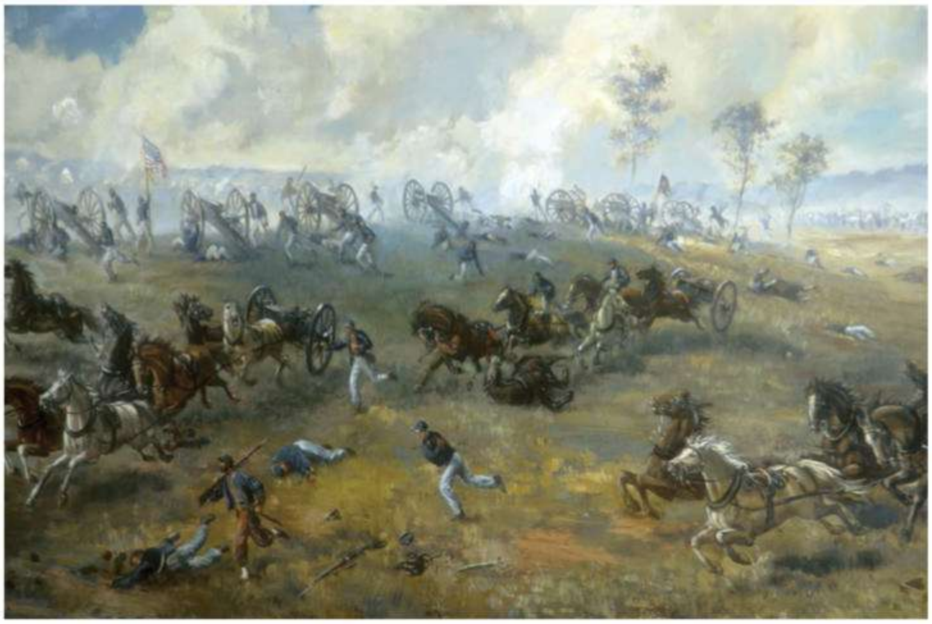
No.522

LINCOLN IN IMPEACHMENT THREAT!

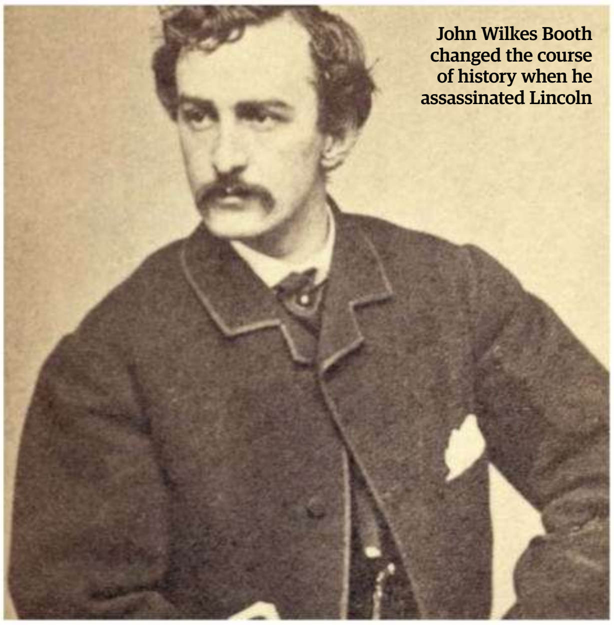
President accused of overstepping constitutional authority during civil war and may be subjected to trial

WHITE UPRISING CONTINUES

"Lincoln did many things any modern president would be impeached for"



The Civil War was fierce and bloody – as this painting of the Battle of Manassas depicts



John Wilkes Booth changed the course of history when he assassinated Lincoln

stronger oath that Johnson preferred. The parties would surely have settled on some percentage between – perhaps 25 – of the eligible voters.

What's harder to predict is what Lincoln would have done about the freedmen. He wound up in a position of largely supporting black suffrage – not at all where he had begun – but he insisted that it not be made a condition of readmission to the Union. It isn't clear what sort of civil-rights legislation he would have supported. However, even had he supported the bills that Congress adopted after his assassination, the chances are that the Supreme Court would have held them unconstitutional anyway, which is what happened.

> "During the war years [...] he became content with the idea that the freed slaves would stay in the US"

Andrew Johnson was eventually impeached by Congress – had he lived, would Lincoln have faced a similar fate?

Here I want to be crystal clear. Although I have written a novel imagining a world in which Lincoln lived and was impeached, I do not think it likely that he would have been impeached. He was, as you suggest, too savvy. I am not sure that, as in my novel, he would have used various intrigues to battle his opponents. But I think he would have found compromise on the big issues.

Moreover, I doubt his opponents would seriously have tried. Lincoln enjoyed enormous prestige in the Union, without regard to the disdain in which he was held by the leadership of his own party. Breaking down that public support would have been an enormous task, and one that I suspect the leaders of the radicals would have hesitated to undertake.

How would the journey toward civil rights for all US citizens been different under Lincoln's direction?

How would it be different?

Real timeline

1861

Lincoln is inaugurated
Mere weeks before the main slave states would secede from the United States, Republican Party leader Abraham Lincoln is inaugurated as the 16th US president. He's also the first Republican to hold the highest seat of office.
4 March 1861

Civil War breaks out
South Carolina, Mississippi, Florida, Alabama, Georgia, Louisiana and Texas, secede from the United States, forming the Confederate States of America and plunging the country into war. **12 April 1861**

Emancipation Proclamation is issued
As part of his crusade to abolish slavery in the United States, Lincoln issues a presidential proclamation that deems all the slaves in the ten rebellion states of the Confederacy to be free.
1 January 1863

Lincoln is assassinated
Just six days after the Confederate States surrender to the Union, Lincoln attends Ford's Theatre with his wife Mary Todd Lincoln, diplomat Henry Rathbone and Rathbone's fiancé Clara Harris. John Wilkes Booth, a Confederate sympathiser, and his conspirators decide to kill Lincoln. After barging into Lincoln's box at the theatre Booth shoots Lincoln in the head at point-blank range.
11 April 1865

Real timeline

Johnson becomes president
Lincoln's vice president, Andrew Johnson, is named the 17th president of the United States. A Democrat who ran with Lincoln on the Union Ticket, Johnson begins his presidency with plans to quickly reintegrate the seceded states. **15 April 1865**

Alternate timeline

An assassin thwarted
Confederate sympathiser John Wilkes Booth enters Ford's Theatre in Washington, DC, with the desire to kill president Lincoln, the symbol of the South's undoing. However, the plot is discovered and Booth is wounded.
11 April 1865

This is a question over which many historians have puzzled. Lincoln himself evolved during the course of the war. Originally he was against slavery, but thought the freed slaves should be returned to Africa. Originally he took the view that perhaps some of the more intelligent black men should be allowed to vote, but that was all. Lincoln also took the view that the white man and the black man, whatever their legal rights, could never be truly equal. He was a product of the frontier in which he grew up, and his views for that time and place, were actually somewhat progressive.

During the war years, his views began to change. He became content with the idea that the freed slaves would stay in the United States. He seemed to embrace the cause of what was known as "universal Negro suffrage." As I mentioned above, I don't want to claim that had Lincoln lived, the great sweep of history would have been different. That attaches too much importance to a single individual. But would there have perhaps been more progress, more swiftly, at least in a few areas? I would like to think so.

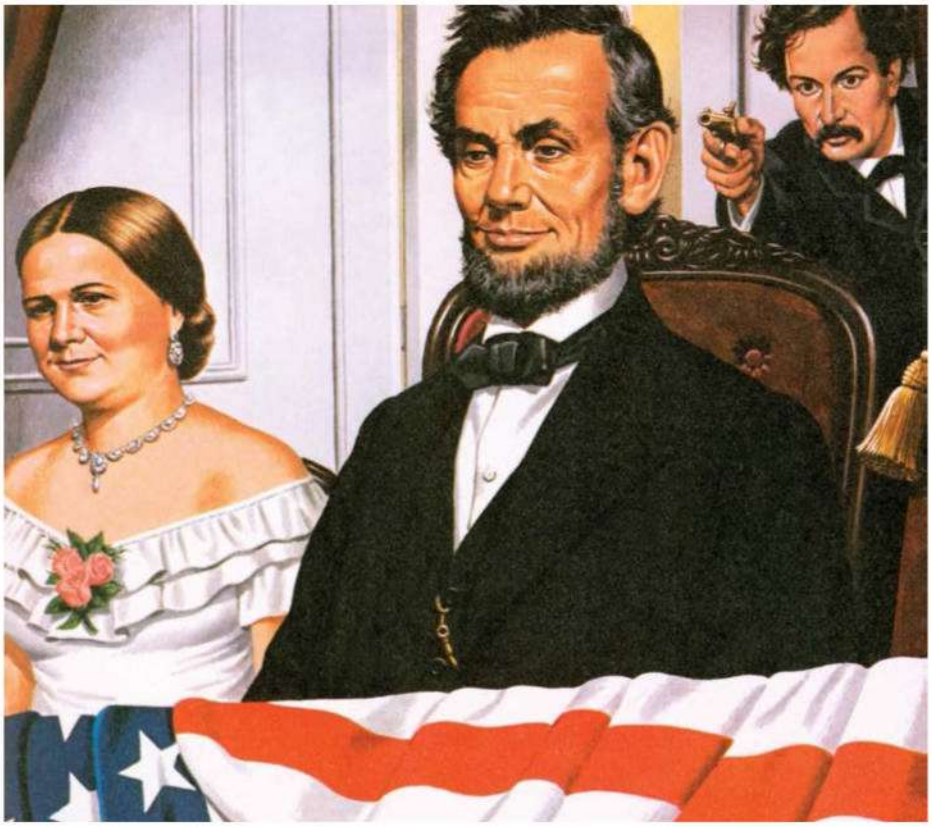
What would the repercussions of such an impeachment have been for Lincoln? How would it have affected his political career and ultimately his place in history?

Those who are martyred often fare better in history than those who are not. In Lincoln's day, it was common for members of the educated classes to claim that every president since Andrew Johnson (whom the elite didn't like anyway) had been mediocre. Lincoln plainly wasn't mediocre; the Civil War, the Emancipation Proclamation, and the 13th Amendment proved that.

I think his place in history would, or should, in any case have been secure. But it is the assassination, I think, that raised him to an exalted status that leaves him difficult to criticise. Would I still consider him, as I do, the greatest of the US presidents? I would like to think the answer is yes. But of course I have no sure way to tell.

Lincoln had to make some rather unpopular, perhaps even brutal, decisions to help facilitate the end of the Civil War. What would the repercussions have been for him following the end of the war?

In prosecuting the war, Lincoln suspended the right of habeas corpus. He ignored court orders to release prisoners. He allowed his secretary of state and his military to imprison journalists. He had his secret service read every telegram sent in the United States. He used force to prevent the Maryland legislature from meeting to vote on secession. The list goes on. Lincoln did many things any modern president would be impeached for. But it's important to remember that the office itself was young in his day, and his understanding of his own powers arose at a time when the government was weak, and the need for action was strong. I'm not justifying the things he did; I'm just trying to place them in context.



Lincoln wasn't Booth's original target – he originally intended to assassinate Ulysses E Grant and Andrew Johnson

© Look&Learn

Reconstruction begins
A plan detailed by Lincoln before his death, 'Reconstruction' is designed to reunify the states and heal a country ravaged by war. Under Johnson, the process is accelerated. **1865-1877**

Alaska is purchased
Alongside secretary of state William Seward, Andrew Johnson oversees the purchase of Alaska from Russia for $7.2 million. The newly acquired territory is renamed the District of Alaska. **30 March 1867**

Secretary of war suspended
Johnson, increasingly unpopular with Congress, comes to blows with secretary of war Edwin Stanton. Johnson demands his resignation, Stanton refuses and Johnson suspends him. **5 August 1857**

A public trial
Booth is publicly tried for his crime. The court, made up mostly of Northerners, finds him guilty by unanimous vote. He's sentenced to hang. Lincoln, keen to strengthen the fragile relationship with the South, pardons him. **9 June 1865**

Civil Rights Act is enacted
Despite Johnson's attempt to veto it, Congress passes the first federal law that defines that all US citizens are equal in the eyes of the law, including former slaves and members of the defeated Confederacy. **9 April 1866**

Lincoln is impeached
A radical movement manages to organise an impeachment of the president based on the Reconstruction's lack of substance and his unwillingness to punish the rebel states. Lincoln is savvy enough to use the event to his advantage. **1868**

Congress impeaches Johnson
Johnson informs Congress of Stanton's suspension. Congress reinstates Stanton, who is then suspended again by Johnson. Congress impeaches Johnson for being in breach of the Tenure of Office Act. **24 February 1868**

Civil Rights Act passed
Lincoln appeases the radical movement within the Republican Party by pushing through the 14th Amendment, ensuring the rights of every US citizen. **15 January 1866**

Reconstruction starts
Congress pushes hard for a tangible start to Reconstruction, but Lincoln is unwilling to accelerate it, much to VP Johnson's chagrin. However, in late-1867, Lincoln commences the process. **September 1867**

The white uprising
The newly formed Ku Klux Klan attacks African-American families and agents of the Freedman Bureau. With the help of war hero Ulysses S Grant, Lincoln sees the Klan dismantled. **August 1868**

A country reunited
A shaken yet resolute Lincoln concedes that Reconstruction needs a swifter resolution. Eventually, the rebel states are reintegrated into the Union with enough sanctions to appease the North. **1870**

Lincoln passes away
Having seen Reconstruction through to its end, Lincoln passes away a year after his beloved wife Mary. The country mourns the loss of their former president. **November 1882**

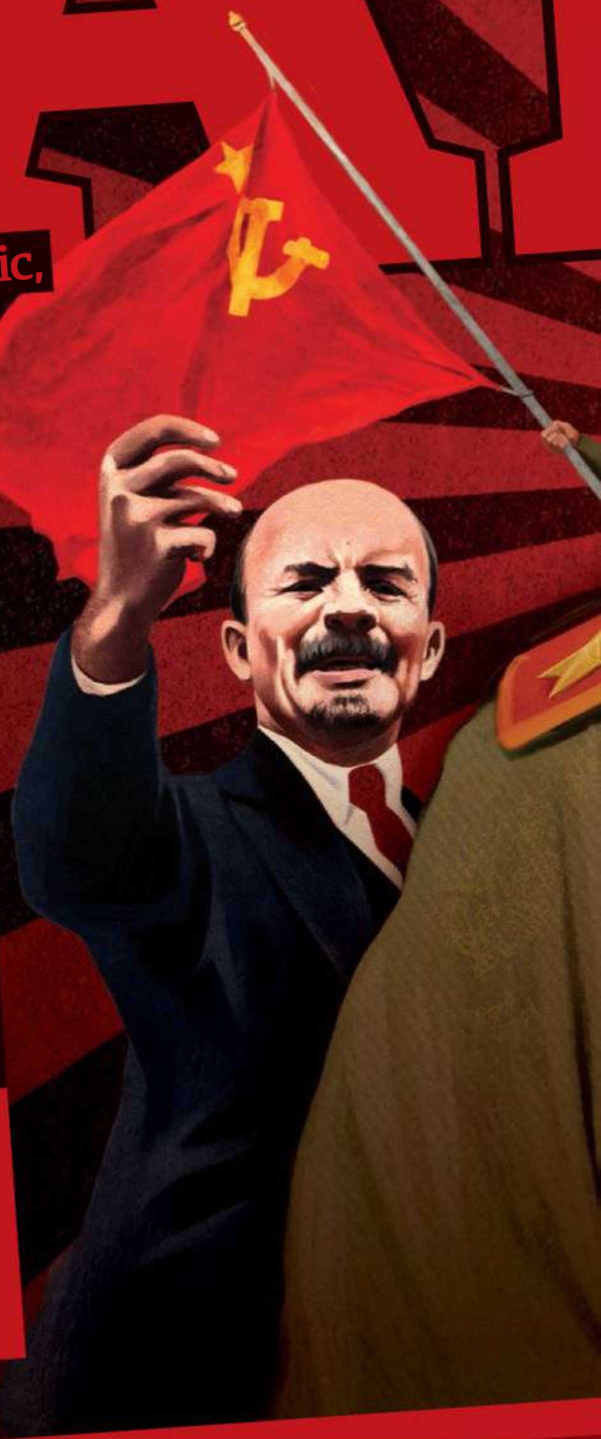
RUSSIA'S ULTIMATE T

STA

Despised by many but idolised by his adoring public, Stalin dyed the Soviet Union red with one of the most brutal and bloody regimes in history

Born the son of a poor cobbler in an illiterate family, Ioseb Besarionis Dze Jugashvili seemed an unlikely person to one day become the dictator of the juggernaut that was the Soviet Union. Young Ioseb had been born at a time of massive change. In his lifetime, the Tsars, which had ruled Russia for countless generations, would be thrown off the throne, giving this poor boy from Georgia the chance to claim ultimate power.

Stalin himself played little part in the famous revolution of October 1917, and it wasn't until the Russian Civil War of 1917 to 1921 that his commitment and organisation skills caught Lenin's attention and catapulted him through the ranks. After acquiring a taste of power, Stalin wanted more and so aligned himself with the ailing Soviet leader. As Lenin's imminent death loomed, Stalin, who was now general secretary, used his tenacity and cunning to ensure everything was in place for his rapid rise to power. His opposition were ejected from the party, the Soviet Union and eventually lost their lives. Obsessed with ensuring his rule remained unquestioned, Stalin purged the land of anyone who dared question his authority. Soon all who remained were the few who were fiercely loyal, and the many who were terrified into obedience. Stalin's ruthlessness had won him the ultimate prize – the Soviet Union was his.



RISE TO POWER

Three key reasons for the rise of the man of steel

1 Links with Lenin

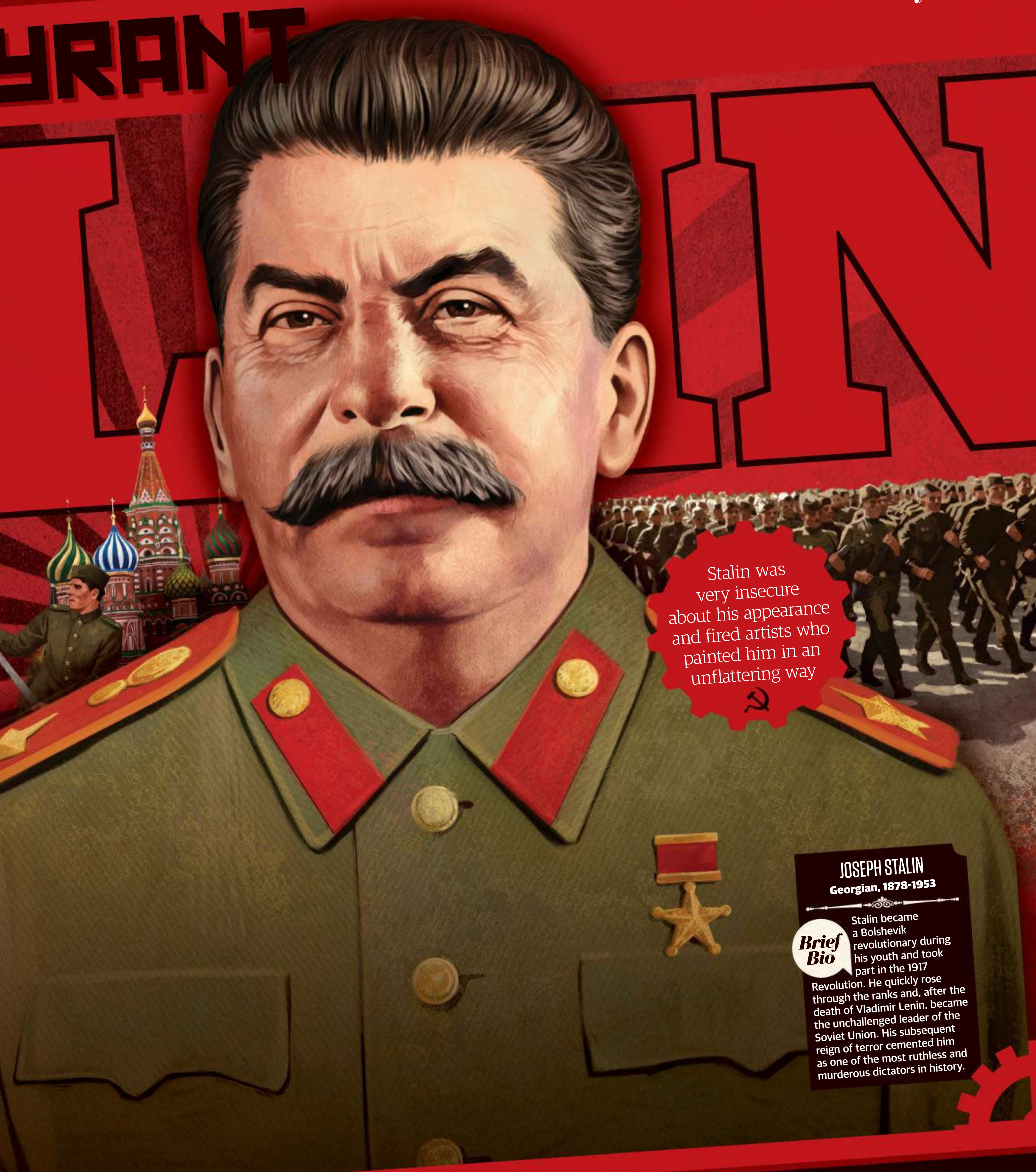
When Lenin went into semi-retirement, Stalin acted as his intermediary with the outside world, with unprecedented access to the ailing leader. Stalin used this to his advantage after his death, elevating Lenin to a godlike figure and he as his loyal disciple.

2 Political alliances

Stalin was able to set up an alliance with key figures in the Communist Party and replace enemies. Because of this Lenin's Testament, a document written by Lenin that called for Stalin's dismissal, was prevented from being revealed.

3 Reign of terror

Stalin was able to isolate and eject any members of the party who did not agree with him. This later turned into a regime of executions and the resulting atmosphere of fear ensured his authority would not be questioned.



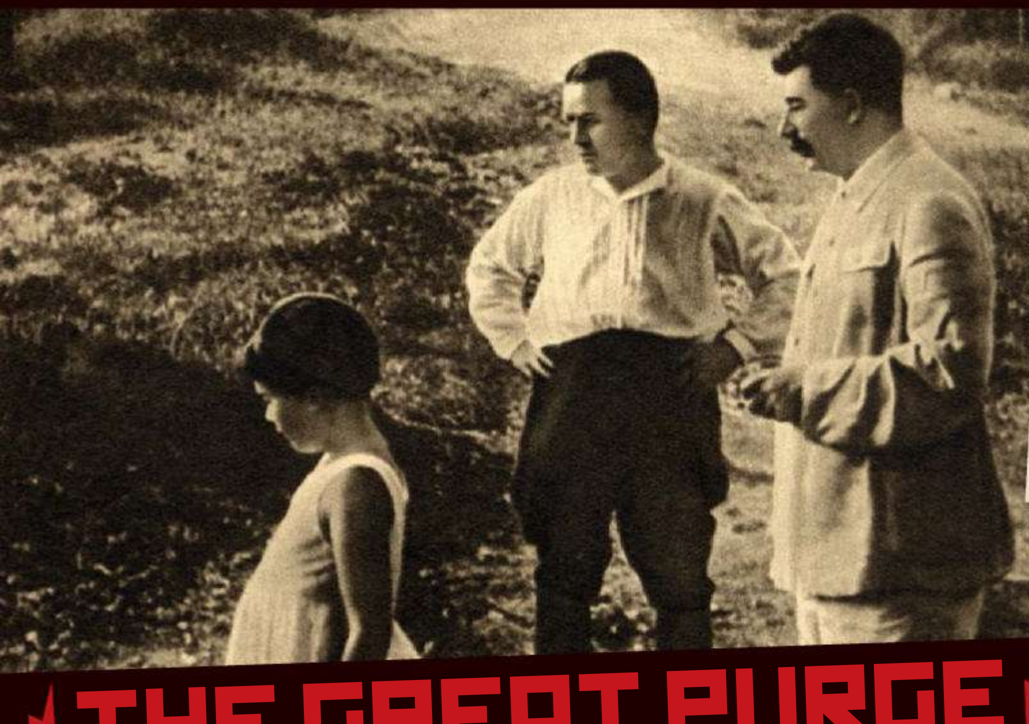
Stalin was very insecure about his appearance and fired artists who painted him in an unflattering way

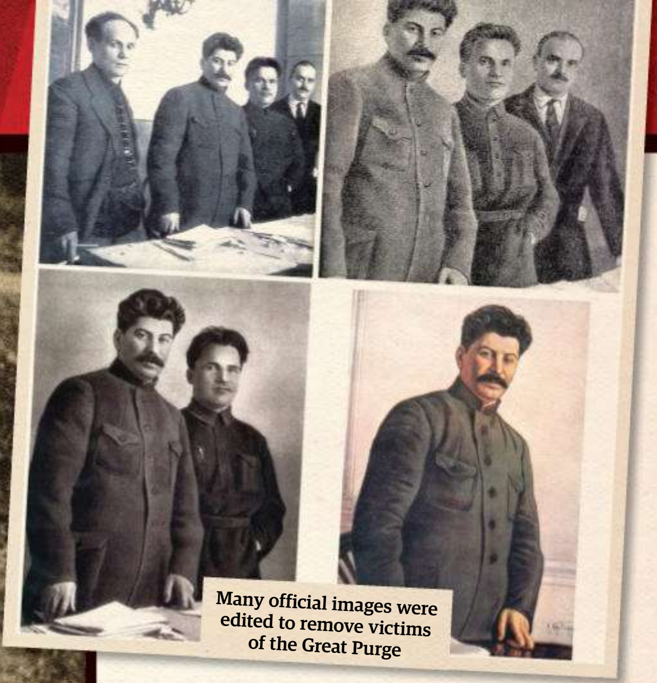
JOSEPH STALIN

Georgian, 1878-1953

Brief Bio

Stalin became a Bolshevik revolutionary during his youth and took part in the 1917 Revolution. He quickly rose through the ranks and, after the death of Vladimir Lenin, became the unchallenged leader of the Soviet Union. His subsequent reign of terror cemented him as one of the most ruthless and murderous dictators in history.





Many official images were edited to remove victims of the Great Purge

THE GREAT PURGE

It is a cold winter's night in 1937. A black van screeches to a halt on a dark and silent street. A small group of men emerge from the car, their sloping rimmed hats silhouetted against the dim light of the flickering streetlamps; their heavy guns swinging at their sides. One casually flicks open a notebook as another lights his pipe and takes a long drag. With a word and gesture to a nearby house the group move as one. The ground crunches under the thick soles of their leather boots as they climb the steps and knock sharply on the door.

They pound their fists against the cracking wood. One flicks open the letterbox and screams harsh words through the small gap and eventually the door opens and a pale face appear. One of the men kicks the door open and the group storm through the house, flinging open doors and destroying anything in their path. A moment later they emerge into the street again, dragging with them a terrified young man who clings to his father. The older man's face is pale but stern, his jaw clenched. His silence is louder than his son's panicked pleas and cries.

The men continue their raid, storming through houses until eventually the entire street is full of men from 17 to 70, some dazed, others hysterical and some with that same strange haunting silence. As the guards point their guns and usher them into the van there is no word of explanation and the few who protest are beaten. As the door closes and the vehicle disappears into the night, those who remain return silently to their homes.

These were not the first victims of the terror that would come to be known as the Great Purge, and they would not be the last. These armed raids in the dead of night were not the work of a secret terrorist organisation, but the government itself, and there was no redemption or tearful reunion awaiting these victims, but only imprisonment, torture, forced confessions and execution.

Obtaining ultimate power was not enough for Stalin. Controlled by his incredible paranoia, suddenly everyone became a suspect in conspiring to overthrow his rule. The purge began when Sergey Kirov, a staunch Stalinist, was murdered in 1934. Stalin used his assassination as evidence that there was a plot against him and launched the operation. But it is thought by some that Stalin himself arranged the death of the well-liked politician whose popularity threatened his rule. This began the string of witch-hunts that went on to claim millions of innocent lives.

Stalin was a fan of cowboy films and had his own private cinema where he hosted screenings

The purges first struck former senior Communist Party leaders in the famous Moscow Trials. These trials were covered by the Western media, who saw no problem with the guilty verdicts as the accused admitted to their crime of conspiring to assassinate Stalin. However, behind closed doors confessions were being beaten out of the accused with mental and physical torture, repeated threats against their families and assurances that their lives would be spared if they only pleaded guilty. They were not.

The purge then extended to the army, writers, artists, 'wealthy' farmers and eventually anyone who could be rounded up to make up the numbers of the 'minimum arrests' needed by the NKVD, the People's Commissariat for Internal Affairs. Headed by Nikolai Yezhov, the NKVD troika were vicious courts of three people who would issue sentences without a full trial. Through this they could achieve assembly line-style executions of up to a thousand people per day. Eventually the purge extended to the Communist Party itself, as almost all the Bolsheviks who had taken part in the 1917 Revolution were destroyed, until the only original member who remained was Stalin.

From 1937 to 1938 some 1.2 million people met their death as a result of the purge. After his death, 357 lists were found bearing Stalin's own signature, authorising the executions of some 40,000 people.

His calculated approach to the millions of lives he destroyed is evident in a line he reportedly muttered while reviewing one such list; "Who's going to remember all this riff-raff in ten or 20 years' time? No one. Who remembers the names now of the boyars Ivan the Terrible got rid of? No one."

MOST WANTED

Three senior officials who found themselves on Stalin's hit list

Leon Trotsky

Position: Head of the Fourth International
Crime: Firmly opposed to Stalin as the leader of the Soviet Union
Fate: Assassinated on Stalin's orders on 21 August 1940

Nikolai Yezhov

Position: Head of the NKVD
Crime: Theft of government funds, homosexuality, collaboration with German spies
Fate: Arrested & shot on 4 February 1940

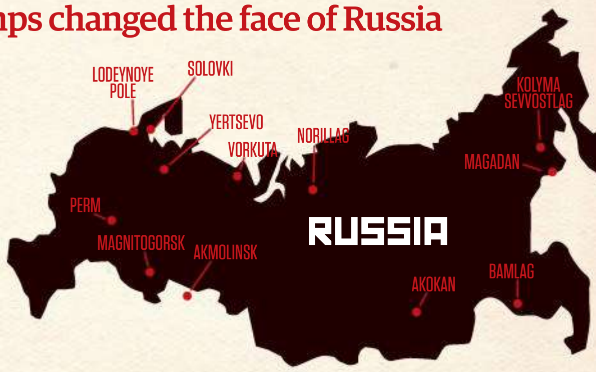
Nikolai Bukharin

Position: General secretary of Comintern's executive committee
Crime: Conspiracy to overthrow the state
Fate: Arrested and executed on 15 March 1938

LENIN	V	STALIN
Lenin's vision was a society run by the people for the people, with all resources shared equally. He wished to completely eradicate the idea of bourgeoisie (a social order ruled by the wealthy) and believed the power of the state would eventually fade away.	COMMUNISM	He used communism to further his own power and believed Russia would thrive with a powerful leader controlling the masses. He wished to eliminate the bourgeoisie, as well as any resistance of the working class, using state violence to do so.
National borders were deemed outdated and Lenin believed the world should engage in a unified revolution. He wished to spread communism across the planet and envisioned a merger of all nations and the creation of a world state.	FOREIGN POLICY	An advocate of 'socialism in one country', Stalin believed the Soviet Union should focus on building communism in Soviet-controlled countries rather than encouraging a worldwide revolution that would be more difficult to control.
The New Economic Policy of 1921 allowed private individuals to own their own enterprises. This meant peasants could operate freely, keeping and trading their own produce. The idea of this was to encourage an independent economy.	ECONOMY	He wished to rapidly industrialise the economy and brought all agriculture under government control. Peasants were forced to live on group farms and there was seizure of grain hoards, land, machinery and livestock.
Lenin believed that all the oppressed people of the world had the right to self-determination, to rule themselves rather than submit to the will of the state. However, Lenin was also responsible for the Red Terror, where he ordered the executions of a host of his opponents.	THE PEOPLE	There were mass purges of anyone who dared to question Stalin's authority or engage in revolutionary behaviour. Stalin believed that political repression of the people was necessary to defend against the destruction of the Soviet Union.

GULAGS

From the empty frozen plains of Siberia to the towering concrete of central cities, the brutal Gulag camps changed the face of Russia



When the term 'Gulag' was coined, it was used to refer to a government agency in charge of the forced labour camps. But to many today the word Gulag is representative of the entire Soviet system of repression, unwanton arrests, tortuous interrogations, disregard for human rights and millions of needless deaths.

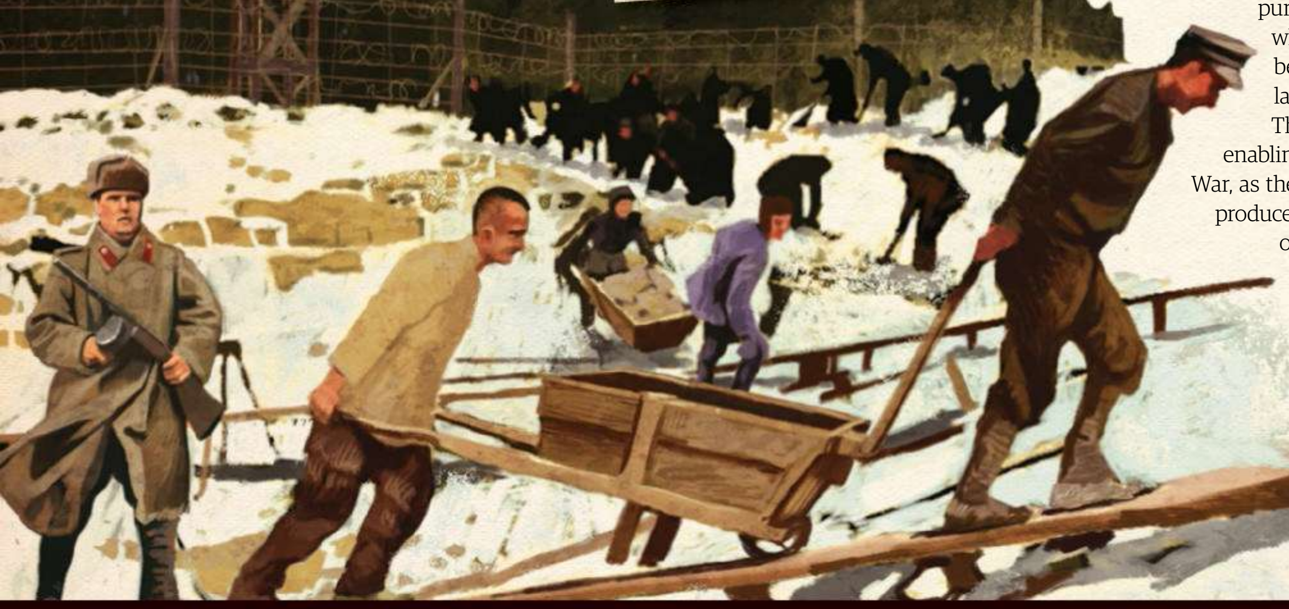
The Gulag camps existed in a form before Stalin, though they did not bear that name. Known as 'corrective labour camps', the first was installed in 1918, but these early labour camps were very different to the ones Stalin would create. He transformed these camps, where the prisoners enjoyed relative freedom, into a widespread system of over 53 separate merciless camps and 423 labour colonies all across the Soviet Union from the 1930s to '50s. These camps would come to imprison 14 million people and claim the lives of at least 1.6 million of these unfortunates.

The vast majority of the camps were in extremely remote, inhospitable regions of northeast Siberia. One of the locations for these camps, Kolyma, struck fear into the hearts of all Gulag prisoners. With a yearlong winter, Kolyma was an unforgiving, barren place, impossible to reach overland. And the camps there, like many other Siberian camps, did not bother with fences or fortification; to seek escape in the vast freezing plains was to sentence oneself to death. The Gulag camps were not like the infamous Nazi concentration camps, which were designed to kill their prisoners, but the horrific conditions often resulted in the same outcome. The Gulags were more numerous, housed more prisoners and lasted for many more years than the brutal Nazi camps.

The prisoners, of whom a great majority had been imprisoned without trial, would face relentless years of hard labour and minimal food. The more work they completed, the larger their ration of thin, tasteless soup, but as they were supplied with primitive, broken and useless tools, achieving the high labour expectations was nearly impossible. With depleting food rations, and sometimes given only four hours' rest a day, the Gulag prisoners were worked to exhaustion and death. In the winter of 1941 alone, a quarter of the Gulags' population died of starvation.

To Stalin the Gulags were essential. His purges were so fervent that any prisoner who died in the camps could instantly be replaced and the supply of cheap labour remained uninterrupted.

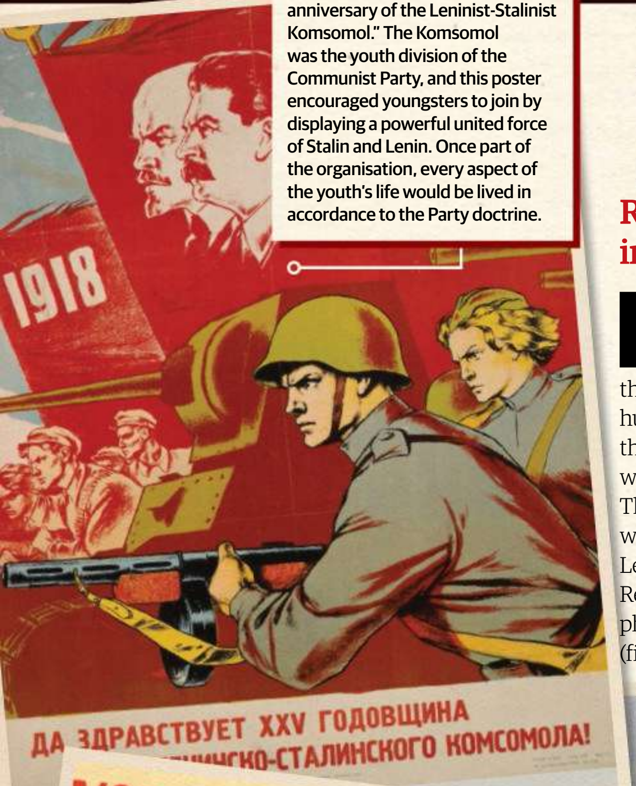
These prisoners played a key role in enabling Russia to win the Second World War, as they constructed essential railroads, produced ammunition and built tanks and other machines. New camps were created wherever an economic task required cheap labour, such as the Sea-Baltic Canal. The Gulag institution was finally closed in 1960, but many of the practices of these camps, such as forced labour and prisoner intimidation, continue to exist in Russian prisons to this day.



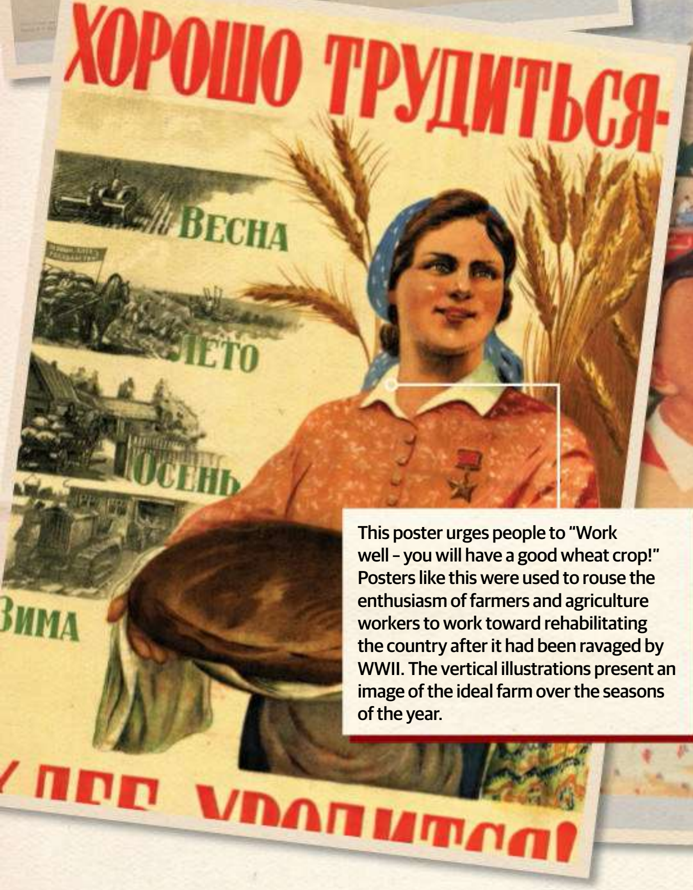
POWERFUL PROPAGANDA

Russia's 'man of steel' was a master at the art of propaganda, depicting and presenting himself as the hero of the nation

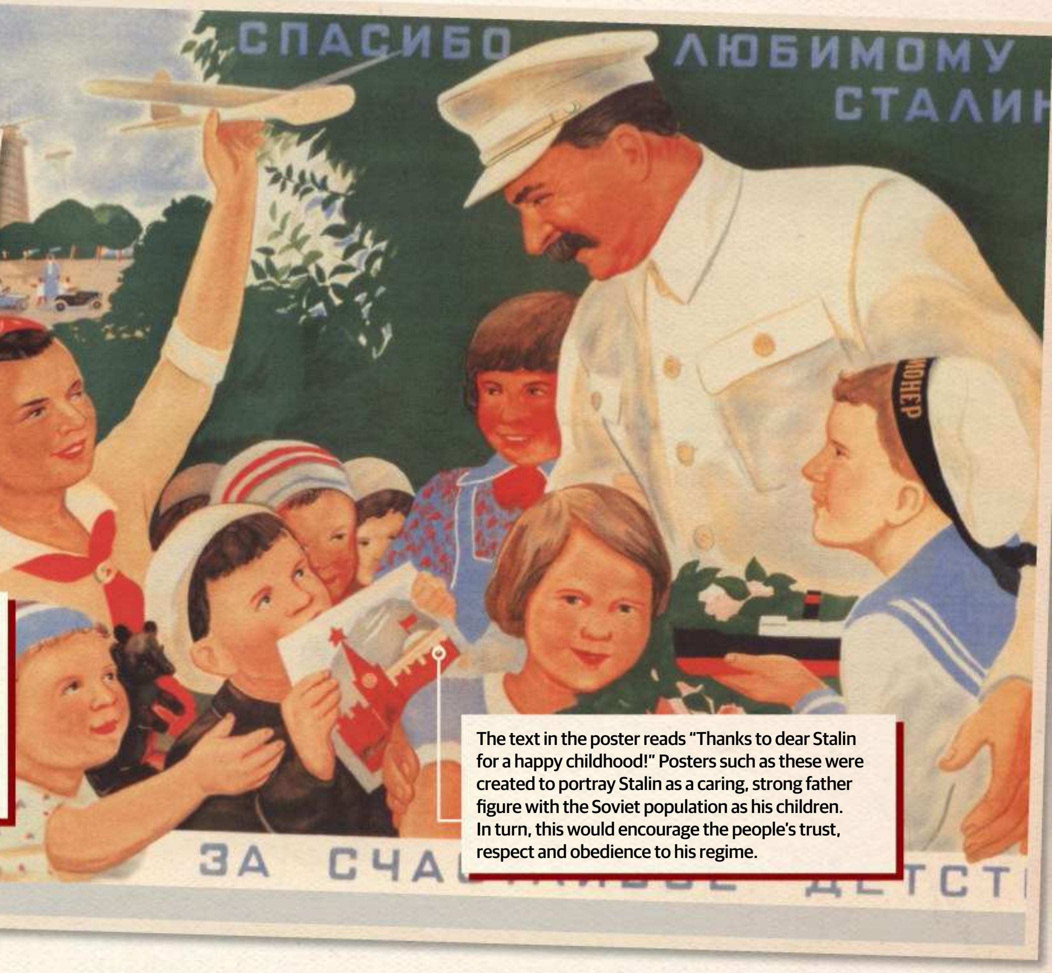
When Stalin turned 50 in December of 1929, a lavish celebration presented to the Russian people a messianic figure, the brother in arms of the adored Lenin and his humble disciple. This marked the beginning of the cult of personality surrounding Stalin that would follow him until his death and even beyond. Through the use of propaganda, Russian history was rewritten. Stalin, not Trotsky, had served as Lenin's second in command during the October Revolution and he grew not only spiritually but physically too as his modest 162-centimetre (five-foot, four-inch) frame transformed to over 183 centimetres (six feet) in the towering statues built in his image. Stalin wasn't a cruel or vicious tyrant; he was a loving and strong father figure. The phrase "Thank you, dear comrade Stalin, for a happy childhood!" appeared all over schools and nurseries, with children chanting the slogan over and over again at festivals. The title 'Father' was stolen from the priests he eliminated from his land and associated firmly with Stalin alone. And it was this 'Father Stalin' who the people adored, trusted and venerated, as the real man secretly orchestrated the deaths of millions of their families and friends.



The text reads "Long live the 25th anniversary of the Leninist-Stalinist Komsomol." The Komsomol was the youth division of the Communist Party, and this poster encouraged youngsters to join by displaying a powerful united force of Stalin and Lenin. Once part of the organisation, every aspect of the youth's life would be lived in accordance to the Party doctrine.



This poster urges people to "Work well – you will have a good wheat crop!" Posters like this were used to rouse the enthusiasm of farmers and agriculture workers to work toward rehabilitating the country after it had been ravaged by WWII. The vertical illustrations present an image of the ideal farm over the seasons of the year.



The text in the poster reads "Thanks to dear Stalin for a happy childhood!" Posters such as these were created to portray Stalin as a caring, strong father figure with the Soviet population as his children. In turn, this would encourage the people's trust, respect and obedience to his regime.

© Alamy

The cobbler's son
Stalin is born as Ioseb Besarionis Dze Jugashvili. He suffers from smallpox, which permanently scars his face, and aged 12 his left arm is injured in an accident, leaving it shorter than the other.
18 December 1878

Stalin in 1894, aged 16

Life in the priesthood
Stalin attends Tiflis Spiritual Seminary after receiving a scholarship. During his training to join the priesthood he discovers the ideas of Marx and Engels and is inspired. He is expelled after missing his final exams. **1894-1899**

Political life begins
Stalin learns that Lenin has formed the Bolsheviks, a political group that follows the teachings of Marx. He signs up and proves himself a skilled and capable organiser. He is arrested and exiled to Siberia but quickly escapes. **1903**

A taste of power
As the Bolsheviks seize power, Stalin rises through the ranks and is appointed the People's Commissar for Nationality Affairs. This position gives him his first taste of real power, and he uses it to burn villages and order executions. **1917**

The steady rise
Lenin appoints Stalin as General Secretary. That year Lenin suffers from a stroke and his relationship with Stalin deteriorates. He insists that Stalin be removed from his position, but Stalin's strong link of allies prevents this. **1922**

WORLD WAR II

In the carnage of WWII, Stalin aligned his country with the 'decadent' West to defeat Hitler's Nazis

> A scientist was ordered by Stalin to create a human-ape hybrid known as a humanzee, when he failed he was arrested and exiled

The non-aggression pact was named the Molotov-Ribbentrop Pact, after the Soviet and Nazi ministers of the same names

By the late-1930s Stalin had found himself with very few international friends due to his extreme policies. After his attempts to sign an anti-German military alliance with Britain and France failed he was forced to ally with the last country he'd ever imagine - Nazi Germany. The Soviet Union entered into a non-aggression pact on 23 August 1939. This was exactly what Hitler needed to eliminate his fear of a war on two fronts and eight days later Germany invaded Poland and the world was catapulted into war.

Although it was obvious to Stalin that the pact was only there to delay an inevitable conflict between the two powers, when Hitler invaded the Soviet Union in 1941, the Soviet leader was in shock. He had ignored the warnings of Churchill, shot German deserters who had warned him of the coming attack and even supplied Germany with supplies right up until that day. Stalin retreated to his dacha for three days, ignoring telephone calls and refusing to see anyone. He was facing the brutal reality of his own actions - a weakened military of which his own purge had eliminated 40,000 men with a host of key, talented advisors. But when he emerged it was as exactly the leader Russia needed. In the face of war, only the 'man of steel' possessed the strength required to unite his people.

Unite them he did. As Hitler's army drove its way into the Soviet Union, Stalin's forces fought to push them back over four long and bloody years. Offensives such as the Battle of Stalingrad and the Battle of Kursk tested the Soviet leader's resolve as his cities ran red with the blood of millions of soldiers and civilians. The hard-fought victory finally came, but Stalin's gaze was now focused on achieving Soviet dominance over Eastern and Central Europe, and soon a very different, colder war would begin.

EXPERT OPINION

What kind of military leader was Russia's ultimate tyrant?

Geoffrey Roberts

Professor Geoffrey Roberts is Head of the School of History at UCC. His books include *Stalin's Wars: From World War To Cold War, 1939-1953* and *Stalin's General: The Life Of Georgy Zhukov*, which was the winner of the Society for Military History Distinguished Book Award for Biography.

How involved a war leader was Stalin?

Stalin was involved in every aspect of the Soviet war effort - military, political, economic and diplomatic. He worked 16 hours a day and signed thousands of decrees and orders. Everyone who had dealings with him during the war was amazed by his knowledge of the technical details of the modern war machine. As Supreme Commander he was centrally involved in devising military strategy and directing large-scale operations. He was the indispensable figure of the Soviet high command.

What was his greatest failure?

It is often said that Stalin's greatest failure was that he did not anticipate the German invasion of Russia in June 1941. I think the failure was more one of strategic imagination and preparation. Stalin and his generals underestimated the power of the German attack and overestimated the strength of Soviet defences and their capacity to counter-attack. Stalin knew the Germans were going to attack, if not precisely when, but he was confident he and the Red Army could deal with all contingencies, including a surprise attack. In a sense he was right - the Soviet Union was able to survive the German invasion, but the cost was enormous and almost catastrophic. By the end of 1941 the Germans had reached Moscow, surrounded Leningrad and penetrated deep into the southern USSR. Perhaps the most grievous loss was Kiev, the Ukrainian capital, which fell to the Germans in September 1941. Stalin refused to allow the withdrawal of the Red Army from the Kiev area, meaning that several hundred thousand troops were encircled and captured.

Do you think the massive casualties of the Soviet army affected Stalin?

Stalin was a person of great feeling but little human empathy. He could be a very emotional person, subject to violent mood swings, and often displayed great sentimentality as well as anger. He was also an ideologue and an intellectual who thought in terms of grand designs and abstractions and spent much of his life engrossed in the written word and in political contexts that were sheltered from the brutal realities of war. These latter qualities helped inoculate Stalin from the sufferings of his troops. Stalin was utopian and an idealist who believed that the ends justified the means, and he had the emotional make-up that enabled taking and living with harsh decisions.

How much did Stalin's leadership contribute to the ultimate victory?

I have made myself unpopular with people who see only evil in Stalin by arguing that the Soviet dictator was the one essential Allied leader during the Second World War. Without his leadership the Soviet Union would in all probability have lost the war with Nazi Germany. The Soviet system that confronted Hitler's regime was Stalin's system, the system he had created in the 1920s and '30s. If Stalin hadn't performed well during the war the system would have collapsed in the face of the devastating blows it received. There was no substitute Soviet leader.

How would you sum up Stalin's leadership style during WWII?

Energetic, authoritative, calculating, controlled and ruthless. He made many mistakes but was more right than wrong after the first few disastrous months of the war. He was a learning war leader. In relation to his generals, he reinvented himself as a team player, as a combination of chairman and managing director. He imposed a harsh disciplinary regime on the Red Army and the whole country and had no compunction in destroying those he saw as his enemies. Stalin was a great warlord, but he was also a ruthless and brutal one. He did great harm to millions of innocent people as well as serving humanity well in defeating Hitler and the Nazis. It is that combination of good and evil that makes Stalin the most paradoxical as well as the most important dictator of the 20th century.

The dictator
Lenin dies and a vicious and hurried struggle for power ensues between the leading government figures. Stalin manages to eject his rivals, such as Trotsky, from the Soviet Union, placing himself at the top of the pyramid. **1924-1927**

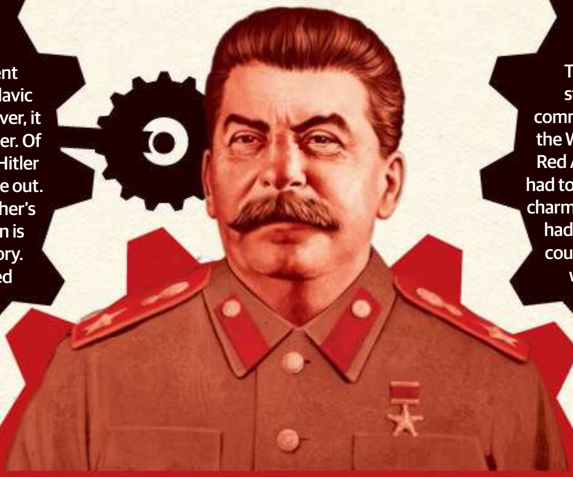
Five-year plan
Stalin begins the first of his 'five-year plans', with seizure of farms and factories. The result is mass famine, claiming the lives of millions. Export levels are maintained, with food shipped out as people starve. **1928-1933**

The red terror
Stalin begins a campaign of political repression known as the Great Purge. 20 million Russians are sent to Gulag camps and a third of the members of the Communist Party are executed on suspicion of disloyalty. **1934-1940**

Stalin met with Churchill and Roosevelt at the Yalta Conference

War leader
After Adolf Hitler breaks the non-aggression pact with the Soviet Union, Stalin's Red Army joins forces with the Allies in WWII. Victory eventually comes to the Soviet Union, but at the cost of millions of lives. **1941-1945**

Death of a dictator
Stalin suffers from a stroke and isn't found for several hours; his guards fear disturbing him. He remains bedridden for several days before dying on 5 March 1953; rumours that he was poisoned persist through the media. **5 March 1953**



STALIN'S DIPLOMACY

How the Soviet leader tried to control and manage the only men who could rival him for power

Adolf Hitler

The Father and the Führer

As a fascist and a communist, Hitler and Stalin couldn't be further apart politically. Hitler's frequent condemnation of the Soviet Union and claims that Slavic people were inferior did little to help relations. However, it became in both of their interests to ally with each other. Of course, this façade of friendship did not last long, as Hitler invaded Soviet territory and the anticipated war broke out. The two dictators shared a certain respect for the other's power though, and Hitler is quoted as saying, "Stalin is one of the most extraordinary figures in world history. He began as a small clerk and he has never stopped being a clerk. Stalin owes nothing to rhetoric. He governs from his office, thanks to a bureaucracy that obeys his every nod and gesture."

Winston Churchill

Putting up the Iron Curtain

The relationship between these two great leaders started off on rocky ground – Churchill's hatred of communism was well known, and Stalin was suspicious of the Western powers who he believed had abandoned his Red Army. But in order to beat the German invasion, they had to assume a united front. Churchill was satisfied that his charm and personality had won the dictator over, but Stalin had secretly installed a network of spies in London and could plan his own perfect 'performance' when dealing with the British leader. Although photos and film footage show the two men seemingly free of past misgivings, in reality Stalin would always be the one nut Churchill was unable to crack.

Franklin D Roosevelt

Looking after Uncle Joe

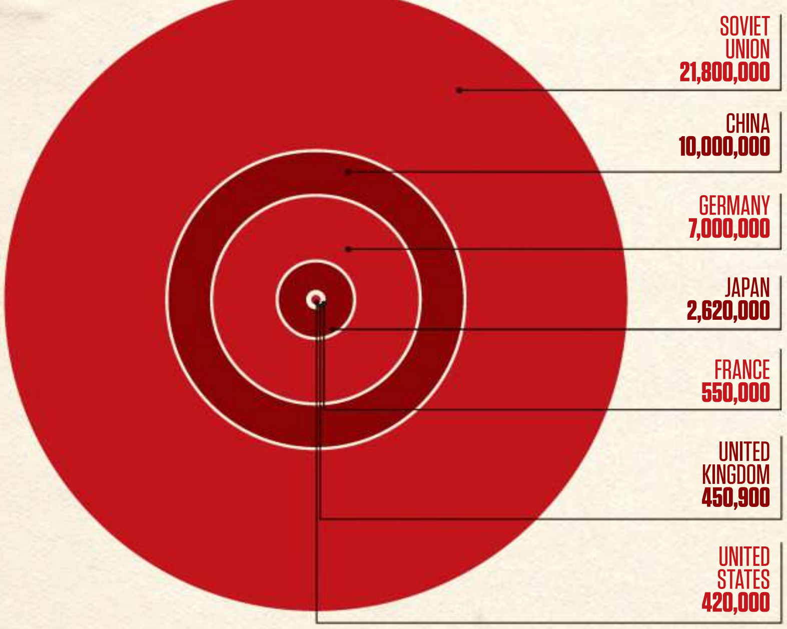
Roosevelt possessed a close relationship with Churchill and this was something he believed could be extended to Stalin, despite warnings from Churchill not to trust the Soviet leader. Roosevelt repeatedly sided with Stalin in order to encourage this relationship, which he believed would prevent Soviet expansion after the war. Instead of standing up to Stalin, something his advisors pushed for, Roosevelt gave him whatever he wanted and referred to him affectionately as 'Uncle Joe.' This naivety was pounced on and exploited by the Soviet dictator, and the results in the coming years proved Roosevelt's approach to be disastrous to the Soviet-American partnership he desired.

Benito Mussolini

The two tyrants

Despite believing in very different political systems, communism and fascism, Stalin and Mussolini had a lot in common. They both tried to establish governments with complete control over their citizens, they used propaganda to do so and they transformed their countries. Mussolini had some admiration toward Stalin, mainly due to his respect for Lenin, but when he allied with Hitler he eliminated any chance of the two men forming a friendship. The Russian dictator considered the Italian leader to be weak and little more than a puppet for Hitler to use as he saw fit. Stalin dismissed Mussolini, paying him and his actions very little attention.

A HEAVY PRICE: WWII'S DEATH TOLL



5 FACTS ABOUT STALINGRAD

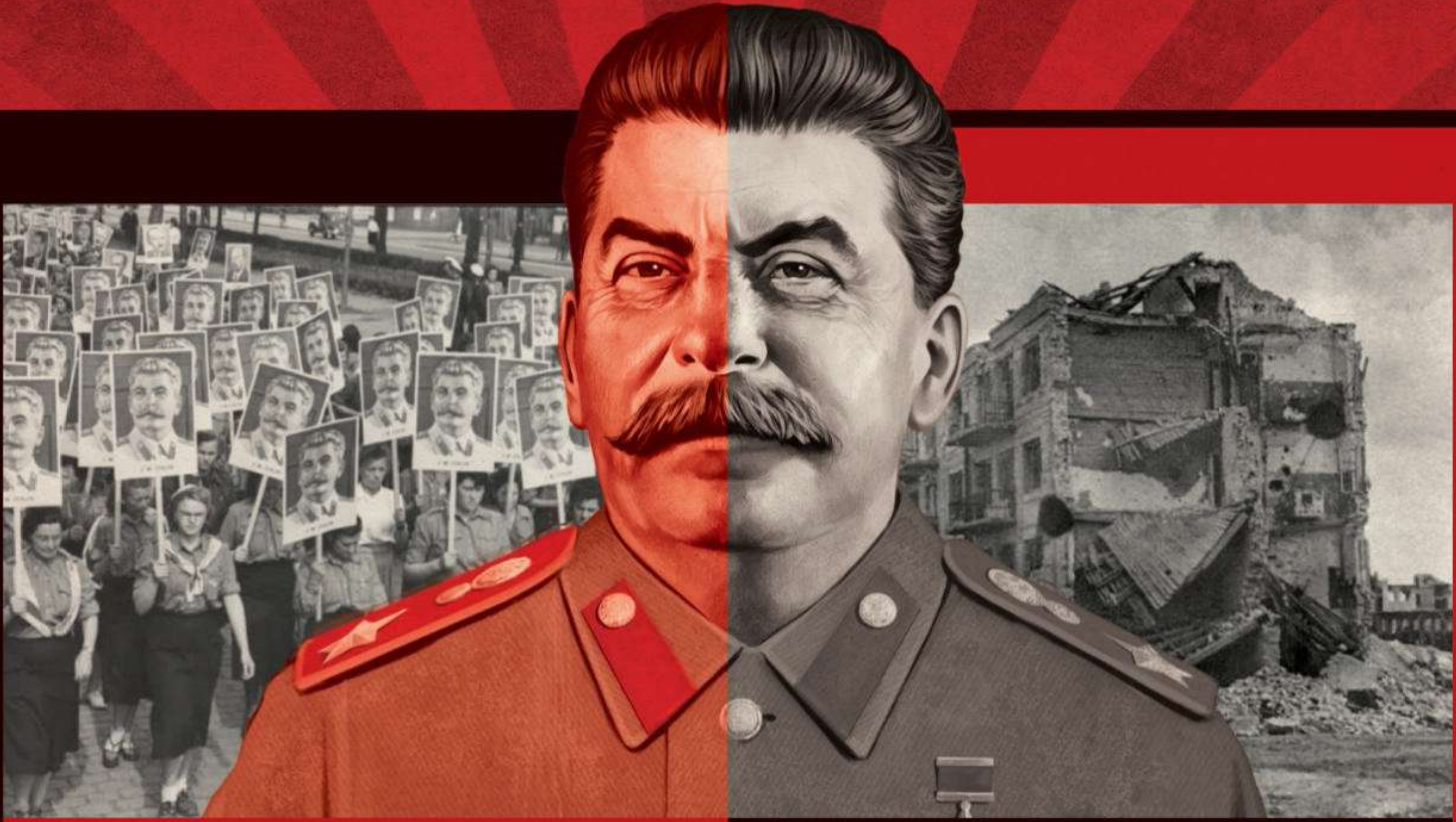
1 110,000 German soldiers were taken prisoner at Stalingrad; by the end of the war only 5,000 of them returned to Germany.

2 Hitler ordered the Sixth Army commander Paulus to fight to the last bullet, who commented, "I've no intention of shooting myself for this Bohemian corporal."

3 One of the deliveries dropped to the German soldiers amid the biting Russian winter was 20 tons of vodka and summer uniforms.

4 The living conditions of the soldiers were so terrible that a Red Army conscript assigned to Stalingrad had a life expectancy of just 24 hours.

5 A national day of mourning was ordered by Hitler, not for the loss of men but for the shame the surrender brought to Germany.



GREAT TSAR OR TYRANT?

LOVING FATHER

Stalin adored and doted on his only daughter Svetlana, calling her his "little sparrow." Possessing the red hair and freckles of his own beloved mother, Svetlana described the pride on her father's face as he watched her drive a car: "He sat next to me, beaming with joy. My father couldn't believe I knew how to drive." Even when she sought asylum in the USA she refused to condemn her father, proclaiming the love and respect she felt for him.

Stalin's treatment of his first son, Yakov, was so severe that he attempted to take his own life. He survived, but Stalin simply responded by saying, "He can't even shoot straight." Yakov went on to serve in the Red Army but was captured in WWII. His safe return was promised to his father in exchange for German Field Marshal Freidrich Paulus. Stalin rejected this offer. It is believed that Yakov subsequently committed suicide by running into an electric fence at a concentration camp.

MODERNISATION

During his years as dictator Stalin led the Soviet Union out of its previously backward economy and moved it forward with mass industrialisation. Stalin's five-year plans achieved rapid modernisation despite a very weak economy. New products were developed, the scale and efficiency of production increased and ultimately this mass industrialisation helped greatly in achieving a Soviet victory in WWII.

Although the economic growth under Stalin was significant, figures of the rate of growth are greatly disputed – ranging from the official estimate of 13.9 per cent to the low Western figure of 2.9 per cent. One thing is certain, though; the cost of this modernisation was millions of innocent lives. Stalin's brutal regime caused mass famine across the rural population, with a final death toll of up to 10 million people.

DEATH

When Stalin died, the collective grief that swept through his people was tangible. People wept openly and on his funeral mass wakes were held across the country. To many Stalin was their country's greatest leader, winning WWII and purging the land of those who would plunge Russia back into the rule of the Tsars. When his body was placed in the Hall of Columns, people lined to pay their respects for three days and nights.

In the early hours of 2 March 1953 Stalin suffered a stroke. Despite being the most powerful man in Russia, he lay helpless, alone and soaked in his own stale urine until 10pm that night. Ironically, it was the reign of terror that he himself had constructed that put the final nail in his own coffin, as his guards were scared that entering his room and disobeying his orders would result in their death.

SOCIAL FREEDOM

Women's lives improved significantly under Stalin's rule. They enjoyed equal rights in education and employment, allowing them to succeed in careers previously closed to them. The generation born during Stalin's rule was the first almost universally literate generation in Russian history. Universal healthcare also increased the average life span and sent the numbers of diseases like typhus and cholera to a record low.

Many basic human rights were removed under Stalin and he conducted a removal of all religion through the use of atheistic education, anti-religious propaganda and discriminatory laws. Churches, mosques, temples and sacred monuments were destroyed. Anyone who showed association with religion ran the risk of being killed, along with the tens of thousands of priests, monks and nuns who were martyred under his orders.

Malcolm X

The political activist who challenged the conventions of race and religion amid the chaos of the civil-rights movement

Born Malcolm Little on 19 May 1925, the man who would inspire generations first opened his eyes in a city already famed for its perpetual racial tensions. Omaha, the largest city in the state of Nebraska, had a history of clashes between black and white citizens dating as far back as the 1840s, and as the city grew, so did the issue. Omaha had its own chapter of the NAACP (National Association for the Advancement of Colored People) and was home to the Hamitic League Of The World, an African-American nationalist movement. The city, and the state as a whole, also had ties to the Ku Klux Klan. It was a hotbed of racial aggression, and Malcolm's family was right in the heart of it.

His father, Earle Little, was an outspoken member of the African-American community, a man who wasn't afraid to express his opinions on the strife of his ethnic brothers and sisters. As a local leader of the Universal Negro Improvement Association he wore his beliefs on his sleeve, and it was a mind-set that permeated his entire family. As such a prominent figure in the black community, Earle regularly clashed with many white members of the local community – including members of the Klan. So defiant was Malcolm's father in the face of adversity that the Klan once even threatened to murder his entire family. The Littles had no choice but to flee, and little Malcolm was whisked off to a new life in Lansing, Michigan.

> Malcolm X Day is an American holiday celebrated either on 19 May (his birthday) or the third Sunday in the month of May

Their new life was far from peaceful, though, with Earle clashing with the Black Legion, a KKK splinter group famed for its ultra-violence toward ethnic minorities. In 1929 the Little family home was burnt to the ground; the family escaped relatively unscathed, but Earle was sure the Legion was behind it. Just two years later, Earle was run over and killed by a streetcar in Lansing. The official police report states it was accident, but Malcolm's mother is convinced her husband was murdered. It's a belief that would stay with her for her entire life, and one that would eventually contribute to her deteriorating mental health. To a young Malcolm Little it was a stark education in the realities of living as a coloured person in the early decades of the 20th century.

In the years that followed, the Littles continued to live through the segregation and second-class citizenship of the times. Without Earle's commanding presence the family sank back into obscurity, with Malcolm and his brothers forced to hunt for game in the surrounding woodland to survive. It was a tough life for any child, but Malcolm, now in his teens, was fast becoming a young man with little fear of anything. The family managed to get by, but tragedy struck yet again in 1937 when his mother Louise was committed to a mental institution. This event shattered the already splintering Little clan.

When one teacher remarked that his aspirations to become a lawyer were "no realistic goals for a nigger", he soon dropped out of high school. Despite his excellent grades, Malcolm felt he had no chance of succeeding in a world controlled by white men. With little keeping him in Lansing anymore, Malcolm slowly drifted into a life of petty crime and soon after became involved in drug dealing, racketeering, theft and more. He lost himself in the simple acts of power, the crimes getting constantly more audacious and dangerous. Eventually the number of thefts caught up to them and Malcolm was arrested and sentenced to eight to ten years in prison for larceny.

Life in the time of Malcolm X

Rights for students

In 1951, black students and members of the NAACP began protesting over the continued segregation between white and black children and young adult in schools, colleges and universities around the country. After four years of legal battles, the US Supreme Court ruled that segregation had "a detrimental effect upon the coloured children".

Montgomery Bus Boycott

Nine months after a 15-year-old African-American student refused to give up her seat to a white passenger, civil-rights activist Rosa Parks also made the same statement. She was arrested and charged with civil disobedience, which led her fellow activists (including minister Martin Luther King Jr) to boycott the use of local buses in Montgomery, Alabama.

Desegregation in Little Rock

In September 1957, the small town of Little Rock, Arkansas, was all over the news. Nine African-American students who had sued for the right to attend an integrated school found none other than the National Guard waiting to prevent their entry into the school. Ordered there by the governor of Arkansas, Orval Faubus, it took the intervention of President Eisenhower to force Faubus to stand down.

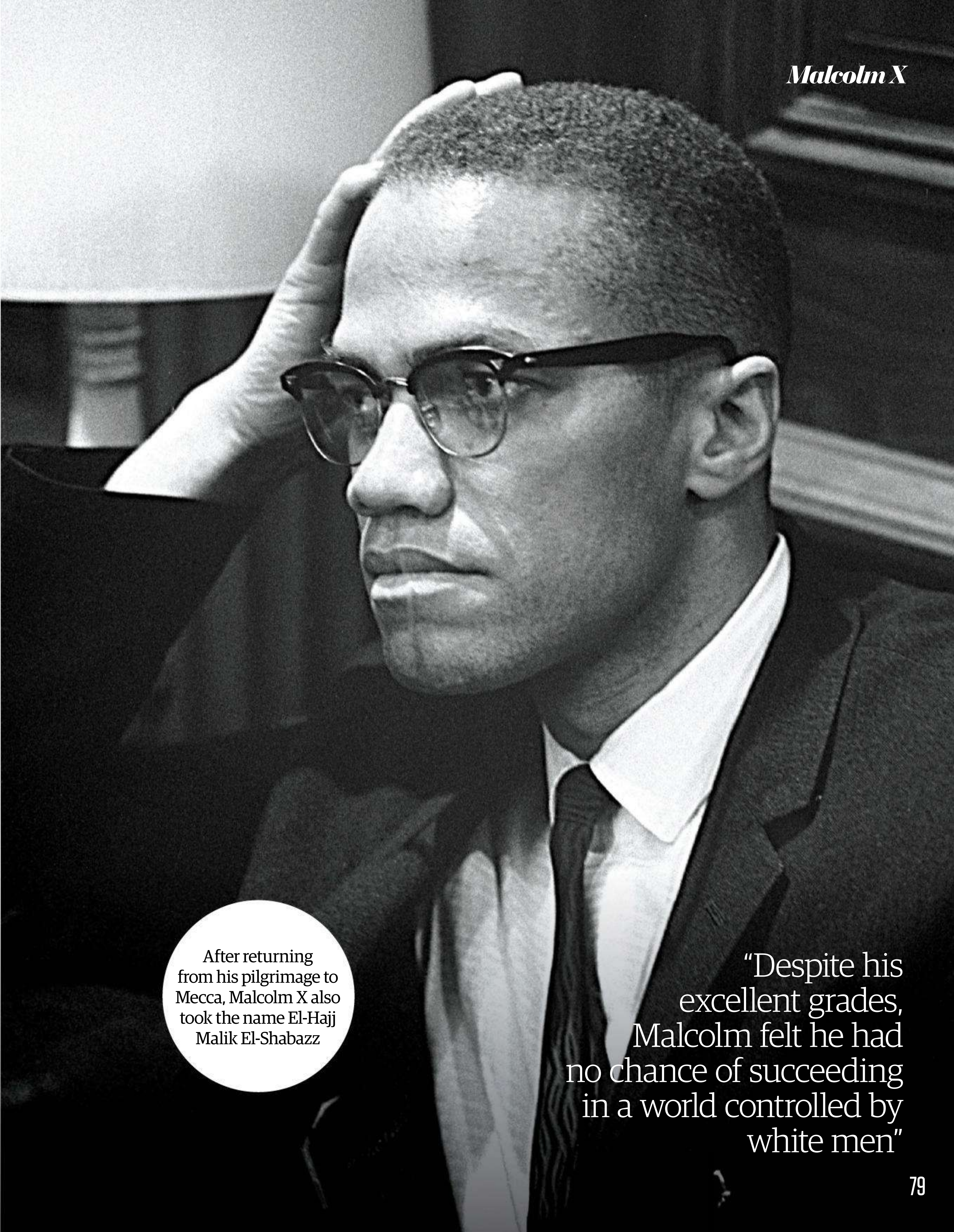
Riding to freedom

One of the most significant activist statements of the civil-rights movement were the Freedom Rides. Conducted in 1961, the event consisted of white and African-American activists travelling on interstate buses to challenge the continued – and more importantly unconstitutional – segregation on public buses in the Deep South.

Civil Rights Act of 1964

After years of protests, demonstrations and legal action, the wheels for sociopolitical change were finally turning by the mid-1960s. President John F Kennedy had initially made attempts to push through such legislation prior to his assassination, but was blockaded by filibuster-threatening senators. His successor, Lyndon B Johnson, eventually forced it through and signed it into law on 2 July 1964.

President Lyndon B Johnson signing the Civil Rights Act – a piece of legislation that changed North America forever



After returning from his pilgrimage to Mecca, Malcolm X also took the name El-Hajj Malik El-Shabazz

“Despite his excellent grades, Malcolm felt he had no chance of succeeding in a world controlled by white men”

Marked bullet holes in the wall at the site where Malcolm X was killed, during his address to the Organization of Afro-American Unity

The civil-rights movement

In the years Malcolm X was forming his thoughts and beliefs on a pilgrimage to Mecca, his fellow African-Americans back in the United States were on the precipice of a social and political revolution. Ever since Abraham Lincoln's Emancipation Proclamation in 1863, African-Americans had earned their freedom but the lasting, enabling importance of basic civil rights still eluded them. The civil-rights movement, which ran from 1954 to 1968, would change the very fabric of American society forever.

For almost 100 years, African-Americans were technically free, but treated as second-class citizens, with segregation between blacks and whites so common it filtered everywhere from schools to restaurants and cafes. The frustrations of an entire people formed the fire of the civil-rights movement, a collective with the sole aim of ending segregation and ensuring civil rights for all American citizens in constitutional law. It began with a mixture of nonviolent protests and bouts of civil disobedience, as well as the semi-militarisation of the North Carolina chapter of the NAACP (National Association for the Advancement of Colored People) that protected African-American families in the South.

The civil-rights movement had many famous faces, including Martin Luther King Jr, Rosa Parks, Andrew Goodman and Malcolm X himself. Many of them gave their lives in the pursuit of their freedoms, with their efforts leading to the Civil Rights Act of 1964 and the Voting Rights Act of 1965.

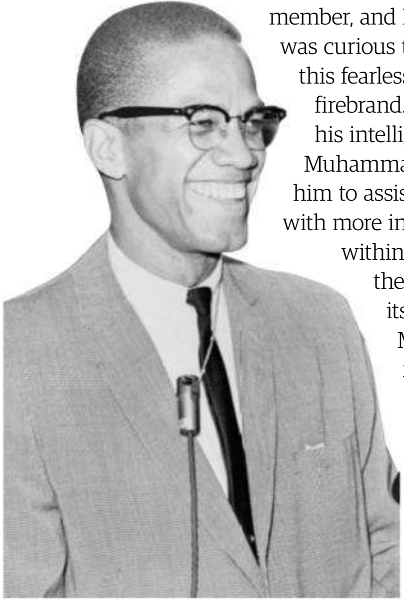
Left raw and angry by his experiences as a child and a young man, the future civil-rights leader was at a crossroads. While serving time he discovered the teachings of Elijah Muhammad, the leader of a new religious movement, the Nation Of Islam (NOI). Its central pillars of paying homage to their African routes and building a community tempered by black self-reliance inspired Malcolm to convert. In 1950, the same year the FBI opened a file on Malcolm, he shed his surname and adopted the letter 'X'. This was used to symbolise the unknown slaves who were ripped from the heart of Africa.

Upon his release from prison in 1952, Malcolm travelled to Chicago to meet with the NOI's leader in person. During his incarceration, he had become an outspoken new member, and Elijah was curious to meet this fearless young firebrand. Impressed with his intelligence and tenacity, Muhammad swiftly promoted him to assistant minister. Now with more influence and standing within the movement, the FBI increased its surveillance of Malcolm, shifting its focus from possible communist ties to his rapid ascent in the NOI. However, to his fellow members he was a breath of fresh air; a man not afraid to look racists in the eye and denounce their arbitrary views.

The Nation Of Islam had now become infamous for its radical views. Its ministers preached that black people were the first people of the world, superior in every way to whites. While civil-rights organisations fought to destroy segregation, the NOI actively sought it. Malcolm X was now a regular face in the public eye following the Johnson Hinton incident. When the police assaulted Hinton, a black Muslim, Malcolm led a 2,000-strong crowd to the police station to demand he receive medical attention; when the demands were met, upon a word from Malcolm the crowd left peacefully. It was a sign of his growing power and he used his increased media profile to openly denounce other civil-rights movements for their message of protest through nonviolence, stating: "I am for violence if nonviolence means we continue postponing a solution to the American black man's problem just to avoid violence". Malcolm's ethos of "by any means necessary" made him an imposing and inflammatory figure to white Americans and those in the African-American community who disagreed with him.

After describing the assassination of President John F Kennedy as a sign of white America's

At the age of 20, Malcolm X was convicted of larceny and sentenced to prison



"He stressed the need for African-Americans to exercise their right to vote"

Timeline

1925

Malcolm X born
Born Malcolm Little at University Hospital in Omaha, Nebraska, he is the fourth of seven children. His father, Earle Little, is a baptist lay speaker, while his mother, Louise Norton Little, is a stay-at-home parent.
19 May 1925

Defining moment
Malcolm's father killed 1931
Aged six, a young Malcolm Little enrols at Pleasant Grove Elementary School in Michigan. That same year, his father is killed after being struck by a speeding streetcar. The official report states it was an accident, but Malcolm's mother Louise is convinced it was murder. His father had been an outspoken leader of the local Universal Negro Improvement Association (UNIA), so rumours run rife that members of the Black Legion had organised a hit on Earle to get rid of a black pride activist. His father had taken out life insurance before his murder but the money is never paid out to the family.

Louise Little committed
After dating a local man for a few months, Louise Little becomes pregnant. The man then vanishes once he learns of the pregnancy, causing her to have a nervous breakdown. She's committed to State Mental Hospital in Kalamazoo, Michigan.
1938-1939

Avoids military service
At the age of 18, Malcolm moves to New York. He's drafted to the US Army, but is deemed unsuitable for service. Rumours claim he feigned a mental condition to avoid being drafted into service during WWII.
1943

Serving time
After getting involved in the criminal underworld, Malcolm commits a number of burglaries in and around Boston in 1945. In 1946 he's convicted of larceny (unlawful taking of another's property) and is sent to Charlestown State Prison, Boston.
1946

Converts to Nation Of Islam
During the early years of his sentence, Malcolm becomes aware of the Nation Of Islam, a religious movement originating in the US. He converts and finds inspiration from the words of their leader, Elijah Muhammad.
1947

Preaching across the US
Elijah Muhammad elevates Malcolm X to the influential position of minister and sends him to preach at a number of newly opened temples. Over the next two years he spreads the NOI word in Boston, New York and Philadelphia.
1953-1955

"chickens coming home to roost", the NOI suspended Malcolm, keen to distance itself from the national outcry his publicised words had caused. NOI leader Elijah Muhammad had also grown anxious over Malcolm's popularity in the organisation, fearing his own candidacy would soon be challenged. Soon after, Malcolm announced he was leaving the movement.

After leaving the Nation, Malcolm gave his infamous 'The Ballot Or The Bullet' speech, in which he stressed the need for African-Americans to exercise their right to vote and seek full equality. While Malcolm did urge members of the black community to, "take arms", he was not urging his brothers and sisters to attack white people. He felt the government was not actively protecting his people from attacks, and so believed they should arm themselves and defend their lives until the government was willing to acknowledge the problem and protect them. During this time Malcolm converted to Sunni Islam, the largest and most common branch of Islam.

A month later, in April 1964, Malcolm left the US on a pilgrimage to Mecca. While there he had an epiphany: he had finally seen the Islamic faith for what it was. Not an armour with which to cocoon one's self in, but a means of bringing the people of the world together. It was the biggest transformation in Malcolm's mind-set since his conversion to the NOI in prison, but it would also prove to be the one that sealed his fate.

Upon his return to the United States, Malcolm had become a sworn enemy of the NOI. While his desire to see the equality and constitutional safety of African-Americans was still the central goal that drove him, his beliefs in the means to get there had changed. He embraced the peaceful doctrines of Sunni Islam and preached the importance of all Americans, regardless of race, religion or background, working together to achieve equality. For the next 12 months, Malcolm, his wife Betty and his six daughters lived a life under constant threat, but they all knew the importance of pressing forward.

The discrimination toward black people in the US led to a mass civil-rights movement

FREEDOM
WE DEMAND EQUAL RIGHTS NOW!
WE MARCH FOR INTEGRATED SCHOOLS NOW!
WE DEMAND DECENT HOUSING NOW!
WE DEMAND AN END TO BIAS NOW!
RIGHTS NOW!

He inspired Cassius Clay to convert to Islam and become Muhammad Ali

By the beginning of 1965, Malcolm's wife had even contacted the FBI directly, telling them that her husband was "as good as dead" following his refusal to back down in the face of the Nation's death threats. Despite the dangers, Malcolm still campaigned tirelessly, conducting speeches and rallies across the country. On 21 February 1965, Malcolm addressed the Organization of Afro-American Unity at the Audubon Ballroom in New York. Suddenly, someone in the 400-strong crowd shouted, "Nigga, get your hands out of my pocket!" Malcolm and his bodyguards waded into the crowd to quell the disturbance as three men opened fire on him with a sawed-off shotgun and automatic pistols. Malcolm was struck 21 times and was pronounced dead shortly later.

He may have been prematurely removed from the world, but Malcolm X made an impact that's still felt today. While his views were often controversial, no one can deny his bravery in fighting against the establishment for much-needed change.

Defining moment

Freedom at last 1952

After serving six years of his eight to ten-year sentence for larceny, Malcolm is released from prison. Having become a dedicated follower of the Nation Of Islam, Malcolm soon comes to the attention of Elijah Muhammad. He meets with Muhammad in Chicago and few weeks later is appointed an assistant minister for the movement. Around this time he abandons his birth name Little and starts using the surname X. Around this time the FBI also creates a file for him, following a letter he writes to President Truman opposing to the Korean War.

Defining moment

Assassinated in Manhattan

21 Feb 1965

Following a pilgrimage to Mecca the year before, Malcolm returns a far less radical man. He begins denouncing any form of violence and urging people of all colours to work together to attain civil rights for all. He receives death threats from a number of more radical Islamic groups, including outspoken members of the Nation Of Islam. His wife Betty even contacts the FBI and tells them her husband is "as good as dead." While preparing to address an Organization of African-American Unity rally in Manhattan, Malcolm is shot dead by angry militants. Three men are arrested and sentenced to life in prison.

1965

Johnson Hinton incident
Four members of the Nation Of Islam are beaten with nightsticks by New York police officers. After the men are arrested, Malcolm arrives with a crowd of some 4,000 NOI followers and force the police to give them medical attention. Covered by national news, it is the first time Malcolm permeates the public eye.
26 April 1957

Malcolm meets Betty
In 1955, Malcolm meets Betty Sanders at one of his lectures. A year later she joins the Nation Of Islam and takes the symbolic surname X as the two continue to court. In January 1958 Malcolm proposes over the phone and they marry two days later.
January 1958

Courting infamy
Following the assassination of John F. Kennedy, reporters approached Malcolm X for a comment on the event and he described it as "chickens coming home to roost". The comments cause national outrage and he is barred from representing the Nation Of Islam.
1 December 1963

Leaving the NOI
Malcolm splits from the NOI and soon converts to Sunni Islam. He meets Martin Luther King Jr for the first and only time at a Senate debate on the Civil Rights Bill. At this time he also urges African-Americans to be prepared to take arms if their voting rights are not protected.
8 March 1964

© Corbis; Bettmann/Corbis; Alamy

MANDELA FOR PRESIDENT
ANC
THE PEOPLE'S CHOICE!

Soldiers try to control a passionate crowd during one of Nelson Mandela's election campaign rallies

Eye Witness

MANDELA BECOMES PRESIDENT,
SOUTH AFRICA, PRETORIA, 10 MAY 1994

GILLIAN KERRUISH

Gillian Kerruish was born in South Africa's northern capital Pretoria in 1984 and has lived in at least half of the country's provinces. Apart from a trip to Switzerland when she was aged seven, Gillian has not left the borders of South Africa. She lives in Johannesburg, where she works as a receptionist at a law firm. She's also studying to be a sworn translator in Mandarin Chinese.

> “I knew with the absolute conviction of a child that this would be the greatest day of my entire life”

South Africa was changing. After three centuries of white government, the 25th largest country in the world was on the precipice of a new political and social age. For 46 years the ruling National Party had gripped the country in the chokehold of apartheid, a system of racial segregation that elevated the white minority Afrikaners while treating black South Africans like second-class citizens on their own soil. Sanctioned by trade embargoes and vexed by an internal resistance that wasn't averse to using violent guerrilla tactics to destabilise white control, South Africa was fast becoming a powder keg on the verge of igniting.

That change came not in the form of one man, but two. The first was Frederik Willem de Klerk, a previously conservative white member of the National Party who surprised many in government when he chose to head up the ‘verligte’ (‘enlightened’), a new movement that believed that the apartheid had a half-life that was slowly running out. When he became state president of South Africa in September 1989, de Klerk knew that drastic action was needed to transition the country into a non-racist nation. By February 1990, he did just that - he lifted the ban on the African National Congress (ANC) and African Communist parties and released one of the country's most iconic figures. That man was Nelson Mandela. Imprisoned on charges of terrorism for 27 years, Mandela had become a symbol of South Africa's suppressed black citizens.

The unity between South Africa's progressively liberal leader and the face of black nationalism was a powerful coalition, and the two worked tirelessly to bring the nation out of the shadow of apartheid and into a new age of racial equality. Four years later, and Mandela was voted in as the head of a government that had, in a very different form, stolen his freedom 30 years earlier. It was a stark reversal of fortunes and the rest of the world waited with baited breath to see how the next chapter in South African history would play out. It was a momentous occasion and Gillian Kerruish, aged nine years old at the time, was there in person to see the country's first black head of state address the world.

“Oddly enough, while I have spent more than half my life in Cape Town, it was a sheer stroke of luck that I was living in Pretoria in 1994,” says Gillian. “I was living in Cape Town, when my parents divorced. But I then moved to Pretoria with my father, enrolling at a local public school soon after. The first time I became aware of anything properly political was a few months before when the headmistress called a special assembly and told us that for the first time in our country's history we would have a fully free and fair presidential election. I was only a child so this meant nothing to me in the greater scheme of my life. But I could tell that something big had just happened.”

Something big had indeed happened. So big in fact it would either unite the country or rip it apart as the more extreme elements of each racial denomination fought to gain a foothold on the country's future. When Mandela chose to run for de Klerk's own position at the beginning of 1994, he sent out a powerful statement to the world:

Mandela's road to presidency

EDT

11 Feb 1990 **Long-awaited release** Nelson Mandela, aged 71, is freed from prison after 27 and a half years of imprisonment.

Feb 1990 **The ban lifts** State president de Klerk also lifts the ban on Mandela's ANC (African National Congress).

7 Aug 1990 **Guerrilla campaign abates** The ANC suspends its campaign of guerrilla warfare against apartheid after 30 years.

5 July 1991 **Mandela leads** After a successful global tour, Mandela is unanimously elected as the leader of the ANC.

17 June 1992 **Devastation in Boipatong** 300 armed men attack the settlement of Boipatong, killing over 45 people.

10 April 1993 **Chris Hani is killed** Chris Hani, leader of the South African Communist Party is murdered by a white man.

15 Oct 1993 **Shared Nobel Peace Prize** De Klerk and Mandela accept a Nobel Peace Prize for efforts to form a multinational government.

18 Nov 1993 **A new constitution** Negotiations between white and black leaders eventually settle on a new, amended constitution.

April 1994 **An equal vote** After 46 years of apartheid, black South Africans are legally able to vote. Mandela runs for president.

27 April 1994 **Victory for ANC** With Mandela as its figurehead, the ANC wins with more than 62 per cent of the vote.

10 May 1994 **Mandela's inauguration** Mandela is sworn in as first black president of South Africa before 4,000 politicians and dignitaries.

16 June 1999 **Mbeki follows for the ANC** Thabo Mbeki succeeds Mandela in another victory for the ANC.

5 Dec 2013 **Legacy and Mandela's death** Mandela continues to campaign for international cooperation, but passes away at the age of 95.

Following the political isolation South Africa endured under the apartheid movement, Mandela understood the importance of good relations with world leaders such as US president Bill Clinton

South Africa was ready to embrace change. The general election that followed was a pivotal turning point in South African history. For the first time ever, all races could cast a vote. The election was a heated affair with three main parties in contention (the Inkatha Freedom Party led by Mangosuthu Buthelezi, the National Party led by FW de Klerk and the ANC headed up by Mandela). South Africa's political landscape had changed drastically in the five years and it was permeating every corner of society.

"During school assembly one day, our headmistress went on to congratulate the granddaughters of Madiba (this was Mandela's tribal name and was the one South Africans used most when referring to him)," recalls Gillian. "The two girls were actually at school with me at the time (although they were several grades ahead of me). The headmistress then went on to announce that several schools had been selected to provide a certain number of children to stand at the foot of the Union Building stairs. I don't know how my school selected the 20 children who went, but I was lucky enough to be one of them. It was the most exciting thing that had happened to me all year."

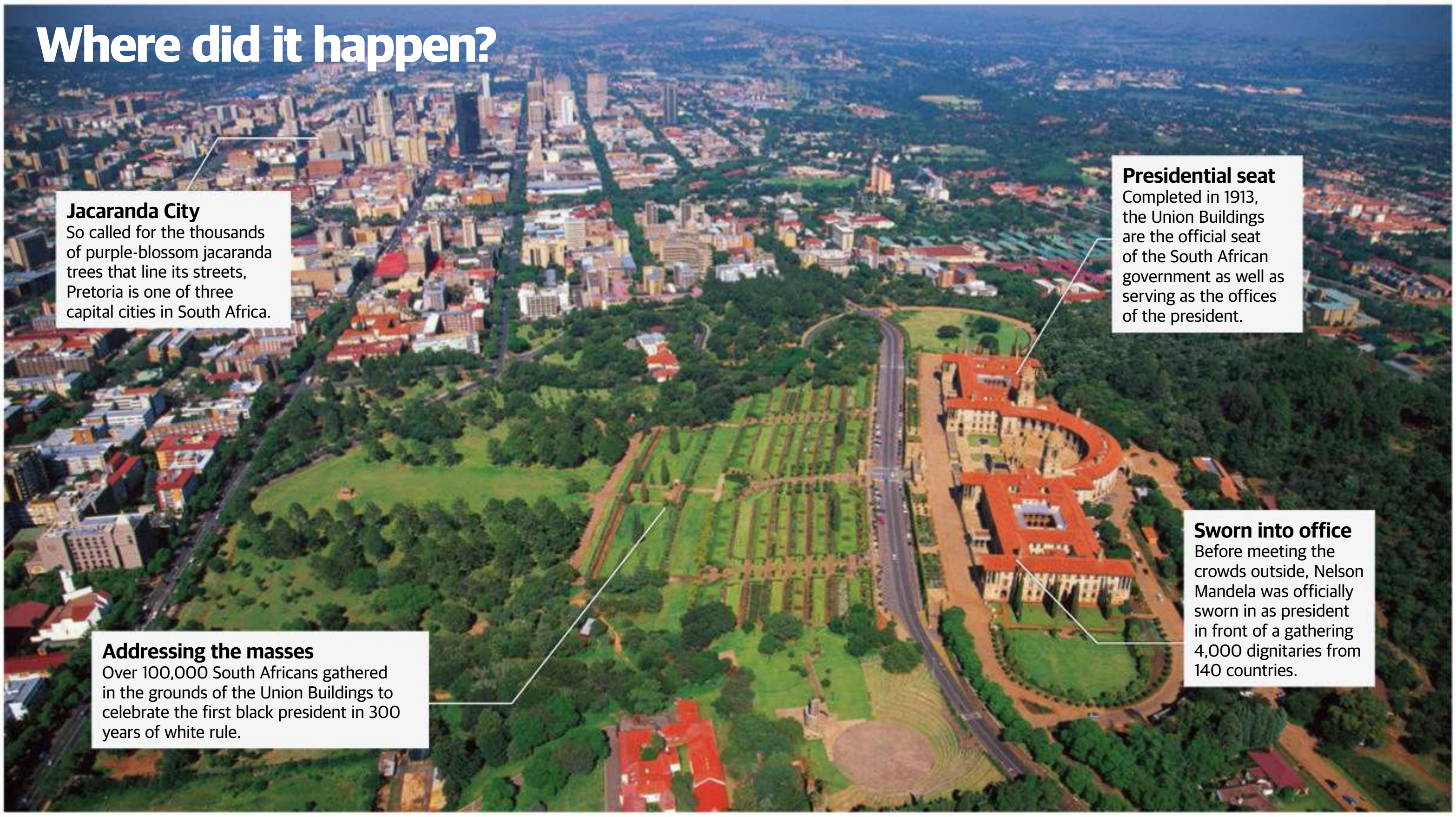
That feeling of excitement and anticipation had swept the whole nation with a record 19,726, 579 votes cast. Mandela's ANC triumphed with a powerful 62 per cent of the vote. It then formed a government of National Unity with its two political rivals and drastically reestablished the political makeup of the National Assembly (South Africa's equivalent of the House of Commons). On the morning of 10 May 1994 Mandela arrived at the Union Buildings (South Africa's governmental seat) in Pretoria and was sworn into office in front of 4,000 politicians and dignitaries from around the world. South Africans of every race and background were celebrating and Gillian can still recall it vividly.

"On the day, the organisers bussed all the selected children to a stadium nearby. There were probably only a couple hundred of us from every walk of life, but it felt like a lot more. We were lined up by height and were

> "All I knew was that this man, climbing out of the car, was going to be someone important"

Nelson Mandela and his wife Winnie after his release from Victor Verster prison

Where did it happen?



Jacaranda City
So called for the thousands of purple-blossom jacaranda trees that line its streets, Pretoria is one of three capital cities in South Africa.

Presidential seat
Completed in 1913, the Union Buildings are the official seat of the South African government as well as serving as the offices of the president.

Sworn into office
Before meeting the crowds outside, Nelson Mandela was officially sworn in as president in front of a gathering 4,000 dignitaries from 140 countries.

Addressing the masses
Over 100,000 South Africans gathered in the grounds of the Union Buildings to celebrate the first black president in 300 years of white rule.

all wearing new T-shirts with the new South African flag, new shorts and new takkies (RSA for 'trainers'). Then we were bussed to the Union Buildings, where people in military uniforms were lining the road. The other dignitaries were already arriving, so we got an interesting view of important people that I didn't recognise at the time."

Stood by the stairs leading down from the front of the Union Buildings, Gillian had a front row seat to the hysteria building around her. Over 100,000 people gathered in the grounds in the front of the buildings, whooping and waving flags in anticipation for Mandela's arrival. Media outlets from across the world gathered nearby, eager to capture two unique moments: the culmination of South Africa's first true democratic election and the inauguration of its first black president. The atmosphere itself around nine-year-old Gillian was charged as Mandela approached the crowds.

"They were getting more restless and alert, making some last minute adjustments. There seemed to be more men in black suits on the road in front of us," says Gillian. "Then a black car pulled up, and the military lady in front of me stood to attention. For a second or two nothing happened, then a man in a black suit came to the car and opened the door. The black children around me were already starting to cheer and dance up and down, and I can remember wondering what they knew that I didn't because they obviously knew who this 'Madiba' person was. I was a little jealous that I had no reason to be as excited as them."

"All I knew was that this man, who was climbing out of the car, was going to be someone important. All of this became unimportant when I saw him. And the first thought I thought was: 'He looks like my oupa (RSA for 'grandfather')!' He was smiling his now famous smile, and began waving to us as we waved our flags and shouted, 'Well done, Madiba!' I knew I could trust him. I knew he was good. I knew with the absolute conviction of a child, that this would be the greatest day of my entire life," recalls Gillian fondly. "And then he was gone, whisked away by the men in suits. To be honest, I felt a little bereft that us children hadn't had more time with him. We were all sad to see him go."

Mandela would then move on and make his speech to the crowds gathered before and the rest of the watching world, citing, "the depth of the pain we all carried in our hearts as we saw our country tear itself apart in a terrible conflict," as one of the driving forces behind his campaign to lead South Africa forward. "Never again shall it be that this beautiful land will again experience the oppression of one by another and suffer the indignity of being the skunk of the world," he remarked. By appointing his predecessor de Klerk as the deputy president, Mandela helped foster a new political ecosystem for South Africa. It was far from perfect, and it would be a long and painful road to finally shake off the shadow of apartheid, but it was a journey Mandela would relish for the rest of his presidency and his life.

"When it was all done, after the speech and the awe-inspiring jet flyover, we were bussed back to school. When I got home, I realised that my father and grandmother had stayed home and watched the entire thing on TV. My father hugged me hard, and my grandmother was crying happy tears. It was at that point that I realised that, small as it was, I had become a part of history."

Mandela's lasting legacy

Mandela's time as South African president may have only lasted five years, but his influence as a peace activist and a symbol for national unity not only left its mark on South Africa, but the rest of the world as a whole. Upon leaving the crowds at the Union Buildings in Pretoria, a mountain of a task lay ahead of him. Mandela not only had to prove South Africa was not another rogue African state ruled by gun runners and warlords, but reassure white South Africans that the country's first black president would not spearhead a campaign of reprisals in the wake of apartheid.

By appointing his predecessor FW de Klerk as deputy president, Mandela was able to initially appease white citizens, while his reluctance to follow the elitist land reforms of Robert Mugabe's new Zimbabwean regime helped accelerate the removal of foreign sanctions. Some of Mandela's critics have accused him of sacrificing economic recovery for social reconciliation, but his reforms and legacy have no doubt helped South Africa in distancing itself from decades of damaging racial segregation.

© Corbis; Getty Images

VICTORY & DEFEAT

How the most pivotal victories in history were planned, and the people who executed them

88 **10 Greatest military leaders**
Meet ten of the world's most impressive military leaders

97 **Anatomy of a Zulu warrior**
How the mighty people decimated enemies to expand their territory

98 **The Assyrian Army**
Inside the cruel fighting machine of the ancient world

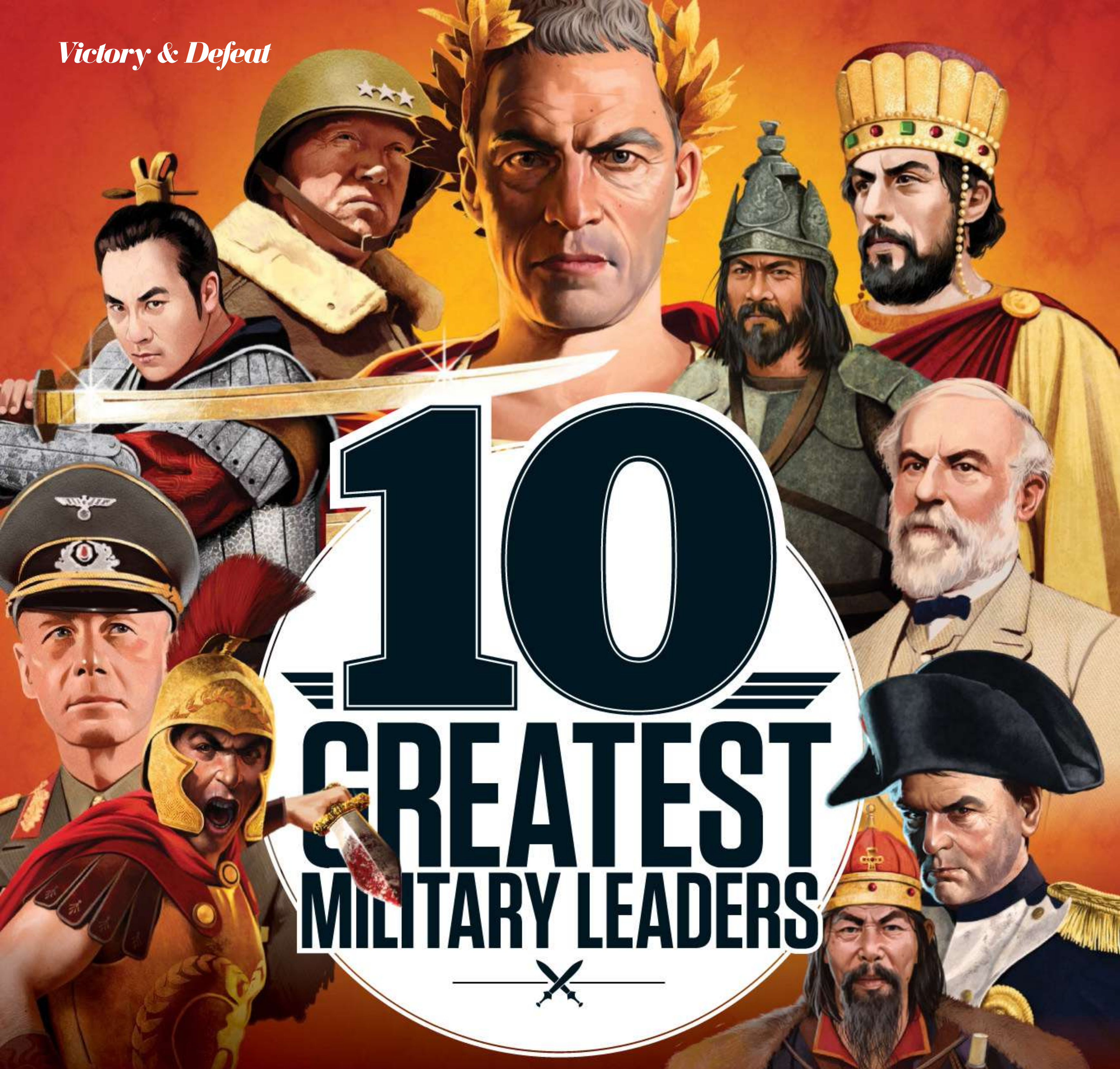
100 **Waterloo: The fall of Napoleon**
200 years on, the final gamble of a man who was willing to risk everything

108 **Enigma: Britain's codebreakers**
How Britain's triumphant codebreakers turned the tide in World War Two

116 **What if... The USA had won the Vietnam War?**
Would Ha Long Bay be a theme park, and would global commercialism still have taken grip?

120 **Fall of the Berlin Wall**
An eyewitness account of Germany's most historic and emotional moment of the late twentieth century

IN THE NAME OF THE PEOPLE



10 GREATEST MILITARY LEADERS

Meet ten of the world's most incredible military strategists who could turn the tide of even the fiercest battle, no matter the odds

History can sometimes be reduced to a series of incredible individuals, whose reputation cuts through the fog of centuries like a searchlight. A great military commander is more than just a great warrior, though; a great commander will be brave and daring but also have the skill to calmly evaluate a battle to outmanoeuvre their opponents. These figures take centre stage in legend and national myth and their statues stand proudly outside palaces and parliament buildings, revered for all time.

The deeds that unite our greatest tacticians are an alchemical mix of great planning, bold tactics, an almost supernatural ability to second-guess the enemy and the confidence to make difficult decisions amid the thunder of battle. They are the commanders who claimed victory when defeat should have been the only option.

Some of these great commanders were seeking the glory of empire-building, like Alexander the Great, the Macedonian warrior king who terrorised the ancient world, and Napoleon Boneparte, the French emperor who shook up the entire balance of power in Europe. Other leaders were desperate defenders against overwhelming odds, such as Tran Hung Dao, the Vietnamese general who waged vicious guerrilla warfare to thwart a Mongol invasion, and Kwon Yul, the Korean commander who led a bloody last-ditch action against a huge samurai army. All of them changed the world with a single command; read on to discover the battles they won thanks to their brilliance – the ones that turned them from leaders to legends.

NAPOLEON

The Battle of Austerlitz

2 December 1805, Czech Republic

Three emperors duel for the future of Europe over frozen fields

On 21 October 1805 Admiral Horatio Nelson defeated the French fleet at Trafalgar, the invasion of Britain apparently defeated. A day earlier, the Armée d'Angleterre near Calais had left camp, but they weren't marching to the English Channel. They were heading east. Britain had won at sea, but France had already lost interest. Aware of the threat being posed by Britain's allies, the Austrian Holy Roman Empire and the powerful Russian Empire, the French emperor Napoleon Bonaparte marched his army east across the Rhine, taking Vienna and pressing on into Moravia, in what is now the Czech Republic.

With the Austrian armies shattered, the 28-year old Russian tsar Alexander took the lead and urged a counter-attack on the French flanks around the town of Austerlitz, which would open up a corridor to liberate Vienna. Napoleon was counting on it. Purposefully thinning the French ranks on the flank, at 8am on 2 December 1805 the Allies took the bait. Three columns of troops hit the smaller French force, but although fewer in number, they were battle-hardened veterans and the patchwork of vineyards, forests, villages and marshes made the Allied advance hard going.

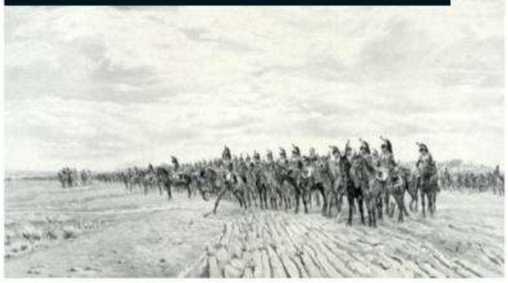
Early victories in the cold winter light were quickly lost to French counter-attacks before being regained again. Little progress seemed to be made by either side, but this bloody ballet was being danced to Napoleon's tune and the Allies had gradually been committing more and more of their men to the brutal fighting. Watching from a hill above the battlefield, Napoleon ordered the steel jaws of the trap sprung: "One sharp blow and the war is over."

Under the sudden boom of the French artillery, Napoleon's heavy cavalry lanced right through the heart of the now-thinned Allied line and the panicked tsar fled. Continuing their thunderous advance, the French heavy cavalry swept down and encircled the enemy.

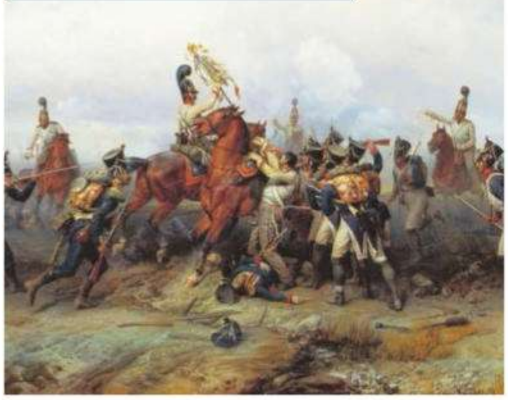
The battle continued to rage bitterly over the frozen ground, but its outcome was decided – Napoleon had swept away the numerical advantage of the enemy, bogging them down in myriad smaller confrontations. Approximately 9,000 French troops had been killed or wounded, compared to 15,000 Russians and Austrians – and another 12,000 of the enemy captured. Tsar Alexander was found by his generals crying under a tree miles from the battlefield. "We are babies in the hands of a giant", wept the tsar.

Was it genius?

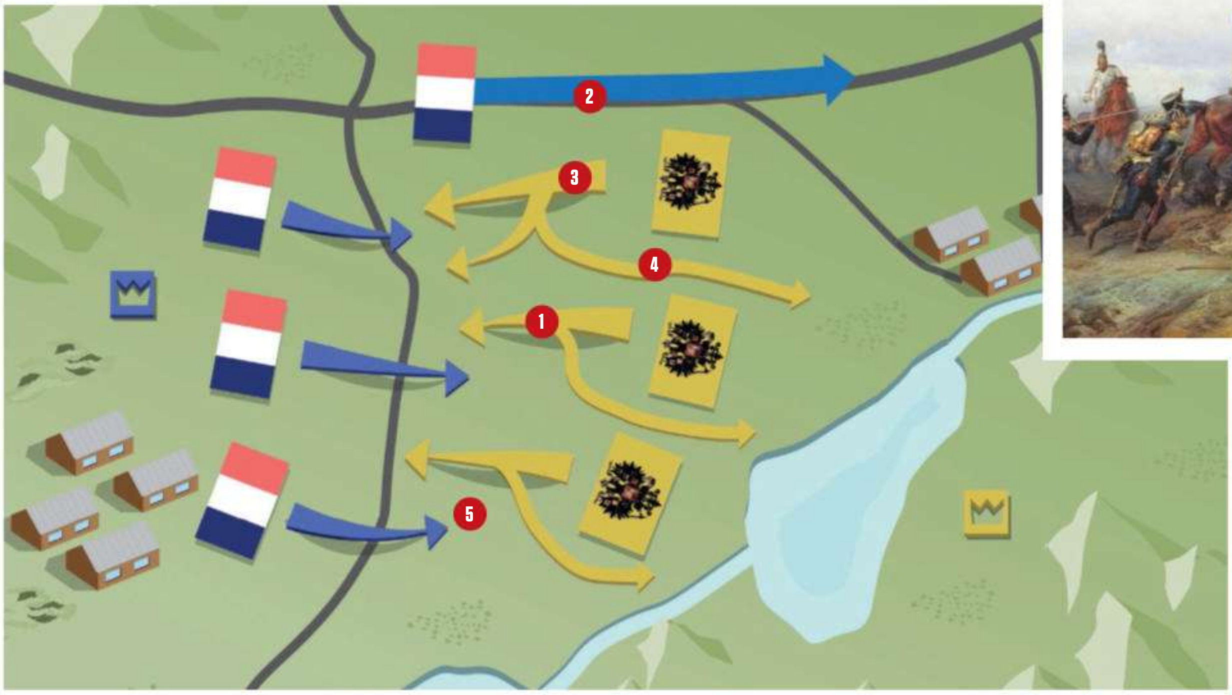
Austerlitz was the perfect example of Napoleon's sound strategy on both the battlefield and in politics – cutting down superior numbers and crippling his rivals on the continent.



French cavalry take up positions before the battle



Russian cavalry seize a French banner



1 THE ALLIES ATTACK The combined Russian and Austrian force begins its advance, starting in the village of Tenitz and moving up the line. Despite briefly throwing the French back from Tenitz, the advance of the other Allied columns is slow and the French hold the line.

2 BATTLE FOR THE HIGH GROUND With the Allied advance largely failing, the French push forward and secure the strategically vital Pratzen Heights. Tsar Alexander fails to recognise the significance and, seeing the French have come to a halt, withdraws his units from the high ground.

3 THE RUSSIANS FIGHT BACK The tsar dispatches his brother, Grand Duke Constantine, with the elite Russian Imperial Guard to attack Pratzen Heights, taking a standard from the French. Napoleon sends his own heavy cavalry in and the Russians are defeated.

4 THE ALLIES RETREAT With relatively little fighting along the road, the French now advance rapidly and after hard fighting the Russian forces start to retreat. Elsewhere on the battlefield, the Allies are forced to begin an ordered retreat, but with no pause in the fighting.

5 THE KILLING BLOW With the battle still raging around Tenitz in the south and the rest of the Allies being forced back, French troops sweep toward the remaining enemy forces, catching them in a pincer movement. Allied troops panic and flee, with many drowning in the frozen ponds.

FRENCH ARMY	V	ALLIED ARMY
Infantry 57,000		Infantry 78,400
Cavalry 10,000		Cavalry 7,000
Artillery 157		Artillery 318

Innovation: ★★★☆☆
Boldness: ★★★★☆
Prudence: ★★★★☆
Planning: ★★★☆☆

KEY: Infantry Cavalry Artillery

TRÂN HUNG ĐAO
The Battle of Bach Đang

Date unknown, 1288, Vietnam

The Mongol invasion of Vietnam ends at the point of the stake

By 1288, the rampant Mongol Horde had not only left Europe and Asia awash with blood, but had taken over China as the new Yuan Dynasty of Emperor Kublai Khan. Vietnam had seen off numerous Chinese invasions, and were determined that the Mongols wouldn't have any more success than the Chinese had.

Unable to meet the huge Mongol force of Prince Toghan directly in battle, Vietnamese general Trân Hung Đao led his small forces out of the vulnerable cities and waged a savage guerrilla campaign from deep within the jungle, launching night raids on Mongol positions and leading them into the mud where their devastating cavalry would get bogged down.

Eventually Toghan was forced to send for supplies, dispatching half his force up the Bach Đang river where they could sail back to China. Harried all the way by guerrillas, the combined Chinese and Mongol navy was confronted with a smaller force of Vietnamese boats. The Mongols gave chase to this apparently easy prey before they suddenly ran onto a bed of bamboo stakes tipped with iron spikes that lurked beneath the water. Planted by Trân Hung Đao, the low tide had made them deadly to all but the flat-bottomed Vietnamese boats.

With his enemy trapped - men as well as their vessels were caught on the savage stakes - Trân unleashed fireboats toward the helpless enemy while his archers on the banks of the river rained down flaming arrows. The defeat was total and the Mongols' third attempted invasion of Vietnam would be their last.

VIETNAMESE V MONGOLS

Innovation: ★★★★★
Boldness: ★★★★☆
Prudence: ★★☆☆☆
Planning: ★★★★★

Was it genius?

Trân Hung Đao not only invented modern guerrilla warfare as we know it, but took it to the water, proving that even the Mongol Horde had something to be afraid of.

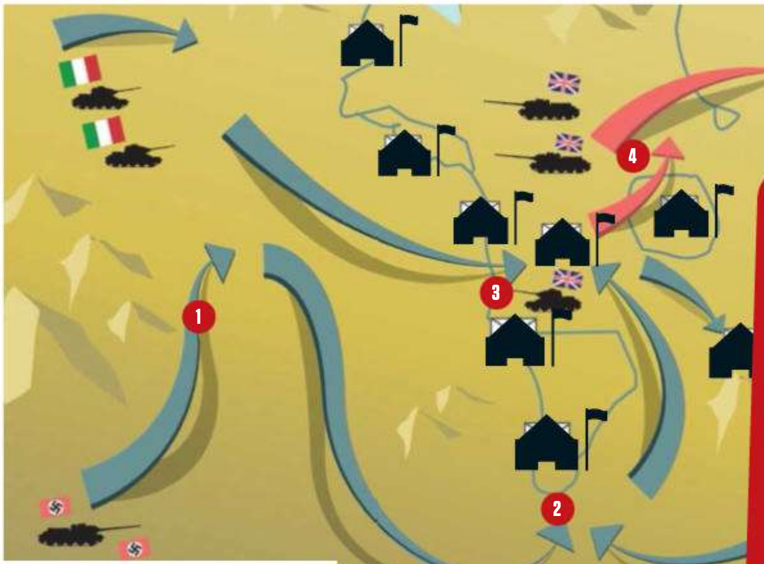
---

1 **THE AXIS FEINT**
Italian infantry and artillery launch a massive attack on the northern portion of the Galaza Line, accompanied by a number of tanks from Rommel's Afrika Korps and the Italian XX Motorised Corps. To the south of all that, Rommel appears to be leading the remaining units northward.

2 **ROMMEL JUMPS THE FENCE**
Under the cover of night Rommel's combined Afrika Korps, the XX Motorised Corps and the 90th Light Afrika Division infantry all circle back and duck under the Galaza Line around the box at Bir Hacheim, hoping to catch the enemy unawares.

3 **THE CHAIN IS SEVERED**
While the French continue to fight at Bir Hacheim, Rommel moves north, hitting the British 1st Armoured Division. Despite some victories, lack of supplies force Rommel to pull back. Once resupplied, the Afrika Korps is able to link up with the Italian X Corps and the Sidi Muftah box is taken.

4 **THE BATTLE IS WON**
Bir Hacheim continues to fight, but in the north the British commander concentrates on defences around Tobruk. Rommel sends forces north to the Knightsbridge box – a major communications hub – and east toward the Bir el Harmat box. Both are overrun, command is shattered and a retreat begins.



AXIS ARMIES V ALLIED ARMIES

Innovation: ★★★☆☆
Boldness: ★★★★☆
Prudence: ★★☆☆☆
Planning: ★★★☆☆

ROMMEL
The Battle of Gazala

26 May - 21 June 1942, Libya

The Desert Fox smashes Britain's tank army into the sand

The war in North Africa had turned into a stalemate. The British and their Allies, outnumbering the Germans and Italians in both manpower (110,000 men to 80,000) and horsepower (840 tanks to 560), were hunkered down behind the Gazala Line, an 80-kilometre (50-mile) network of 'boxes', defensive points with barb wire and land mines that stretched from the village of Ain el Gazala on the coast to the town of Bir Hakeim deep inland.

Colonel-General Erwin Rommel, 'the Desert Fox', struck the north of the Galaza Line in the early hours of 26 May 1942, with Axis units heading north to join the main assault. Under the cover of night, those forces doubled back and, led by Rommel himself, swept under Bir Hakeim and hit the last box in the chain at 8.15am on 27 May. Fiercely defended by a Free French force that would hold out until 11 June, it looked like Rommel's gambit was unravelling. With a supply convoy arriving on 29 May though Rommel was able to push further up the line and smash into the box at Sidi Muftah from the west while an Italian force attacked from the east - Allied lines had been cut in two.

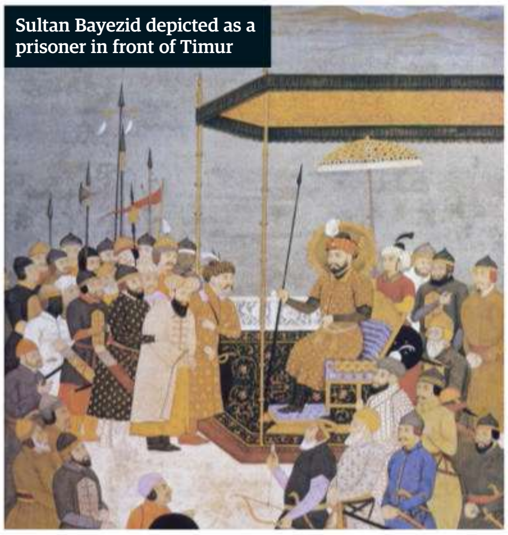
With the isolated Bir Hakeim box doomed and the Allies unable to send reinforcements, the British began to pull back to their base at Tobruk, some 60 kilometres (37 miles) from Gazala. That decision turned Rommel's victory from a possibility into a probability, allowing him to take the Knightsbridge box on 13 June and throw the Allied lines of communication into total chaos.

All chance of an organised defence collapsed and the surviving boxes eventually fell, with Tobruk joining them on 21 June. British armour in North Africa had been almost completely obliterated. "What difference does it make if you have two tanks to my one, when you spread them out and let me smash them in detail?" Rommel explained to a British POW as burning armour cooled in the breeze.

Was it genius?

It may have taken longer than he expected, but Rommel's plan unfolded perfectly. Seeing the weaknesses in the Gazala Line, he pulled the defences apart and rendered numerical superiority meaningless.

Australian troops prepare to defend Tobruk from Rommel's advance


Sultan Bayezid depicted as a prisoner in front of Timur

TIMUR
The Battle of Ankara

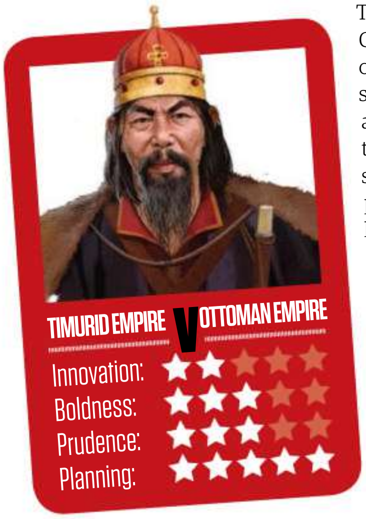
20 July 1402, Turkey

Genghis Khan's heir defeats the Ottomans with dirty tricks

Self-proclaimed successor to Genghis Khan, Timur set about rebuilding his ancestor's empire from his heartland in what is now Kazakhstan. The expanding borders of 'the Sword of Islam' brought him into contact with the Ottoman Empire, so in 1402 Timur decided to strike against Sultan Bayezid just as he himself was laying siege to the waning Byzantine Empire's capital at Constantinople. Hearing of Timurid's advance, Bayezid lifted the siege and turned his army east to meet Timur, but they missed each other. Timur's army arrived at Ankara so soon after the Ottomans had left that they took advantage of the vacated campsite.

As the enemy began marching back to Ankara across the hot Anatolia plateau, Timurid engineers dammed up the Curbuk creek. As the Ottoman forces arrived, thirsty and weary from their march, the Timurid army gathered on the banks of the stream. The first fresh water supply the Ottoman soldiers had seen for miles ran dry before them in what was a tactical masterstroke from Timur.

Despite their thirst, the Ottomans numbers almost overrun Timur's army and a devastating Ottoman cavalry charge threw their right flank back. But around midday, Ottoman strength began to deflate and the tide began to turn. With both armies made up of Turkic soldiers from Central Asia, many on the Ottoman side changed sides as Timur had the mountains surrounded to prevent escape for his vanquished foe.


TIMURID EMPIRE V OTTOMAN EMPIRE

Innovation: ★★☆☆☆
Boldness: ★★★☆☆
Prudence: ★★★☆☆
Planning: ★★★★★

Was it genius?

Timur may have been a Mongol Khan, but he was no barbarian and used engineering and cunning to overcome the Near East's mightiest empire.

PATTON
El Guettar

23 March - 3 April 1943, Tunisia

Patton redeems the US Army on the rocks of North Africa

Freshly posted to head the US II Corps in North Africa following the disastrous Battle of Kasserine Pass – a humiliating baptism of fire for the newly arrived American forces – Lieutenant-General George S Patton was determined to rescue the slightly bruised reputation of the US Army.

On 17 and 18 March 1943, the 1st Infantry Division and 1st Ranger Battalion took the town of El Guettar near the eastern dorsal of the jagged Atlas Mountains. Emboldened by their victory at Kasserine Pass, on 6am on 23 March, 50 German tanks from the 10th Panzer Division, accompanied by elite Panzergrenadiers, swept from their defensive positions in the mountain pass toward the US positions in the El Guettar valley.

Quickly overrunning the US front lines, everything seemed to be going the way of the Führer's finest except one small but vital 'but' - the plan of attack had been intercepted by the Signal Corps six hours earlier, giving Patton time to prepare. The 10th Panzer Division found out the hard way as it rolled straight into a minefield. Then, with a thunderous boom, the heavy artillery and M10 tank destroyers hidden in the hills overlooking the road to El Guettar opened fire.

As the Nazis retreated, they left 30 of the 50 tanks behind them as ugly hunks of burning, twisted metal. US infantry had thrown back an assault from battle-hardened motorised regiments, the terror of Rommel's North African army, and they'd made it look like a duck hunt.

Pressing the advantage, Patton advanced into the mountains, smashing through the Axis defences on Hill 772 and turning their guns on Hill 369 when orders came in from the British line to secure Hill 772 – 16 kilometres (ten miles) further behind the lines. The larger campaign ended in a stalemate as the Allies ultimately failed to outflank the Axis line, but it was a triumph for Patton, who had proven the US Army a force to be reckoned with.

Was it genius?

Though Patton built his myth on opportunistic dashes, El Guettar proved he could play a waiting game too, laying a trap so effective that it obliterated a battle-hardened Panzer division.

A US soldier hands out cigarettes to Italian prisoners in the aftermath of El Guettar

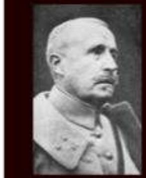
> "With a thunderous boom, the heavy artillery and M10 tank destroyers hidden in the hills opened fire"

US ARMY V AXIS ARMY

Innovation: ★★☆☆☆
Boldness: ★★★☆☆
Prudence: ★★★☆☆
Planning: ★★★★☆

Three of history's most disastrous military commanders

General Robert Nivelle



Force commanded: French

Author of the poorly planned Nivelle Offensive in April and May 1917, Nivelle promised victory in 48 hours. The whole terrible plan had been leaked to the Germans in advance, and despite outnumbering the enemy two to one, 187,000 British and French troops were killed, wounded and captured with zero gains. The operation ended with the French army threatening to mutiny and Nivelle was sacked.

Antonio Lopez de Santa Anna

Force commanded: Mexican

Despite his victory at the Alamo in 1836, almost everything the 'Napoleon of the West' touched turned to humiliation. One infamous battle lasted only 15 minutes and ended with his entire surviving force captured, including Santa Anna himself, who was found wearing a private's uniform and hiding in a marsh. His further misadventures included losing his leg and surrendering to the French in the Pastry War of 1838-9.

General Douglas MacArthur

Force commanded: USA

Despite a formidable reputation, MacArthur's thinking wasn't exactly guided by strategic imperatives. After the crushing US defeat in the Philippines in which he forbade his men from withdrawing (and then withdrew himself) in 1942, he worked to reclaim the island for the sake of his ego. The ensuing Battle of Leyte Gulf was the largest Naval campaign of WWII and resulted in the death of 2,800 Allied servicemen, but its strategic value is questionable.

JULIUS CAESAR

The Battle of Alesia

September 52 BCE, France

Gaul falls to Rome in Caesar's incredible double-siege

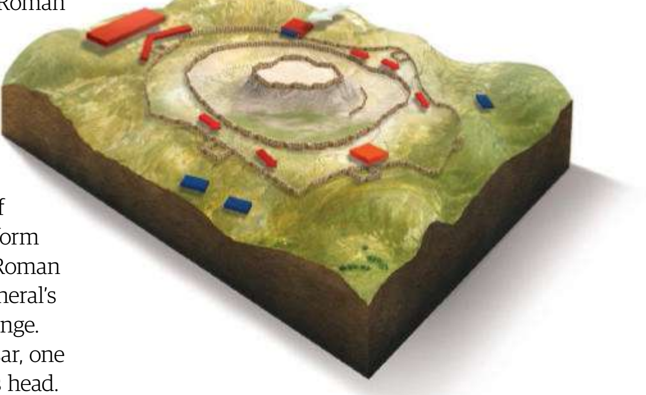
All that lay between Julius Caesar and glory was the great wooden hill fort of Alesia, the centre of resistance against the Roman invasion of what is now France. Not only did the defenders, led by the Gallic chieftain Vercingetorix, outnumber the Roman legions 80,000 to 60,000, but a relief force of around 100,000 more Gauls and assorted other Celtic tribes were on their way. His forces were seriously outnumbered.

The Romans quickly encircled the fort with their own wooden stockade 18 kilometres (11 miles) long, complete with pits and watchtowers. As the relief force camped nearby, Caesar ordered the construction of a second 21-kilometre (13-mile) long wall outside the first, facing outward with four cavalry posts. The Romans were preparing to be besieged while they themselves lay siege.

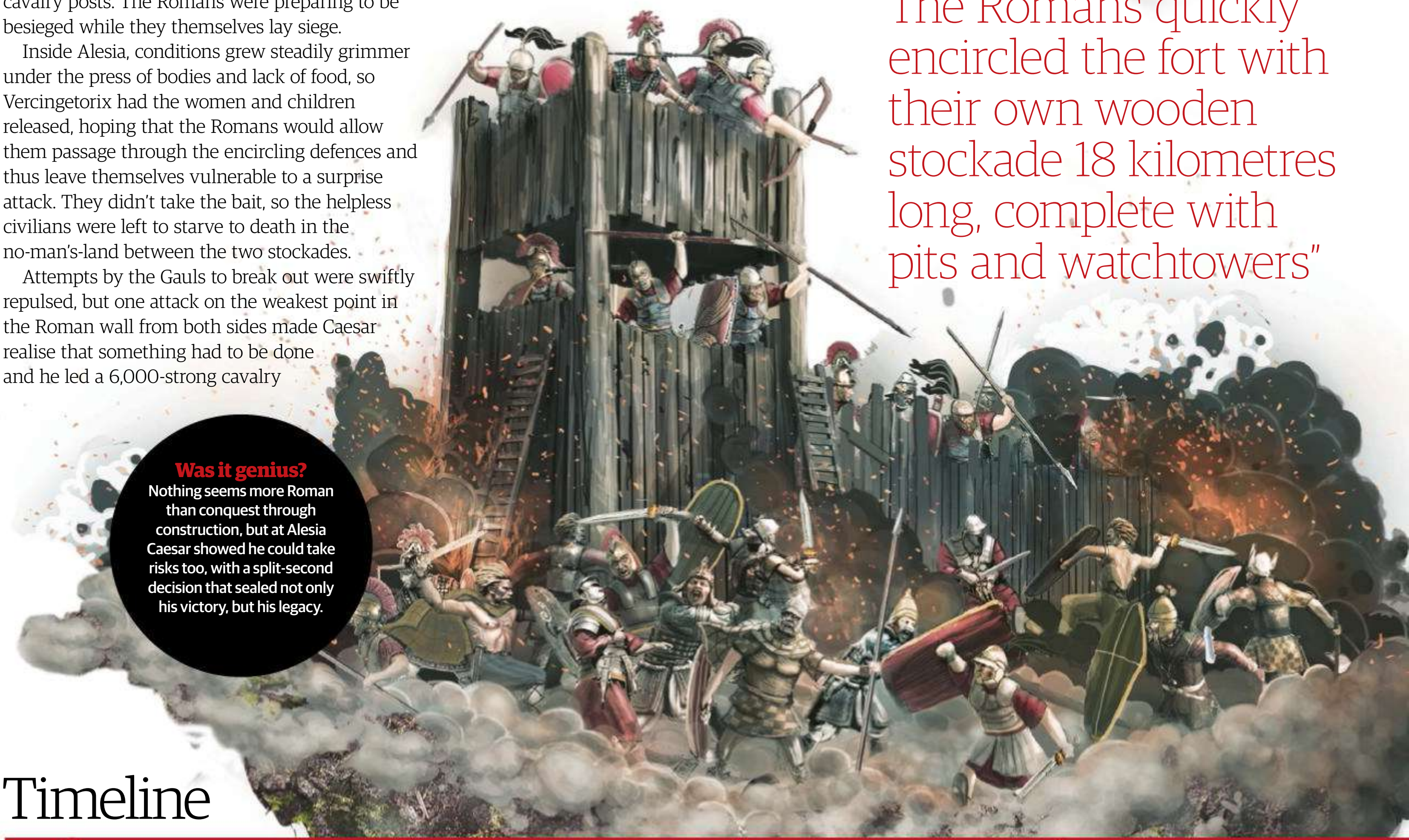
Inside Alesia, conditions grew steadily grimmer under the press of bodies and lack of food, so Vercingetorix had the women and children released, hoping that the Romans would allow them passage through the encircling defences and thus leave themselves vulnerable to a surprise attack. They didn't take the bait, so the helpless civilians were left to starve to death in the no-man's-land between the two stockades.

Attempts by the Gauls to break out were swiftly repulsed, but one attack on the weakest point in the Roman wall from both sides made Caesar realise that something had to be done and he led a 6,000-strong cavalry force to surprise the attacking relief force from the rear. Spurred on by Caesar's boldness, the Roman defenders on the inner wall held fast against the Gauls, who retreated from the sheer madness unfolding before them.

The double wall around Alesia wasn't a wall, it was a vice-like chokehold; the Gauls' only option left was to surrender rather than starve. The Roman conquest of Gaul was complete and would last in one form or another for 500 years. Back home, the Roman Republic's refusal to honour its greatest general's greatest victory swiftly led to a regime change. Rome was now an empire, and Julius Caesar, one of its greatest military leaders, would be its head.


Caesar's double-siege of Alesia is among the greatest battle tactics ever used

> "The Romans quickly encircled the fort with their own wooden stockade 18 kilometres long, complete with pits and watchtowers"



Was it genius?
Nothing seems more Roman than conquest through construction, but at Alesia Caesar showed he could take risks too, with a split-second decision that sealed not only his victory, but his legacy.

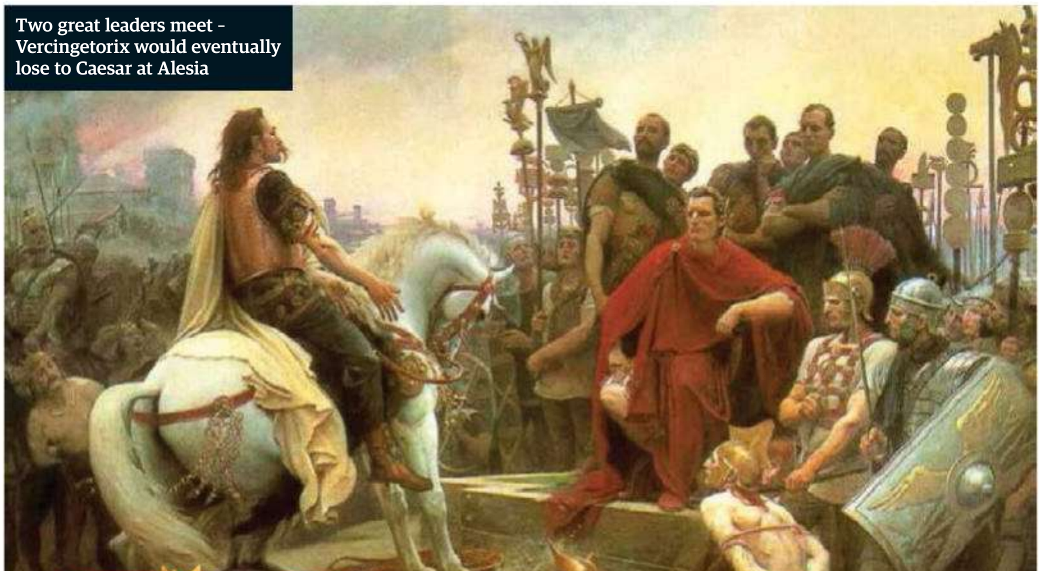
Timeline

① **THE GAULS STRIKE**
The Gaul relief force led by the chieftain Commius hits the external wall at the same time as Vercingetorix orders an attack on the inner wall. Successfully repulsed, the Gauls attack again at night and Caesar is forced to withdraw his men from parts of the stockade.

② **THE CAVALRY RETALIATES**
With the Roman defences imperilled by the night attack, Mark Antony and Gaius Trebonius ride out with cavalry and repulse the assault. Vercingetorix's forces are delayed by the trenches dug by the Romans in front of the inner wall and by the time these have been filled, the attack has been seen off.

③ **THE WEAK SPOT**
The Roman defences have only one obvious weak spot, a point where the two walls are forced together by the river and the hills. Vercingetorix's cousin Vercassivellaunos leads a massive attack from the outside, while the army from Alesia attack from the inside.

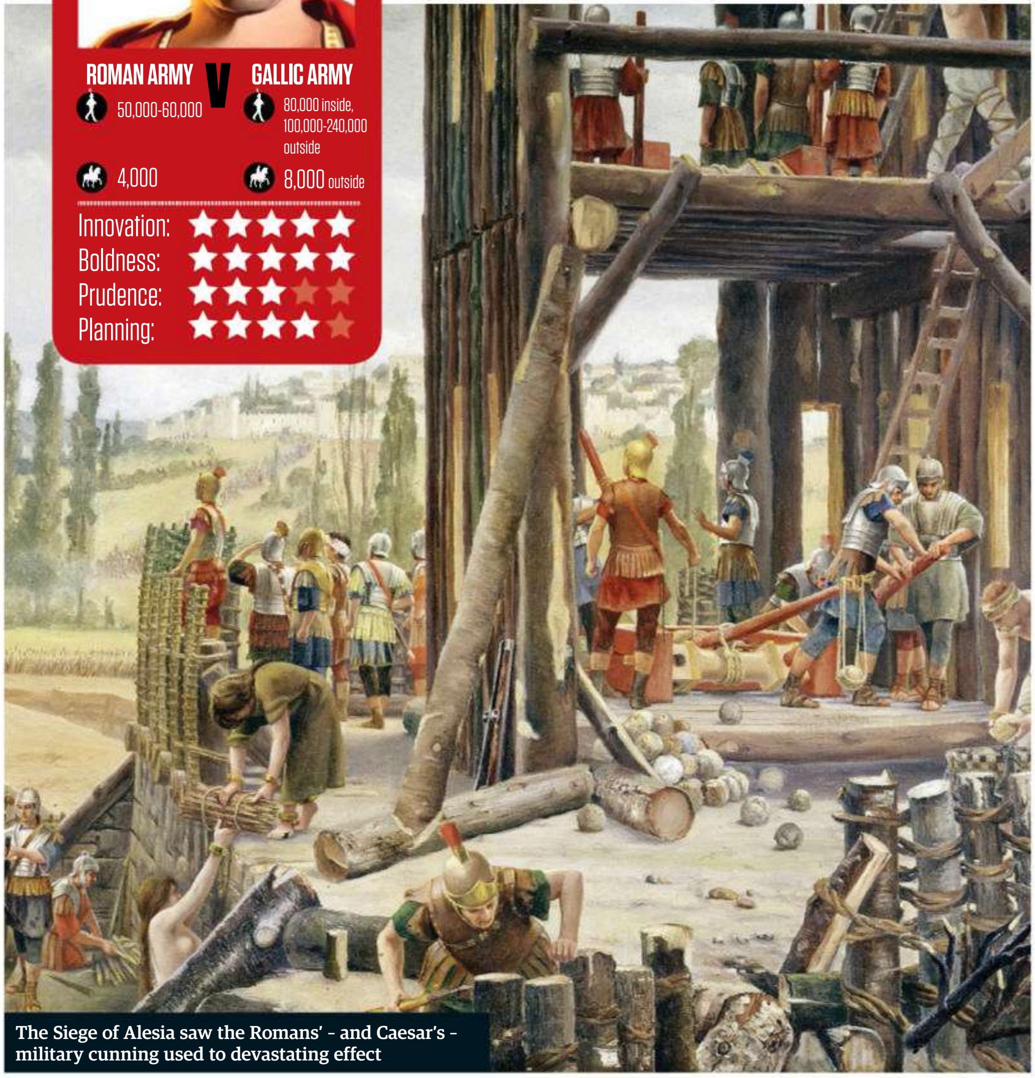
④ **CAESAR GAMBLES EVERYTHING**
With the Roman defenders faltering under the combined assault, Caesar saddles up and leads 6,000 horsemen into the rear of Vercassivellaunos' relief force. Despite superior numbers, they're panicked by the sudden cavalry charge and the assault crumbles.



Two great leaders meet - Vercingetorix would eventually lose to Caesar at Alesia

ROMAN ARMY	GALLIC ARMY
50,000-60,000	80,000 inside, 100,000-240,000 outside
4,000	8,000 outside

Innovation: ★★★★★
Boldness: ★★★★★
Prudence: ★★★☆☆
Planning: ★★★★☆



The Siege of Alesia saw the Romans' - and Caesar's - military cunning used to devastating effect

KWON YUL

The Siege of Haengju

12 February 1593, Korea

Korea's reluctant general takes the samurai to the river of hell

By early-1593, the Japanese samurai army of Toyotomi Hideyoshi had crushed almost all Korean resistance and looked poised to plough on into China - only one thing stood in his way: a hastily constructed wooden fortress a few hours' march from the occupied capital.

Inside this fort was 55-year-old civil-servant-turned-military-genius Kwon Yul, famous for defeating the Japanese in two earlier battles. Commanding only 2,300 troops, Kwon had been unable to halt the Japanese advance on Seoul, instead holing up on a hill above the Han River. With sheer cliffs either side, only the north was approachable, so he set about building a stockade of earth and logs with the men he had - some were warrior monks, but most were farmers.

Needing to crush this resistance before they could move into China, over 40,000 Japanese soldiers clad in terrifying masked helmets and carrying fluttering red banners marched from Seoul. Their fearsome demeanour was in stark contrast to the poorly armed and largely untrained defenders, but Kwon Yul had chosen his battlefield well. Very well indeed.

"The steep incline to the fortress made the Japanese musket fire ineffective"

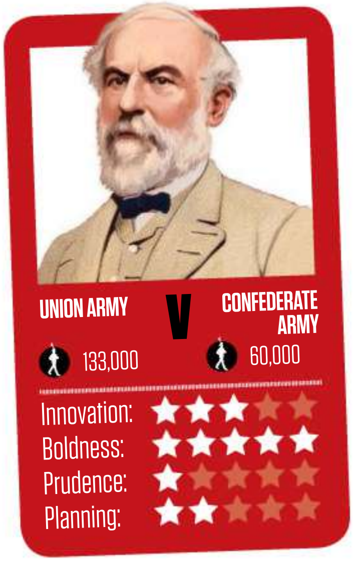
The steep incline to the fortress made the Japanese musket fire ineffective, but multiplied the effect of the defenders' return fire, which they released in perfectly concentrated volleys in time with Kwon's drum beats, driving the Japanese back three times. The fourth time they made a breach in the outer wall, and the fifth time bloody hand-to-hand fighting took place in the inner wall. A seventh attack penetrated the inner wall, but by then it was too late. As the sun dipped toward the horizon, Japanese losses had been too great. As they set the bodies alight on the Han River, one Japanese general looked back and compared it to 'sanzu no kawa' - the river of hell.

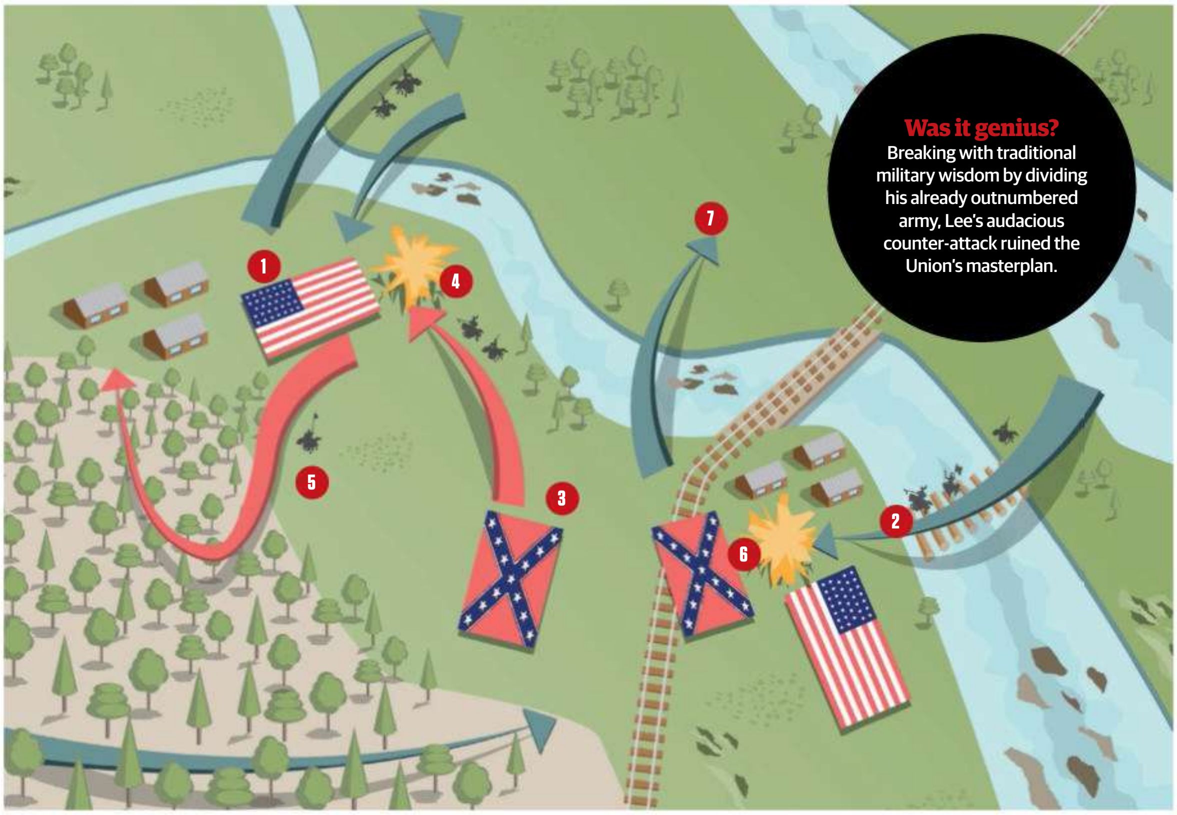
Was it genius?

Kwon Yul took his limited resources and used his environment to win one of the most significant Korean victories of the Imjin War of 1592-1598.

JAPANESE ARMY V KOREAN FORCES

Innovation: ★★☆☆☆
Boldness: ★★☆☆☆
Prudence: ★★★★☆
Planning: ★★★★☆





Was it genius?
Breaking with traditional military wisdom by dividing his already outnumbered army, Lee's audacious counter-attack ruined the Union's masterplan.

1 THE UNION SWINGS IT SCYTHE
As 10,000 cavalry under Major-General George Stoneman swoop around to the Confederate's rear, cutting off their supply lines, Major-General Joseph Hooker and 70,000 infantry cross the Rappanhannock River and take up positions at the small hamlet of Chancellorsville.

2 MARCH ON FREDERICKSBURG
After bridging the Rappahannock south of Fredericksburg with pontoons, Major-General John Sedgwick and 40,000 men take up positions outside the town. Lee decides to confront the larger force head-on and leaves 11,000 men under Brigadier-General William Barksdale and Major-General Jubal A Early to hold the town.

3 FOG OF WAR
Taking advantage of the cover of heavy fog, Lee dispatches the bulk of the Confederate force – a total of 40,000 men – west under Lieutenant-General Stonewall Jackson and Major-General Richard H Anderson, where they begin digging in along the road to Chancellorsville.

4 STONEWALL STRIKES FIRST
Ordered to defend his position, Jackson advances instead and hits the Union forces hard in a clearing on the edge of the forest. Hooker, surprised by the sudden assault, retreats to Chancellorsville and takes up defensive positions around hastily constructed log barriers.

5 THE FOREST SIEGE
Lee divides his army once again, sending Jackson and 28,000 men to attack the Union's right flanks while Lee himself holds the road with 13,000 men. Only two cannons protect Hooker's right and the Confederates come screaming from the forest as the Union troops are sitting down to dinner. A series of Confederate assaults push Hooker further back.

6 THE TIDE TURNS – BRIEFLY
Back at Fredericksburg, Sedgwick finally advances, quickly breaking through the small number of defenders Lee has left behind. Despite their advance, they're eventually thrown back and unable to relieve Hooker's besieged Union force. With Hooker no longer a threat, Lee peels off some of his men to reinforce Major-General Early.

7 SEDGWICK IS TRAPPED
Robert Lee's reinforcements encircle Sedgwick, like Hooker before him and the general retreats back across the Rappahannock over Banks's Ford. Hooker withdraws too, back across the ford he originally came in by. The Union had lost this battle.

ROBERT E LEE

The Battle of Chancellorsville

30 April - 6 May 1863, USA

The Confederate general turns an ambush back on itself

General Robert E Lee had proved himself the greatest Confederate commander of the American Civil War, and so the Union, smarting from their recent defeats, devised a plan to defeat their menace. Outnumbering the Confederates over two to one (the Union was fielding 133,868 men to the rebels' 60,892), the Union forces divided into two, leaving 30,000 troops at Fredericksburg while the bulk of the army – led by Major-General Hooker – crossed the Rappahannock fords on 30 April to attack Lee's vulnerable left flank.

With even the individual armies eclipsing his own entire force, Lee diminished his numbers even further by sending 30,000 men with Lieutenant-General 'Stonewall' Jackson on a three-kilometre (two-mile) loop to attack the right flank of the new force, while Lee himself led 12,000 men to hold them head-on. The remainder of the force were to remain within sight of Fredericksburg to hold off the enemy that was still stationed there.

With the Union troops still in the dense woodland around the river where their artillery could yet come to bear, Jackson launched his surprise attack on 2 May. Taking 4,000 prisoners, Jackson's daring assault forced the enemy back three kilometres (two miles) toward the river, where they decided to form a defensive line around the small hamlet of Chancellorsville.

Back at Fredericksburg, Major-General Sedgewick disobeyed an order to advance on the 18,000-odd Confederate troops still facing him, believing his force of 30,000 to be outnumbered. With Sedgewick's blunder buying them time, on 3 May the Confederates hammered Hooker's line, forcing them back past Chancellorsville and toward the ford. Meanwhile, Sedgewick had finally begun to advance, but it was far too late. Hooker was now beaten, and Lee swung back toward Fredericksburg where the Union troops found themselves overwhelmed and defeated.

Weary Union troops rest at Chancellorsville

Confederate dead on the outskirts of Fredericksburg

DAVID IV

The Battle of Didgori

12 August 1121, Georgia

The Georgian king delivers one of the unsung victories of the Crusades

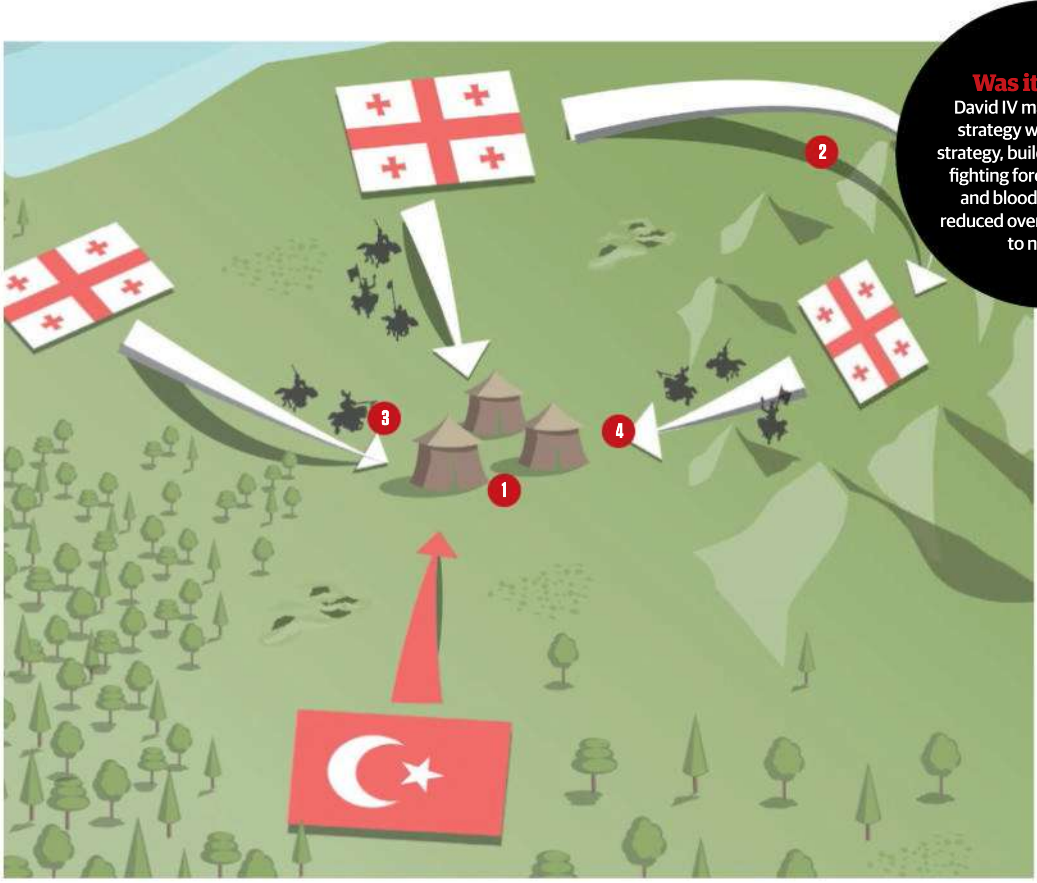
In the tense peace between the First and Second Crusades, a small Christian kingdom on the Seljuk Sultanate's northeastern edge caused concern among the Muslim kingdoms along the Mediterranean. As the Seljuk Turks spread into the Caucasus, Georgia's young king David IV married himself into the tribal Cuman-Kipchak people, settling them in his kingdom and converting them to Christianity. These formed the core of the new army which David used to launch raids into Seljuk territory as he refused to pay tribute to the Turks.

An incredible force of approximately 400,000 men marched toward Georgia to put the upstart Christian monarch in his place. Fielding only 55,600 men, David IV needed to seize the momentum. After blockading the road behind them with logs to ensure retreat wasn't an option, David IV split his army into two parts, quietly placing one force on the high ground near the Seljuk camp, while leading the other personally. Then he sent 200 of his cavalry to the camp to act as though they wished to defect.

Once the Turks had let them into the heart of their force and the generals were on hand to accept their surrender, the Georgian strike force suddenly lashed out, cutting down the Seljuk leaders and soldiers who had gathered to watch. Simultaneously, the force on the high ground charged down into the camp's unguarded flanks while David IV's force attacked from the front.

With their leaders slain and enemy cavalry and troops rampaging within their camp, the panicked Turks fled - the sheer size of the escaping foe taking the Georgians three days to hunt down and slaughter at their leisure. Armenian historian Mateos of Urfa recalled that: "terrible and savage slaughter of the enemy troops ensued and the corpses filled up the rivers and covered all valleys and cliffs."

"David IV split his army into two parts, quietly placing one force on the high ground, while leading the other"



Was it genius?
David IV married political strategy with battlefield strategy, building an effective fighting force for a sudden and bloody victory that reduced overwhelming odds to nothing.

1 THE ENEMY ASSEMBLE The forces of the Turkish Seljuk Empire march into Georgia from neighbouring Armenia. Largely made up of troops from local Islamic countries under the Seljuk umbrella and led by Ilghazi, a veteran of the Crusades and former governor of Baghdad, they set up camp in the Didgori valley.

2 DAVID SETS A TRAP In a bold move, David IV splits his already outnumbered army, sending a small force under the command of his son Demetrius to hide in the nearby hills overlooking the Seljuk camp. Meanwhile, a smaller force is detached from the rest of the army, which remains under the control of the Georgian king.

3 THE BAIT IS TAKEN The smaller force rides out to the Seljuk encampment, offering to defect. Well used to regional armies having second thoughts at the sight of a vast Turkish army, the Georgians are allowed into the heart of the camp to meet the army's commanders. There they suddenly attack, creating instant panic and chaos.

4 THE TRAP IS SPRUNG While the Seljuk camp turns in on itself. Demetrius' forces attack the Seljuk flanks and David IV leads the rest of his army in a furious charge at the ill-prepared enemy. Leaving only one direction left for the enemy, they panic and flee the battlefield where they can be slaughtered by the pursuing Georgian cavalry.

The site of the battle is commemorated today with a set of memorials

GEORGIAN ARMY 55,000 **V** **SELJUK ARMY** 400,000

Innovation: ★★★☆☆
Boldness: ★★★★★
Prudence: ★☆☆☆☆
Planning: ★★☆☆☆

ALEXANDER THE GREAT

The Battle of Issus

5 November 333 BCE, Turkey

The Persian Empire crumbles under the hammer of Ancient Greece

Before Alexander the Great, the last independent city states of Greece had been encircled holdouts against the might of the Persian Empire. After the great military leader they became the centre of an empire that stretched from the mountains of his Macedonian homeland to the sweltering jungles of northern India.

Before this though, Persian control over Anatolia (modern-day Turkey) had to be broken. It all hinged on the coast, where the powerful Persian fleet could still turn the tide against the Greeks. Persia's Emperor Darius III led the army himself with the intention of linking up with the navy around the Gulf of Issus. Alexander's force of 40,000 gathered on the banks on the Issus with the Mediterranean on their left and the jagged mountains of the Amanus on their right. Over 100,000 Persians spread out before them, the number and make-up of the rank and file troops purposefully obscured by a line of cavalry.

Greek archers advanced through the foothills on the right to pepper the Persian lines. Unable to simply sit idly under a needling rain of arrows, the Persian cavalry withdraw, exposing the ranks behind them. Now Alexander knew exactly what they planned – to focus their attack on the Greek left and prise them off the shoreline – and he reinforced the line in readiness for Darius's eventual assault.

The Persians may have had strength of numbers, but the tightly drilled Macedonian phalanx, a tank-like wall of spears and shields, kept them safely pinned down while Alexander led his shock troops on the right, scything into the weaker Persian left flank. The lightly armoured soldiers on the left crumbled under the hooves of the Greek cavalry's advance and Alexander swung his charge down the Persian lines, spooking Darius who fled on his gold chariot. With the emperor on the run, panic quickly spread through the army – fleeing infantry were even trampled by their own cavalry as the Greeks gave chase. The Persian Empire had lost Anatolia, soon it would lose its Babylonian heartland. Eventually it would lose everything – Alexander the Great made sure of that.

Was it genius?

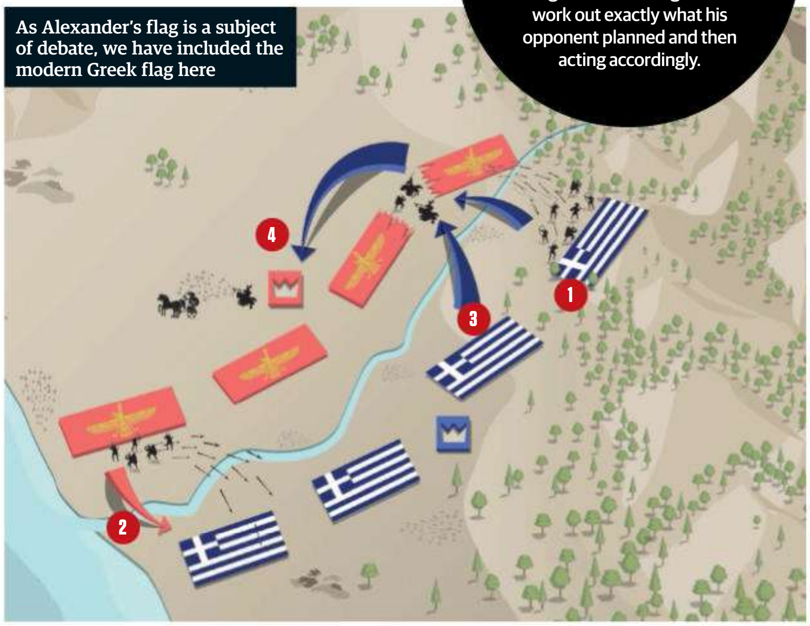
If Alexander had a signature move it would be holding down the enemy with his spear-tipped phalanx and then hitting their flanks, but at Issus its success hinged on him being able to work out exactly what his opponent planned and then acting accordingly.

1 PULLING DOWN THE CURTAIN Greek skirmishers sneaking through the foothills goad the thin line of Persian cavalry with arrows. With their numbers whittling away under the scattered fire, they're forced to withdraw revealing the full Persian line-up to Alexander.

2 THE PERSIAN HAMMER STRIKES Aping Alexander's tactics for hammering the sides, the Persian heavy cavalry attacks the Greek flank to try and prise them from the coast. Reinforced by Alexander, the tightly drilled spear men of the Macedon phalanx hold the attackers off.

3 ALEXANDER ATTACKS Leading his fast-moving Hypaspists on foot, Alexander's versatile skirmishers charge across the riverbed and hit the Persian left flank, punching a hole through the enemy lines.

4 RIGHT IN THE HEART Alexander saddles up and rides through the gap opened up by his elite Companion cavalry. They charge directly at the Persian emperor and Darius panics, fleeing the battlefield in his chariot and abandoning his troops.



As Alexander's flag is a subject of debate, we have included the modern Greek flag here

GREEK ARMY	V	PERSIAN ARMY
35,000		50-100,000
5,850		11,000

Innovation: ★★★★☆
Boldness: ★★★★★
Prudence: ★★★☆☆
Planning: ★★★☆☆

Expert opinion Adrian Goldsworthy

Who would be your pick for the greatest military strategist?
The Duke of Wellington, as he was always closely aware of the political context of every war and shaped policy and strategy accordingly. He made mistakes, but he never lost a war, even though he fought with limited resources. Having said that, similar things can be said about many others. The Romans used the ultimate criterion for success. The best general was the man who won the most battles – Julius Caesar in their case.

What do you think the key qualities are in a great tactician?
The ability to understand his own and the enemy's strengths and weaknesses and ensure that he can either negate the former – or exploit them to his own advantage as Hannibal did at Cannae – and make the most of the latter. The principle is very simple; putting it into practice is the hard part, especially when the enemy is trying to do the same thing. The tactics is one thing [to consider], but we should remember the organisation, training and preparation, leadership and sheer good luck needed.

Who do you think is underrated?
These days, even many people with an interest in military history often know little about the ancient world, so I cannot help naming a Roman. It would be easy to choose several, but I will plump for Scipio Africanus, who won Spain for the Romans, invaded Africa and ended the long, drawn-out carnage of the Second Punic War by beating Hannibal at Cannae. Scipio Africanus had never commanded an army before he arrived in Spain, and yet within a year he had captured New Carthage in a carefully executed, well-timed and very bold operation.

Who is overrated?
In some ways you could say Alexander the Great, who tends to be given the benefit of the doubt by modern historians, even though the fullest ancient sources for his campaigns date to four centuries after his death. He was certainly an incredible motivator of men, a skilled tactician and able strategist – and of course he kept on winning. Yet he failed to consolidate his conquests and his empire fragmented as soon as he died – which could easily have happened earlier given his recklessness in action.

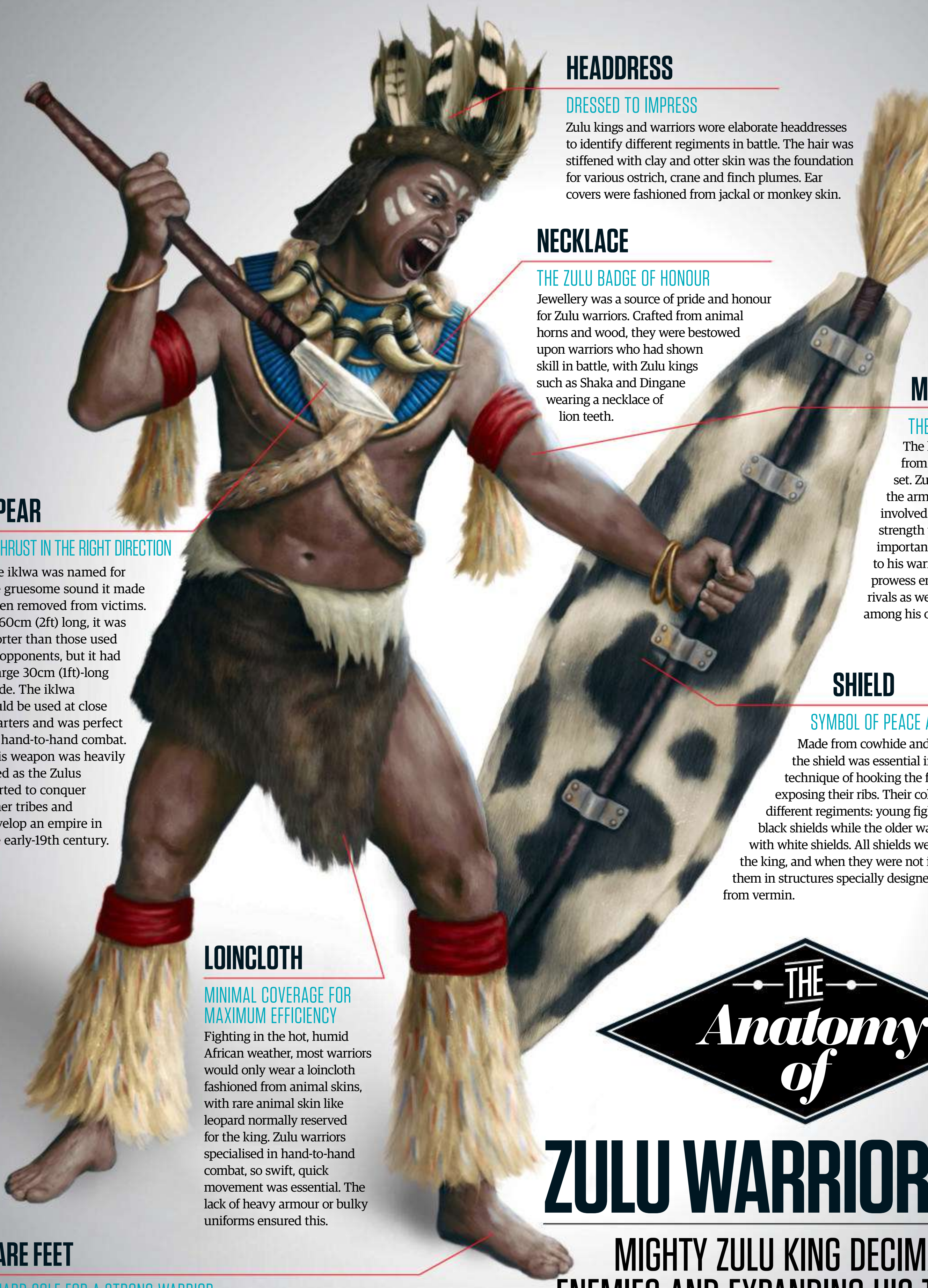
ADRIAN GOLDSWORTHY
AUGUSTUS
FROM
ADRIAN GOLDSWORTHY
Run them Ashore

Two books by Adrian Goldsworthy, *Augustus: From Revolutionary To Emperor* and *Run Them Ashore*, are published by Weidenfeld & Nicolson

THE *Anatomy of* ZULU WARRIOR KING

MIGHTY ZULU KING DECIMATING ENEMIES AND EXPANDING HIS TERRITORY,

ZULU EMPIRE, 1820



HEADDRESS

DRESSED TO IMPRESS

Zulu kings and warriors wore elaborate headdresses to identify different regiments in battle. The hair was stiffened with clay and otter skin was the foundation for various ostrich, crane and finch plumes. Ear covers were fashioned from jackal or monkey skin.

NECKLACE

THE ZULU BADGE OF HONOUR

Jewellery was a source of pride and honour for Zulu warriors. Crafted from animal horns and wood, they were bestowed upon warriors who had shown skill in battle, with Zulu kings such as Shaka and Dingane wearing a necklace of lion teeth.

MUSCLES

THE STRENGTH TO RULE

The king was not exempt from the Zulu warrior mind-set. Zulu kings commanded the army personally and were involved in all battles. Physical strength was of paramount importance to serve as an example to his warriors, and his fighting prowess ensured an advantage over rivals as well as would-be assassins among his own people.

SPEAR

A THRUST IN THE RIGHT DIRECTION

The iklwa was named for the gruesome sound it made when removed from victims. At 60cm (2ft) long, it was shorter than those used by opponents, but it had a large 30cm (1ft)-long blade. The iklwa could be used at close quarters and was perfect for hand-to-hand combat. This weapon was heavily used as the Zulus started to conquer other tribes and develop an empire in the early-19th century.

SHIELD

SYMBOL OF PEACE AND PROTECTION

Made from cowhide and 150cm (5ft) long, the shield was essential in the Zulu fighting technique of hooking the foe's shield and exposing their ribs. Their colours indicated different regiments: young fighters would carry black shields while the older warriors would fight with white shields. All shields were the property of the king, and when they were not in use he stored them in structures specially designed to protect them from vermin.

LOINCLOTH

MINIMAL COVERAGE FOR MAXIMUM EFFICIENCY

Fighting in the hot, humid African weather, most warriors would only wear a loincloth fashioned from animal skins, with rare animal skin like leopard normally reserved for the king. Zulu warriors specialised in hand-to-hand combat, so swift, quick movement was essential. The lack of heavy armour or bulky uniforms ensured this.

BARE FEET

A HARD SOLE FOR A STRONG WARRIOR

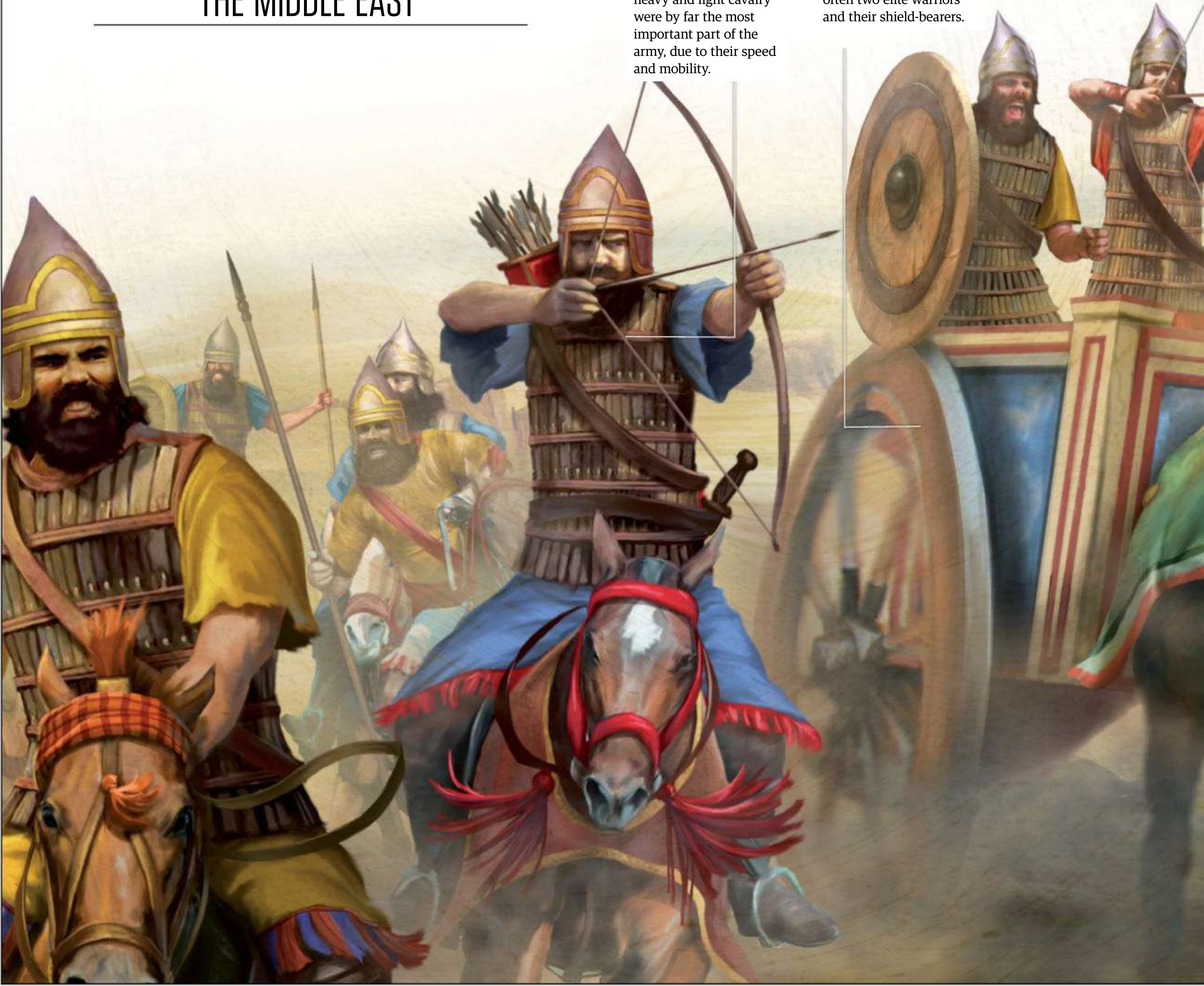
The feet of the barefoot Zulu warriors were toughened by forced marches over hot, stony terrain littered with bush branches and thorns. Some accounts report that Shaka's marches covered a distance of over 80km (50mi) a day when they were fighting against other tribes in what is now South Africa.

© Kevin McGivern

THE ASSYRIAN ARMY

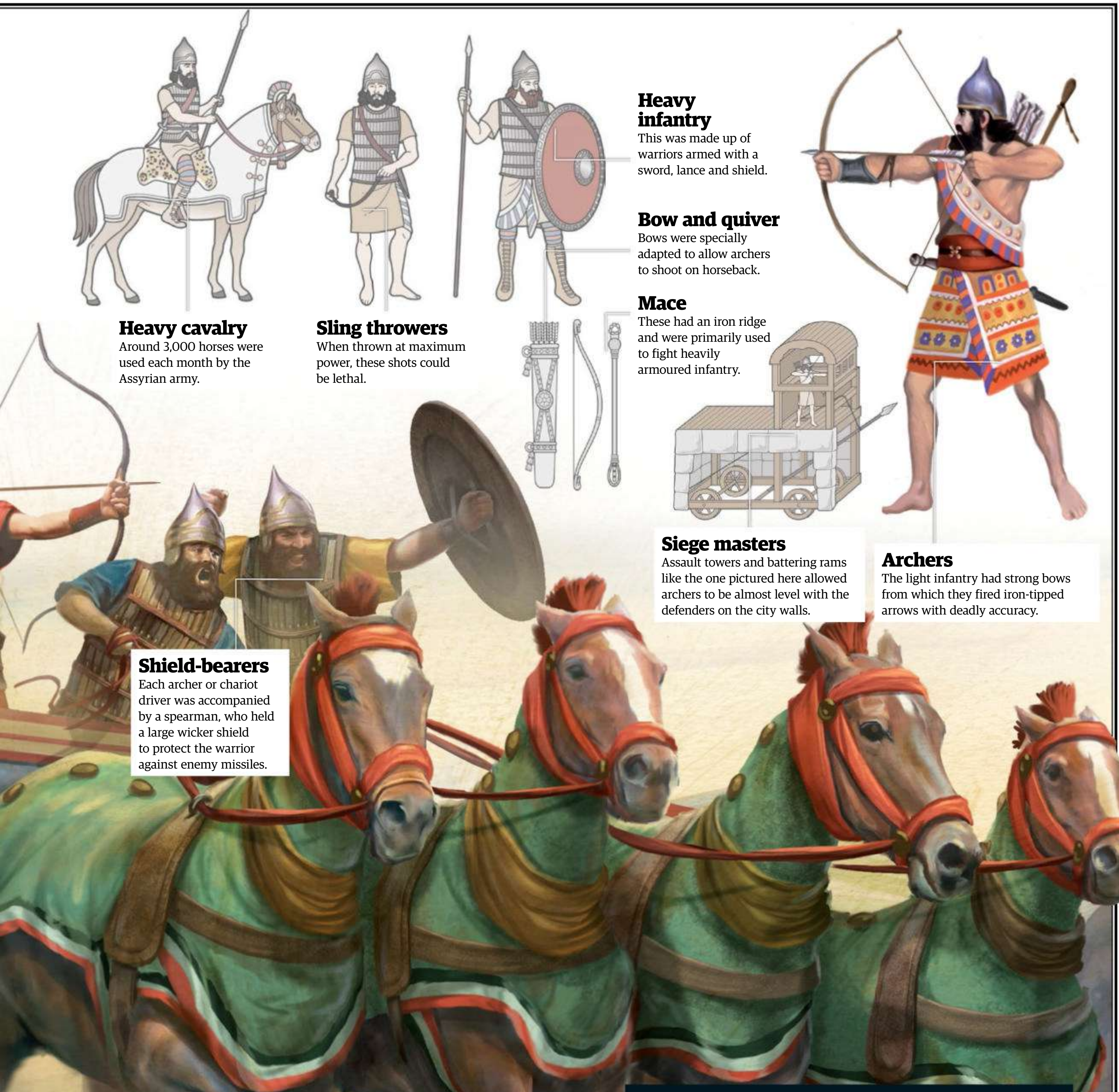
THE BRUTAL FIGHTING MACHINE OF THE ANCIENT WORLD, 911-605 BCE, THE MIDDLE EAST

Of all the Mesopotamian empires, Assyria is often considered the greatest. At its height, it spread from Asia Minor in modern-day Turkey to Babylonia in today's Iraq and south to Egypt. The reason for its success was largely thanks to its incredibly powerful and efficient army. Rather than having soldiers that served for a short period of time, the Assyrians had a 200,000-strong standing army made up of skilled warriors and prisoners of war. These men fought on foot, horseback and chariots, and were armed with spears, bows and slingshots. This combined with their brutal and relentless approach to combat made the Assyrian army a formidable force on the battlefield, and helped them to conquer even their most powerful enemies.



Cavalry
The Assyrians were the first to put bowmen on horseback. The heavy and light cavalry were by far the most important part of the army, due to their speed and mobility.

Chariots
The Assyrians developed heavy four-horse chariots with a four-man crew - often two elite warriors and their shield-bearers.



Heavy cavalry
Around 3,000 horses were used each month by the Assyrian army.

Sling throwers
When thrown at maximum power, these shots could be lethal.

Heavy infantry
This was made up of warriors armed with a sword, lance and shield.

Bow and quiver
Bows were specially adapted to allow archers to shoot on horseback.

Mace
These had an iron ridge and were primarily used to fight heavily armoured infantry.

Siege masters
Assault towers and battering rams like the one pictured here allowed archers to be almost level with the defenders on the city walls.

Archers
The light infantry had strong bows from which they fired iron-tipped arrows with deadly accuracy.

Shield-bearers
Each archer or chariot driver was accompanied by a spearman, who held a large wicker shield to protect the warrior against enemy missiles.

How do we know this?

A lot of what we know about the Assyrian army has been gathered from the remains of stone reliefs, the most famous of which are found in the ruins of Nimrod, Khorsabad and Nineveh. These carvings depict the development of the empire's military, from light, unarmoured archers to heavy cavalry. You can learn more about the army and these reliefs in Tamas Dezso's *The Assyrian Army: The Structure Of The Neo-Assyrian Army.*

© Sol 90 Images

WATE

THE FALL OF

NAPOLEON MYTHS BUSTED

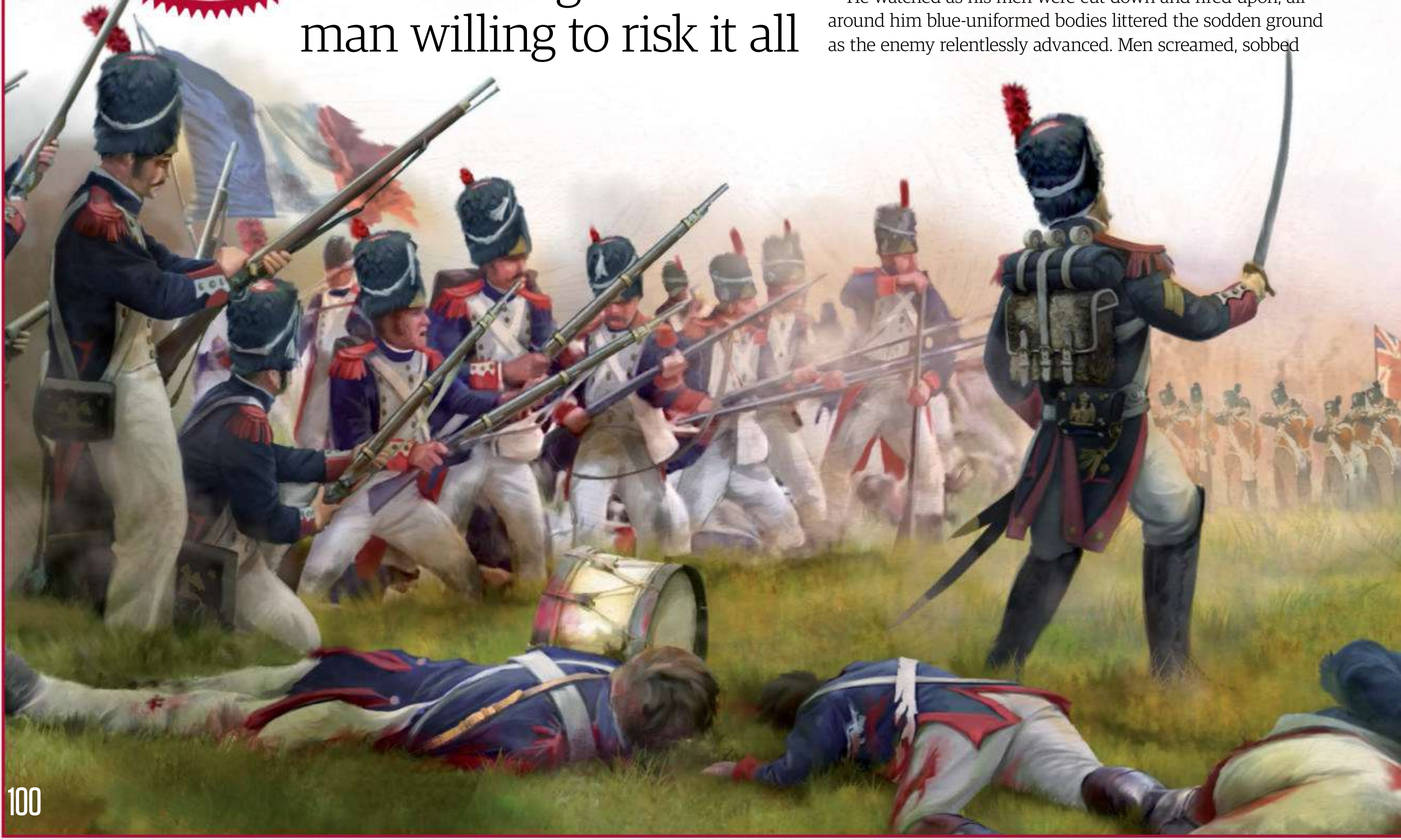
He was short

This myth comes from confusion over French inches as well as the fact that 'Le Petit Caporal' was always surrounded by his tall bodyguards. Napoleon was most likely about 5'6", near average for his era.

Now upheld as a source of British pride, in reality, Waterloo was the final gamble of a man willing to risk it all

Napoleon was losing. He knew he was losing. But he had been so confident in his speeches that his troops were unaware of this fact that was so blatant to him. "Wellington is a bad general," he had told his men, but that bad general had beaten him. Though it pained him to admit it, his own mistakes had played a part too. He heard a voice, it must have been his own, shouting encouragement as he rode between the ranks. His words were strong and firm, but his face must have told a different story, as he could feel the concerned eyes of his aides upon him.

He watched as his men were cut down and fired upon; all around him blue-uniformed bodies littered the sodden ground as the enemy relentlessly advanced. Men screamed, sobbed



RLOO

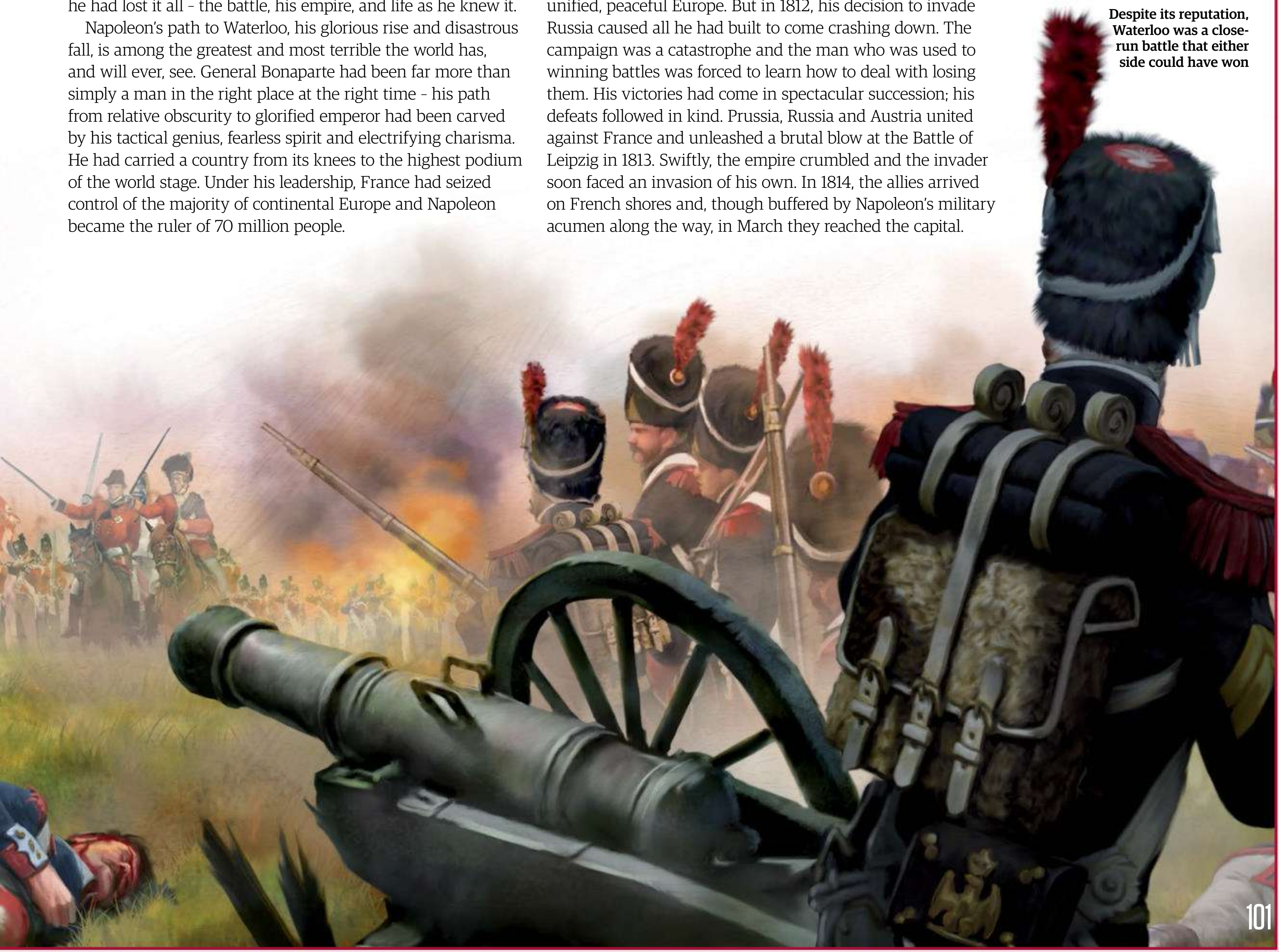
200
YEARS
1815 - 2015

NAPOLEON

and some were struck silent with fear as disorder reigned supreme. Just two hours ago victory had been his. In that time he had lost it all – the battle, his empire, and life as he knew it.

Napoleon's path to Waterloo, his glorious rise and disastrous fall, is among the greatest and most terrible the world has, and will ever, see. General Bonaparte had been far more than simply a man in the right place at the right time – his path from relative obscurity to glorified emperor had been carved by his tactical genius, fearless spirit and electrifying charisma. He had carried a country from its knees to the highest podium of the world stage. Under his leadership, France had seized control of the majority of continental Europe and Napoleon became the ruler of 70 million people.

Through war, sacrifice and conquest, Napoleon had come closer than anyone to achieving his ultimate dream – a unified, peaceful Europe. But in 1812, his decision to invade Russia caused all he had built to come crashing down. The campaign was a catastrophe and the man who was used to winning battles was forced to learn how to deal with losing them. His victories had come in spectacular succession; his defeats followed in kind. Prussia, Russia and Austria united against France and unleashed a brutal blow at the Battle of Leipzig in 1813. Swiftly, the empire crumbled and the invader soon faced an invasion of his own. In 1814, the allies arrived on French shores and, though buffered by Napoleon's military acumen along the way, in March they reached the capital.



Despite its reputation, Waterloo was a close-run battle that either side could have won

In a matter of days Napoleon watched as men who had fought loyally by his side turned their backs on him one by one. In the face of the unbeatable allied threat, it was Napoleon, they claimed, not France, who was their enemy. The allies agreed. On 2 April the emperor was declared deposed. Napoleon himself, at the time leading an army in Fontainebleau, proposed they march on the capital, but with his power vanishing, his officers and marshals mutinied. Napoleon had no option but to accept his fate and on 6 April, announced his unconditional abdication, proclaiming there was "no personal sacrifice, even that of his life, which he [was] not ready to make in the interests of France." Napoleon was exiled to the island of Elba, out of the way, hopefully, for good.

Elba wasn't the most welcoming place for Napoleon to rebuild his following, or himself. An effigy of the emperor had been burned shortly before he arrived and the feeling was entirely anti-French. But Napoleon threw himself into the role of ruler on the tiny European backwater island. Instead of accepting his doom, Napoleon began to build an army and plan his glorious return. Englishmen who came to glimpse the fallen emperor reported him dejected, broken and resigned - but this was a damning mistake. Le Petit Caporal was playing them, obtaining what information he could about France and England so he could do what he did best - scheme and plan his victory. As rumours of a conspiracy to assassinate or remove him from Elba began to circulate, he launched his escape on 26 February 1815.

While Napoleon had orchestrated the escape to save himself from disappearing into the dusts of history, to the French his return was a gallant rescue from the old-fashioned Bourbon monarchy that replaced him. The people and the military rallied around their hero of liberty, and for a brief moment France seemed plunged back into the revolution that had helped Napoleon climb to power in the first place.

But the allies were quick to damn the actions of the 'mad' emperor and encouraged the French to "annihilate this last attempt of a criminal and impotent delirium." The allies wanted war against Napoleon, they wanted him dead, and they wanted the French people to do it for them. But his exile and return had only strengthened the emperor in the hearts of his followers, and under such immense opposition, Louis XVIII fled. Napoleon was, once again, in control, but beyond the confines of France, he was declared an outlaw.

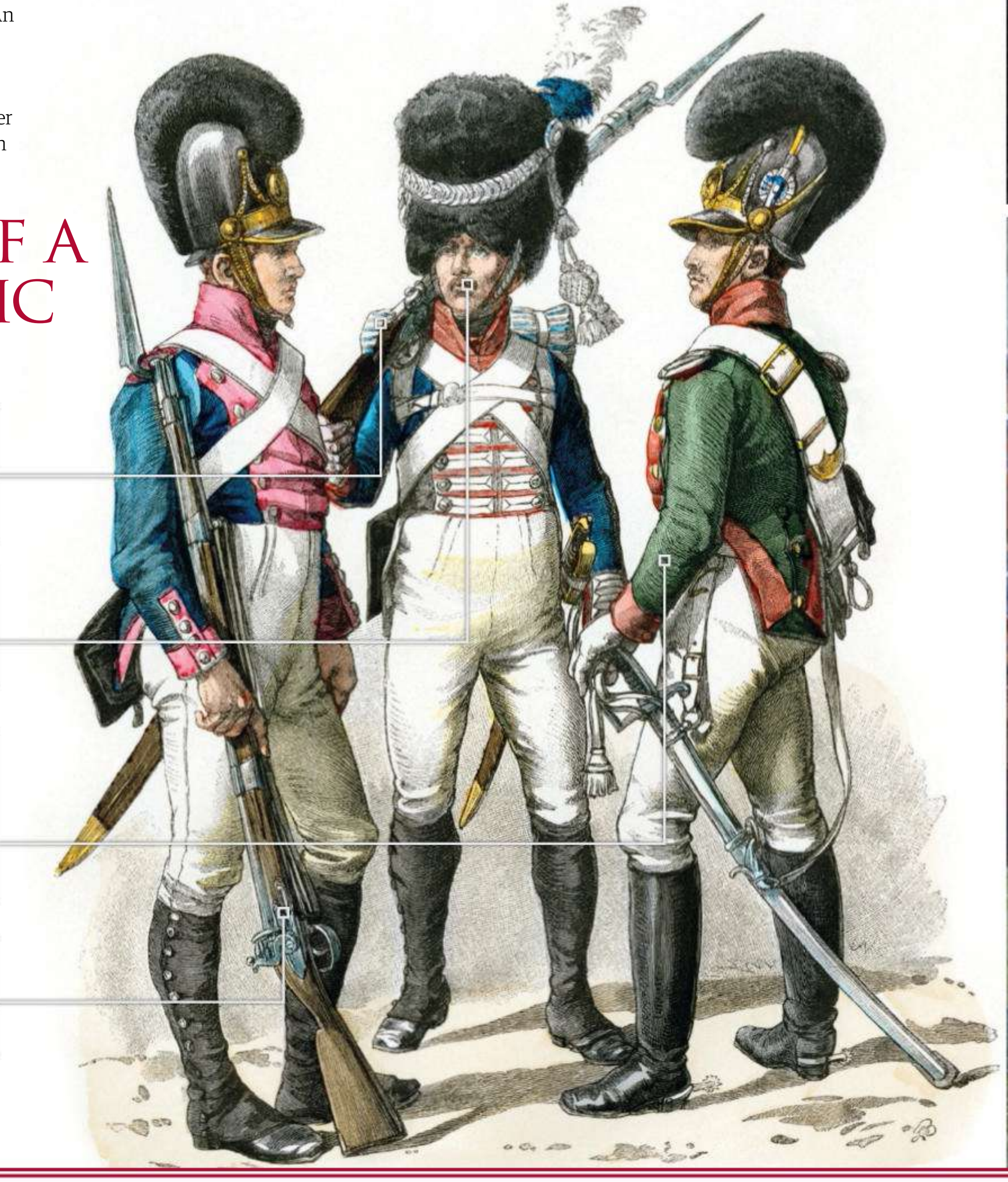
Despite his glorious return to power, the Napoleon who had clutched the world in his fist in 1805 was gone. The man of action, self-confidence and charisma had vanished. He was constantly asking for advice, several times he was found sobbing and even his body seemed broken. This was not a victor, this was a man who had felt the bitter pill of failure and betrayal - and he did not wish to taste it again. It is likely that Napoleon was anxious, and he had good reason to be, he knew very well what awaited him - the wrath of his

NAPOLEON MYTHS BUSTED

He was a warlord

Napoleon was a military man, but what he longed for was a unified, peaceful Europe. As well as being a dictator, he was a reformer who established France's legal code, and a supporter of liberty and equality.

ANATOMY OF A NAPOLEONIC SOLDIER

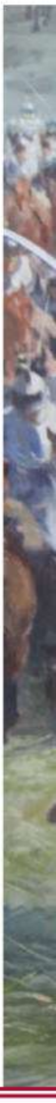


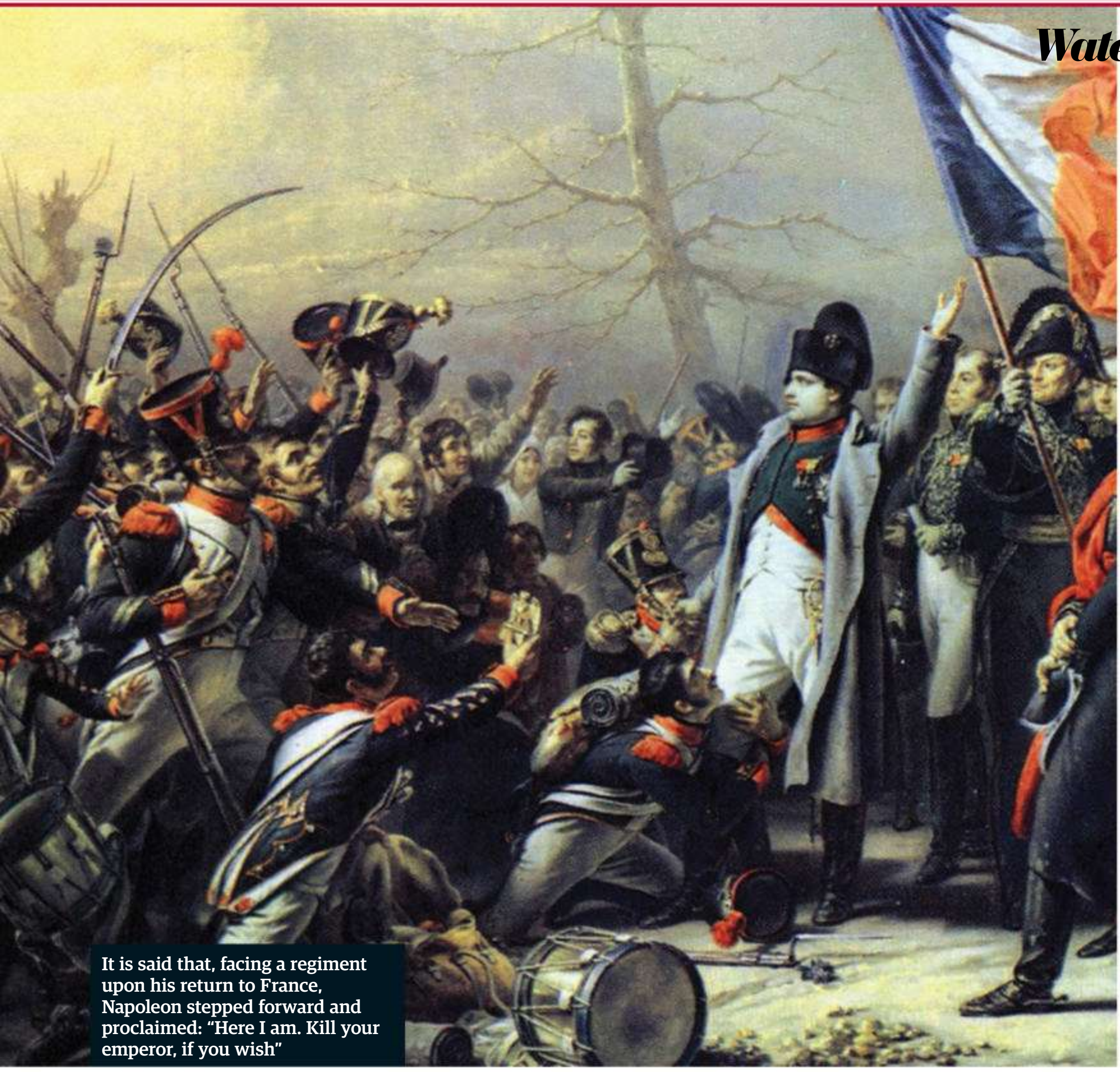
Knapsack
Made from tanned calfskin, the standard soldier would carry a bag that weighed between 15-20kg. It would be filled with spare cartridges, shoes, shirts, trousers, polishing brushes, biscuits and a variety of personal items.

Facial hair
There were strict rules regarding facial hair in the Grande Armée. Hussars were required to grow beards, grenadiers had to have large moustaches and it was mandatory for chasseurs to sport goatees.

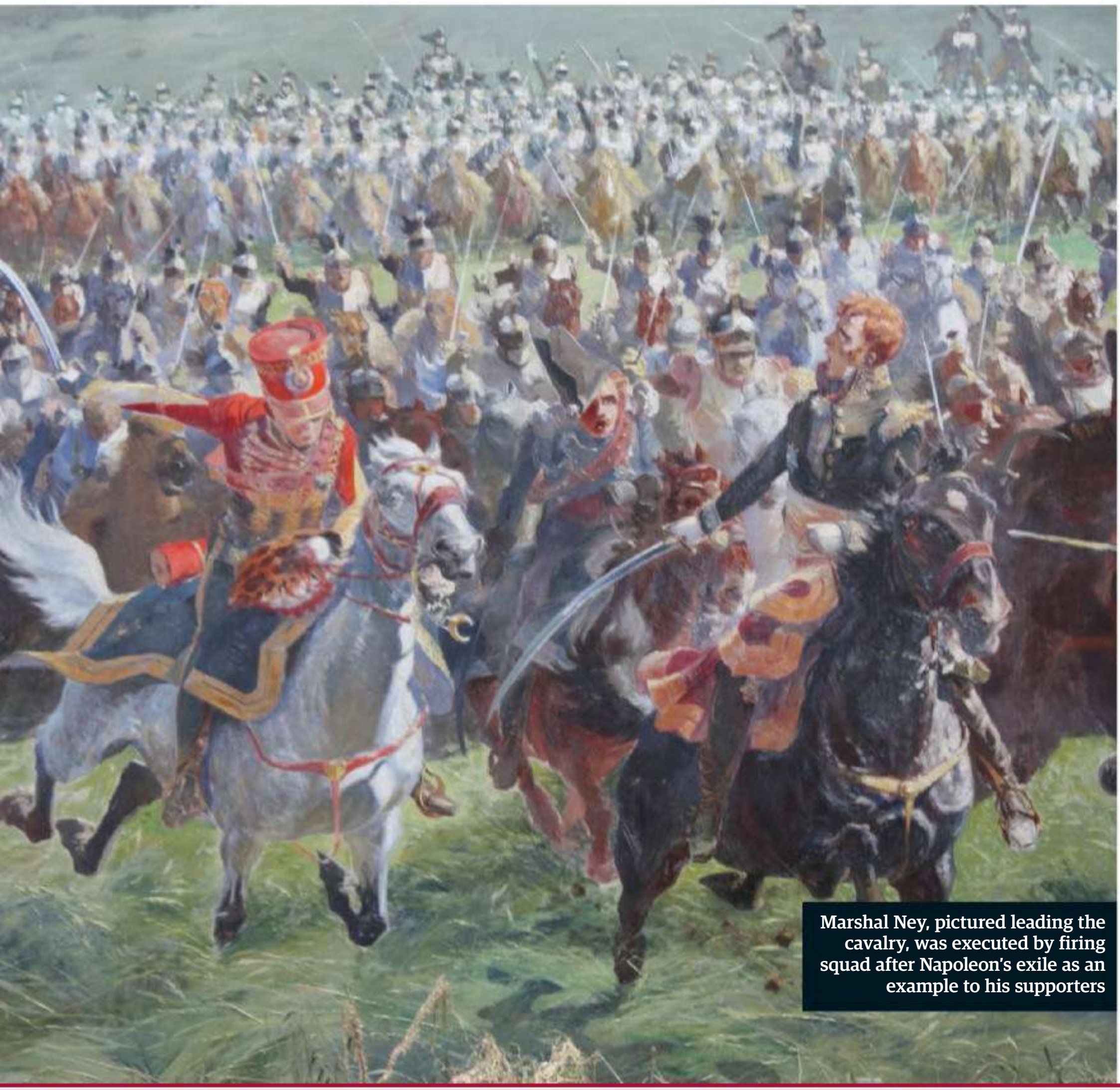
Elaborate uniforms
A huge amount of money was spent on French uniforms, producing a stunning display of pomp and luxury. Pompoms, plumes and cords gave an air of military splendour that matched the charisma of their emperor. An infantryman's uniform would cost between 200 and 250 francs, while a cuirassier's could be as much as 2,000.

Weapons
Infantrymen would be armed with a 1777 Charleville musket with a bayonet. They would also carry a black leather cartridge box on a white shoulder belt that held about 35 rounds of ammunition.





It is said that, facing a regiment upon his return to France, Napoleon stepped forward and proclaimed: "Here I am. Kill your emperor, if you wish"



Marshal Ney, pictured leading the cavalry, was executed by firing squad after Napoleon's exile as an example to his supporters

HERO TO ZERO

The battles that marked Napoleon's epic rise and disastrous fall

Battle of Austerlitz

2 December 1805

Also known as the Battle of the Three Emperors, Austerlitz sees Napoleon facing the armies of Tsar Alexander I of Russia and Holy Roman Emperor Francis II. Napoleon's tactical genius during the battle is virtually unparalleled and leads his smaller force to a definite and crushing victory. The victory brings an end to the War of the Third Coalition, leads to the dissolution of the Holy Roman Empire and paves the way for French domination of Europe.

Battle of Rivoli

14-15 January 1797

Part of Napoleon's campaign in Italy, his force of 23,000 easily defeat an Austrian force of 28,000. Using his military genius, Napoleon is able to take advantage of his enemy's mistakes and destroys the opposing army. Widely upheld as his greatest victory at the time, his success allows the French to go on and take northern Italy.

Battle of Dresden

26-27 August 1813

Outnumbered as usual, the Battle of Dresden pits 135,000 French Empire troops against a combined force of 214,000 Austrian, Prussian and Russian troops. Initially the French forces positioned in Dresden struggle to hold the city, but when Napoleon arrives, the battle is turned on its head and victory is snatched from defeat. However, Napoleon's failure to follow up on the success of this battle will cost him dearly.

Battle of Leipzig

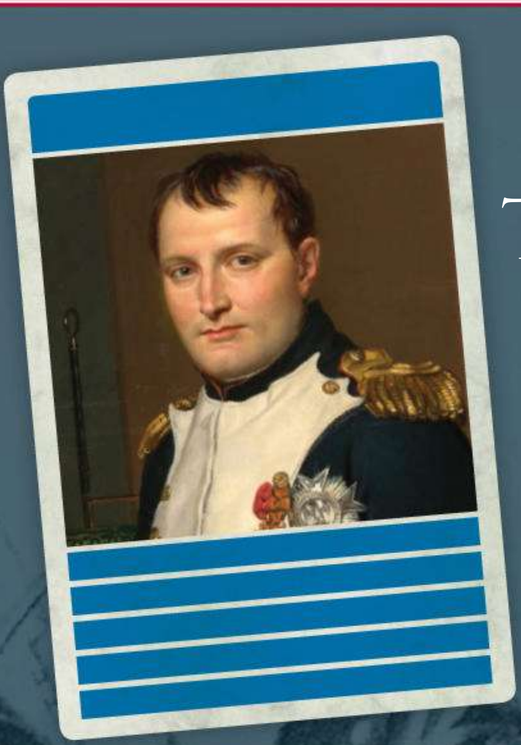
16-19 October 1813

The largest European battle before World War I, Leipzig is the climax of Napoleon's 1813 German Campaign. Napoleon experiences his first decisive defeat at the hands of the allied troops and is forced to return to France with a tarnished reputation. The defeat at Leipzig marks the end of the French Empire east of the Rhine and in less than a year, the emperor will be forced to abdicate his throne.

Battle of Trafalgar

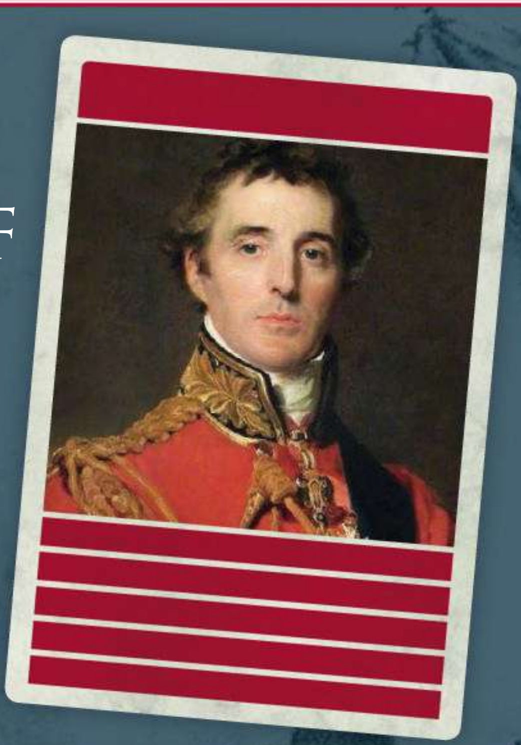
21 October 1805

A combined fleet of French and Spanish ships face the might of the English Navy during the war of the Third Coalition. Despite having the greater fleet numerically, Napoleon's forces are destroyed by the British. This victory assures English naval supremacy and although Napoleon is far from defeated at this point, it puts in motion the series of failures that will lead to Napoleon's final fall.



THE BATTLE OF WATERLOO

BELGIUM 18 JUNE 1815



After fighting back the advancing Prussians, it was time for Napoleon to face the might of Wellington's troops. With 72,000 French men meeting 68,000 allies, the emperor found himself better equipped, but the coalition was better positioned. The sun rose to reveal the fields deluged; it was time for Napoleon to put his famous tactical genius to the test.

La Haye Sainte falls

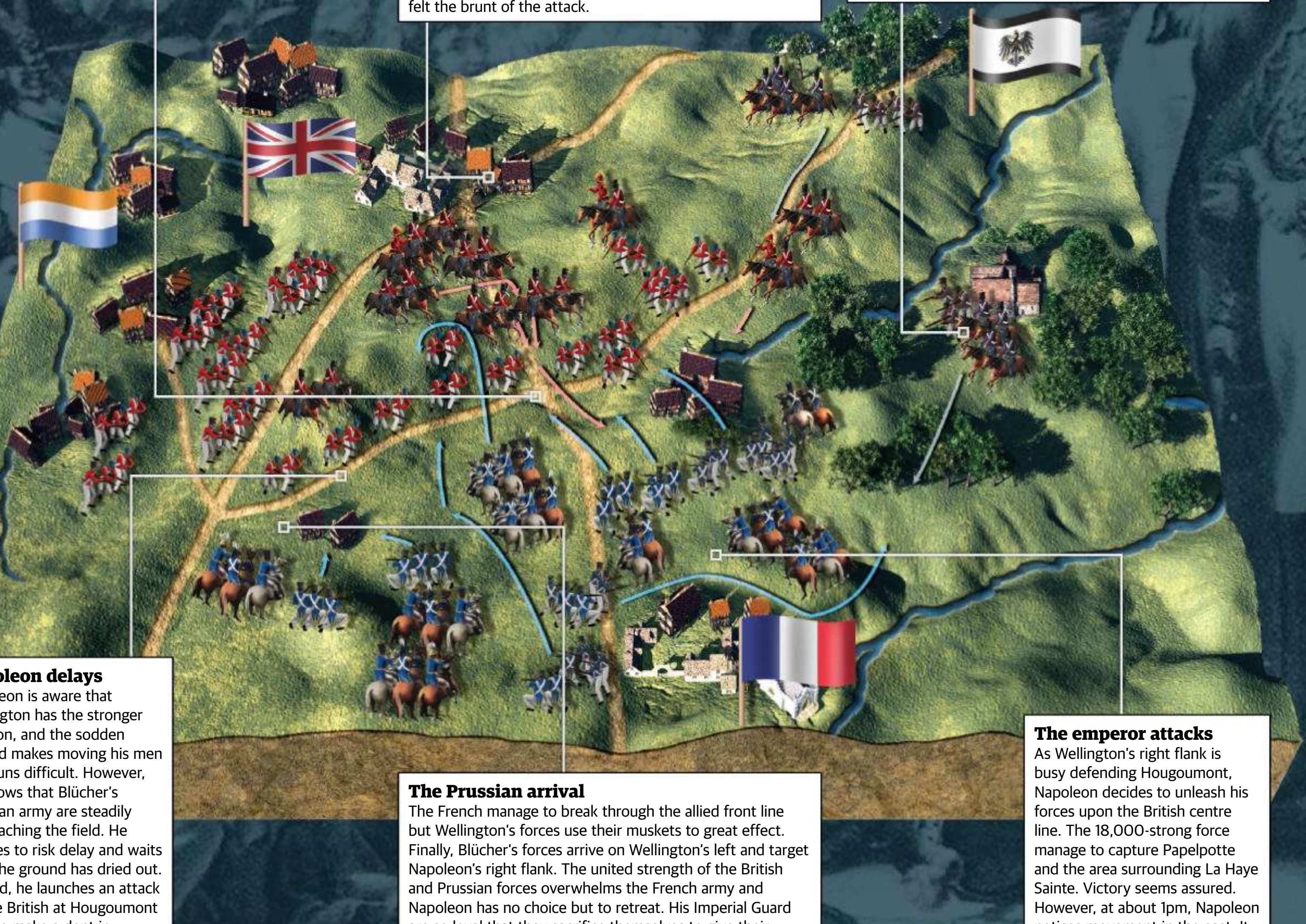
For hours, waves of ferocious French soldiers attack Wellington's stronghold of La Haye Sainte. Finally, at about 6pm, they are victorious, though the cost is heavy in both French and British lives. With his new position, Napoleon is able to use artillery to attack the British centre.

Wellington struggles

Although the Prussians are approaching, they are still a good while away and Wellington struggles to drive back the French from the crucial farmhouse of La Haye Sainte. The British cavalry charge into the advancing French infantry – the effect is disastrous for the French forces, which are substantially weakened, but Wellington's left line has also felt the brunt of the attack.

Battle on two fronts

At about 3.30pm Napoleon's troops finally meet Blücher's Prussians five miles east of the main fighting. Yet again Napoleon's troops are at a tactical disadvantage as the Prussians have the high ground. As the fighting intensifies, Napoleon is forced to commit more men to the Prussian battle, significantly stretching his forces.



Napoleon delays

Napoleon is aware that Wellington has the stronger position, and the sodden ground makes moving his men and guns difficult. However, he knows that Blücher's Prussian army are steadily approaching the field. He decides to risk delay and waits until the ground has dried out. Instead, he launches an attack on the British at Hougoumont farm to make a dent in Wellington's steely defence.

The Prussian arrival

The French manage to break through the allied front line but Wellington's forces use their muskets to great effect. Finally, Blücher's forces arrive on Wellington's left and target Napoleon's right flank. The united strength of the British and Prussian forces overwhelms the French army and Napoleon has no choice but to retreat. His Imperial Guard are so loyal that they sacrifice themselves to give their emperor a chance to escape unharmed.

The emperor attacks

As Wellington's right flank is busy defending Hougoumont, Napoleon decides to unleash his forces upon the British centre line. The 18,000-strong force manage to capture Papelpotte and the area surrounding La Haye Sainte. Victory seems assured. However, at about 1pm, Napoleon notices movement in the east. It is the Prussians.

enemies and war. He had no option but to defend his throne again, else it be seized from beneath him before it was barely warm.

Napoleon was not in the state for war, neither mentally nor physically, but he knew if he didn't act first then defeat was inevitable. He had to strike the English and Prussians in the north, then turn towards the Austrian and Russian forces in Germany before they had time to increase their numbers. With an army comprising a mishmash of inexperienced young recruits and seasoned warriors, Napoleon first struck the Prussians, led by Blücher, and managed to deal a great amount of damage. But crucially, he failed to take advantage of his victory and the Prussians escaped – a mistake he would live to regret. However, for now, Napoleon turned his sights towards the combined British, German and Dutch troops positioned at Waterloo, and commanded by the Duke of Wellington.

Numerically, Napoleon had the advantage. He had wanted to strike before the British had time to build their numbers, and this he did – 72,000 French troops and 246 cannons faced 68,000 allied men with 157 cannons. However, Napoleon, who had so often won battles where the numerical odds were against him, was well aware this was no assurance of victory. What would really matter were the armies' positions, and the weather. It was with the latter particularly that he was extensively unlucky. The previous night there had been a downfall so torrential that the field had been reduced to a swamp of thick, knee-deep mud. Victor Hugo would later claim that this rain "sufficed for the overthrow of the world," and it certainly affected Napoleon's plans as he struggled to get his guns to the appropriate positions.

Napoleon delayed for as long as he could. He rode among the troops, enthusing his men with long speeches, hoping that just an hour more would allow the ground to dry out. However, with Blücher's Prussian army on their way, he was aware of the need to time this delay perfectly. At either 10am or 11.30am (sources differ), Napoleon began the battle, attacking the British at a large farmhouse called Hougoumont. Claiming possession of this and another farmhouse, La Haye Sainte, was key, as they would allow the French to attack Wellington's main line unopposed.

The fighting at Hougoumont was fierce and frenzied. A French officer had managed to push his way through and break down the gate with an axe; French soldiers streamed in, but the allies closed the gate and slaughtered all who had entered. The fighting continued at Hougoumont for hours. Napoleon sent 14,000 troops into the mad fray, and towards the end the building was even set alight, but the coalition managed to hold out. Wellington would later comment: "The success of the battle turned upon closing the gates at Hougoumont."

NAPOLEON MYTHS BUSTED

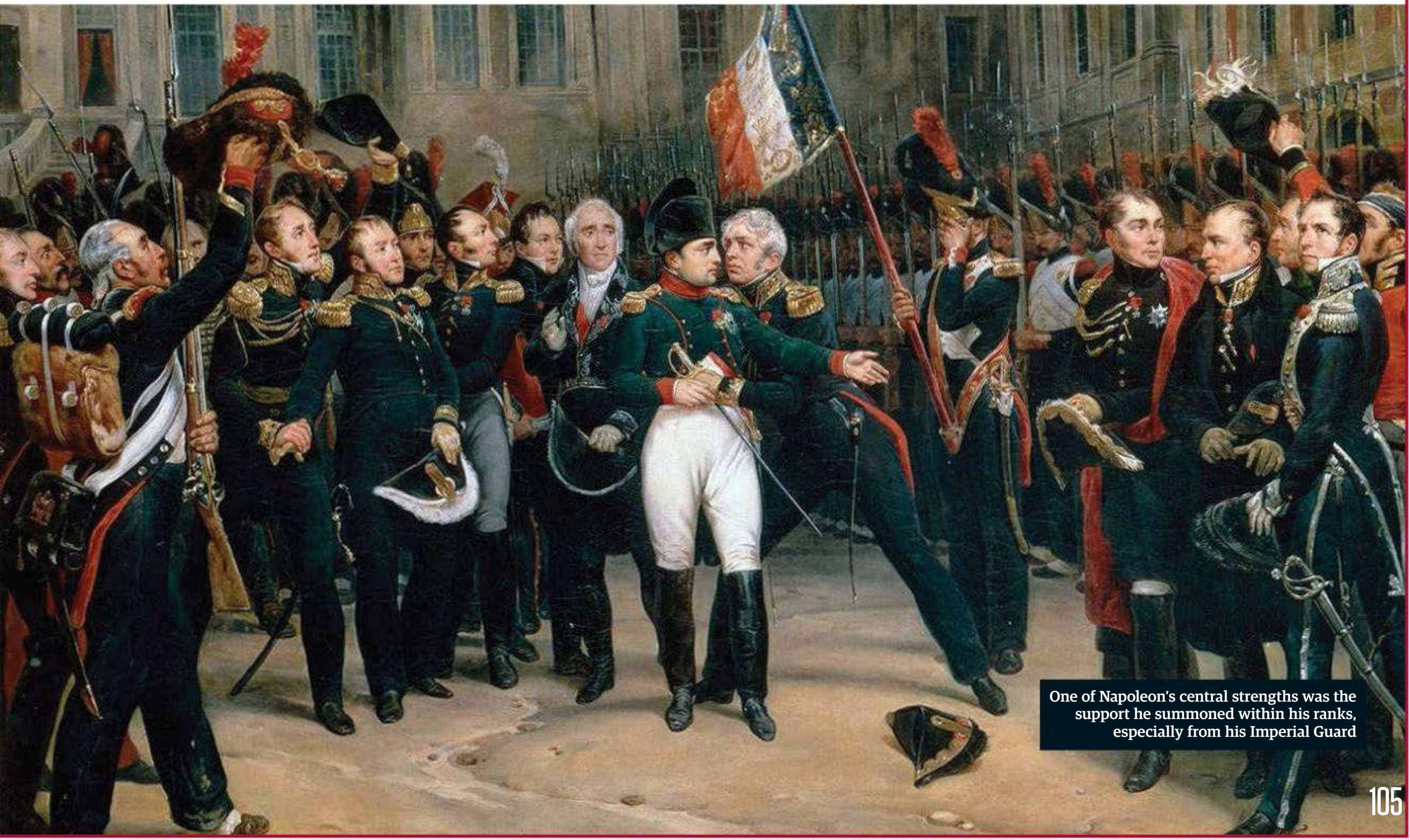
The British hated him

This is not entirely true, as there was a strong current of British thought that supported him, and the government were so fearful of an uprising that they refused to allow Napoleon on British soil before his exile.

Napoleon turned his attention to the Anglo-allied centre. He commanded the Grand Battery to fire at Wellington's position. Although many allied lives were saved by the men simply lying down on the slopes, the fierce and devastating cannon fire struck a much-needed dent in Wellington's defence. Napoleon finally seemed to be gaining an advantage, but then the Prussians were sighted. The black-clad figures emerged en masse from the woods at the east of the battlefield; they were heading for Napoleon's right flank.

The emperor now knew that timing would determine everything, so at 1.30pm he launched what he hoped would be a final and devastating artillery assault at the left centre of the allied line. However, his troops had to traverse uneven, muddy ground against relentless British cannon fire and the losses were heavy. Nevertheless, the French managed to push through the allied lines and climbed the slope towards the crucial La Haye Sainte farmhouse. If it was captured, Napoleon would be able to attack the British forces at close range and victory would be within his grasp.

Wellington, seeing his infantry about to buckle, sent a swift and brutal cavalry charge that sliced through the French infantry. This dealt a great amount of damage to Napoleon's forces, but it also

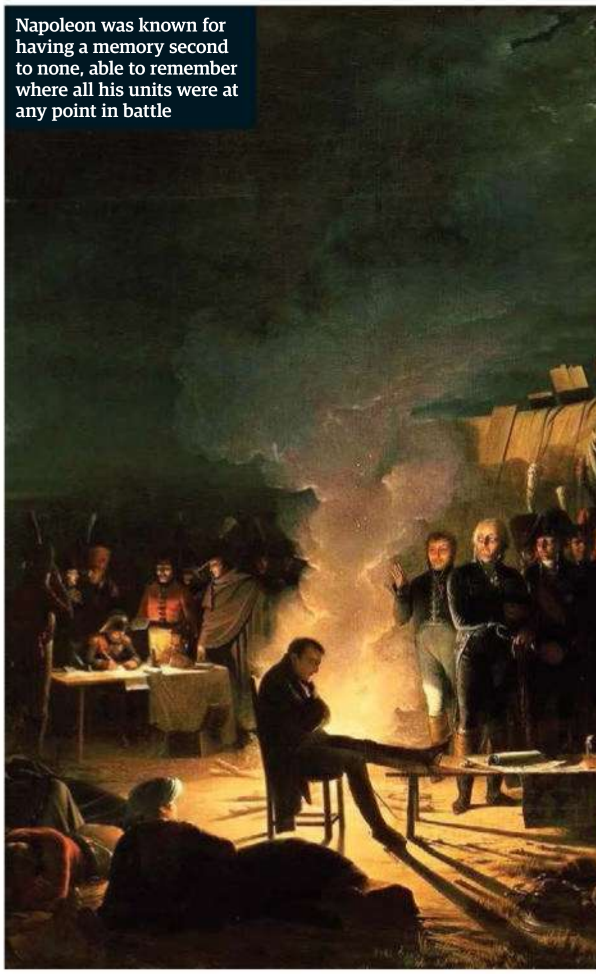


One of Napoleon's central strengths was the support he summoned within his ranks, especially from his Imperial Guard

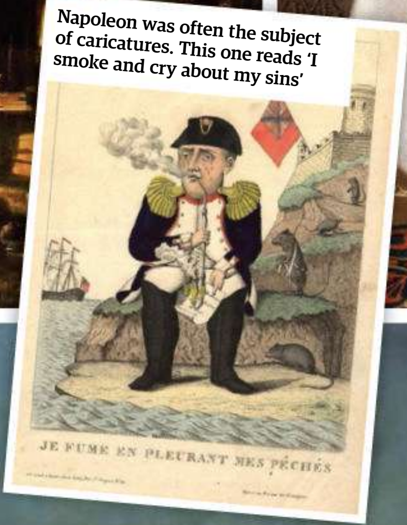
Napoleon's tomb has pride of place in Les Invalides

THE EMPEROR'S LEGACY

Napoleon's legacy had already begun even before he passed away, and he sharply divided opinion the world over as soon as his conquests began. For his supporters, he was a force of justice, spreading the French values of freedom and liberty with the ultimate goal of peace and national unification. This continues today; Napoleon's policies created the basis for a legal system used worldwide, allowing freedom of religion and judging on merit rather than birth. However, there are those who disagree. Although beginning with good intentions, many believe he was driven by selfish ambitions that resulted in the loss of millions of lives. The 200th anniversary of his victory of Austerlitz was not officially celebrated in France and the emperor is far from a national hero, such as the likes of Charles de Gaulle. However, it is important to note that he is also not regarded as a merciless dictator – evident in how many monuments bear his name throughout France as well as his place of rest, Les Invalides, which is one of the most opulent buildings in the capital. The discussion of whether Le Petit Caporal was a liberator or tyrant seems set to continue, but both sides do agree on something – his immense impact upon Europe is still being felt today.

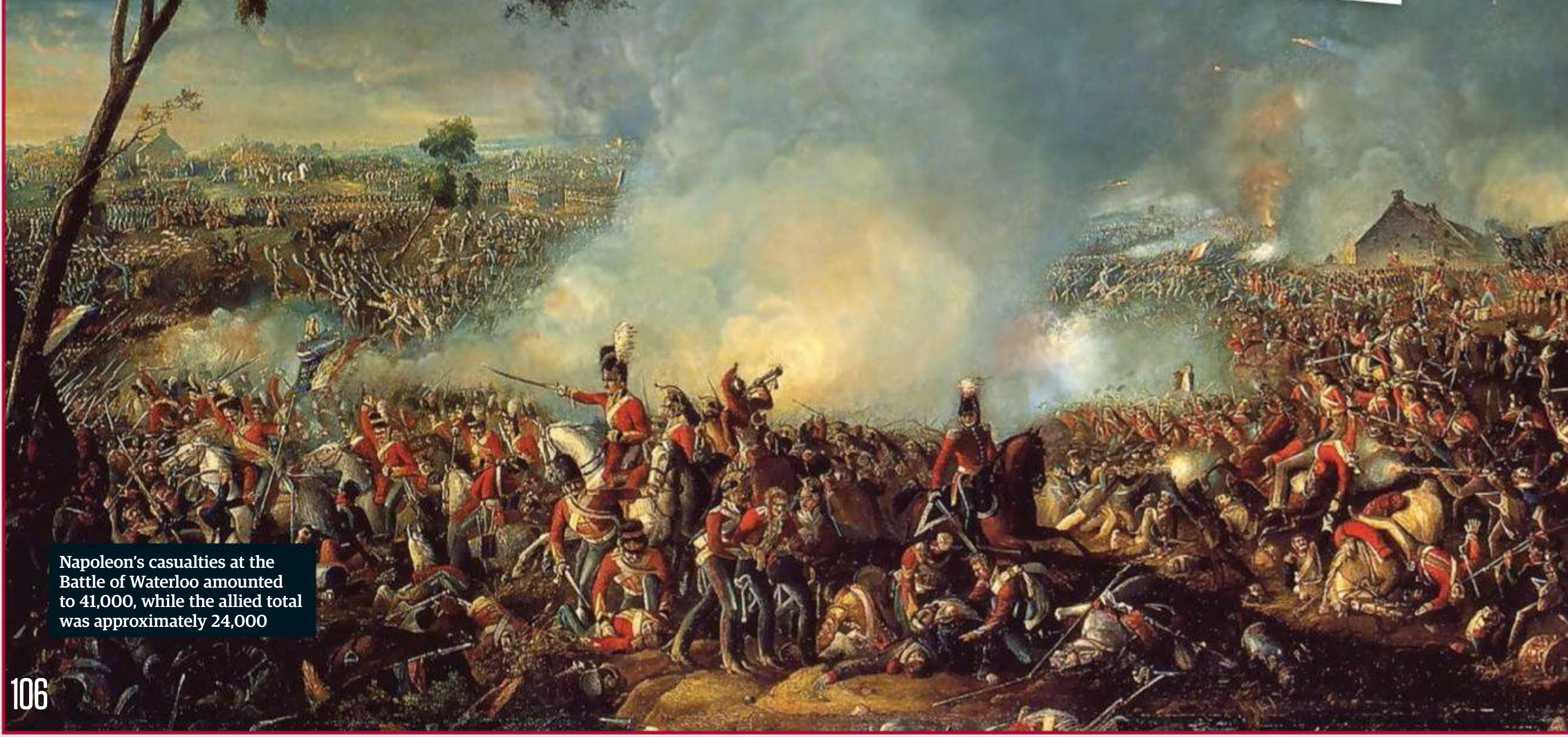


Napoleon was known for having a memory second to none, able to remember where all his units were at any point in battle

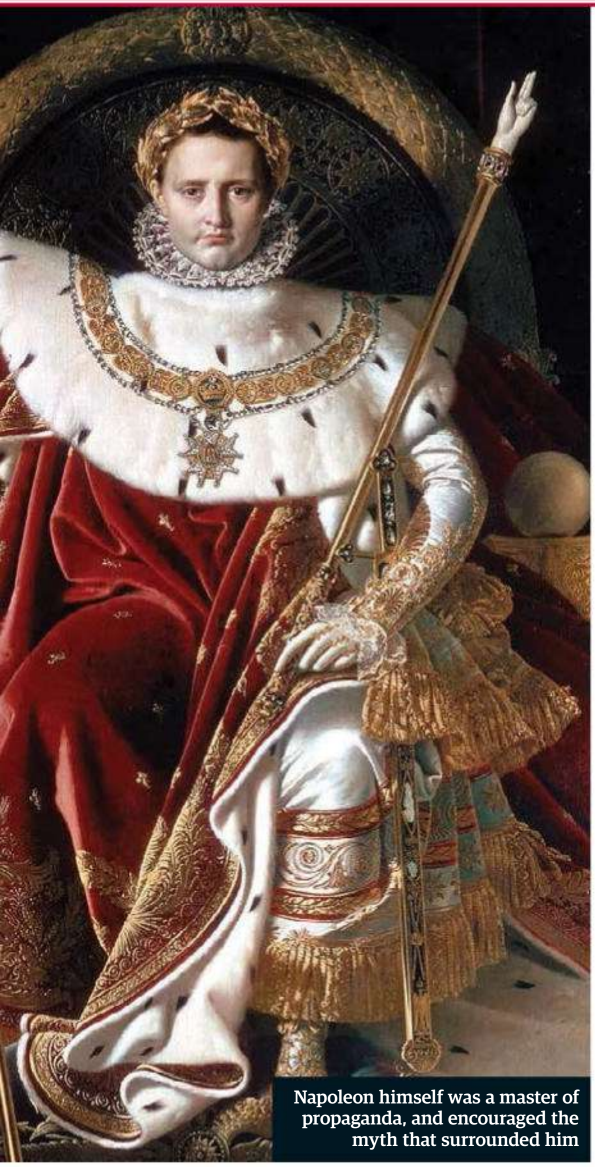


Napoleon was often the subject of caricatures. This one reads 'I smoke and cry about my sins'

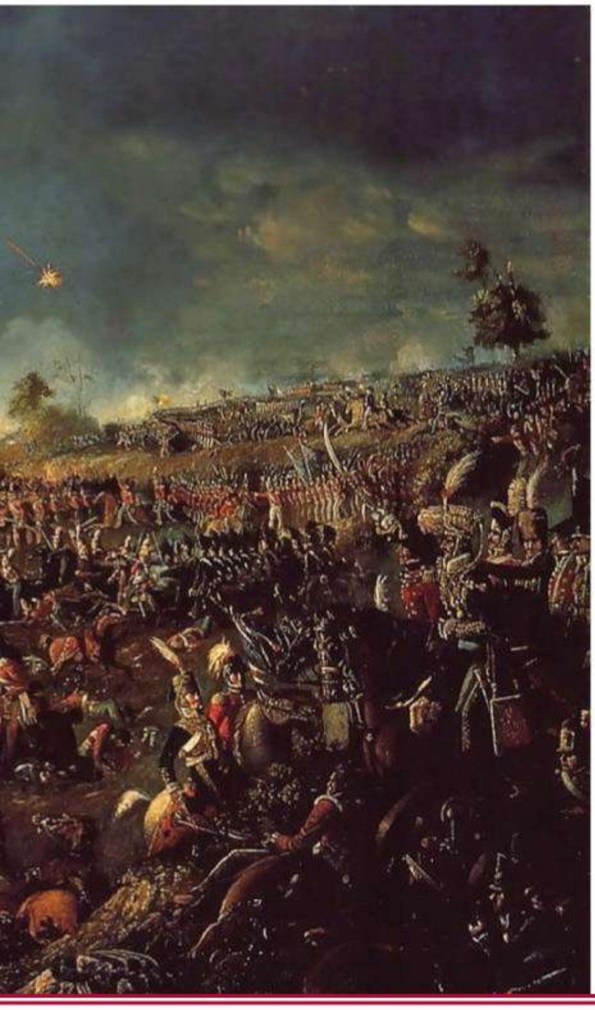
JE FUME EN PLEURANT MES PÉCHÉS



Napoleon's casualties at the Battle of Waterloo amounted to 41,000, while the allied total was approximately 24,000



Napoleon himself was a master of propaganda, and encouraged the myth that surrounded him



severely weakened Wellington's left flank. The duke needed reinforcements, and the Prussians were on their way. Napoleon knew that they were set to arrive at about 4.30pm. He had enough time then, at the lull that occurred at 3pm, to withdraw his forces and set up an appropriate defence for the oncoming attack. But Napoleon had never been, in all his battles, whether personal or on the battlefield, one to play it safe. He was a gambler. Instead of retreating, with the Prussians bearing down upon him, he ordered his men to do all that they could to capture the La Haye Sainte and ensure his victory.

The French threw everything they had at the allied lines. The Grand Battery pounded them with cannon fire and finally, between 6 and 6.30pm, the crucial farmhouse was in French possession. It seemed that Napoleon's gamble had paid off. Wellington's attempts to retake the stronghold were easily repulsed and French artillery was quickly brought forward to the crucial position near Wellington's central line.

Everything now hung on the Prussian reinforcements arriving on time. Wellington knew that without them, the battle was lost; so did Napoleon.

The emperor's men were stretched and tired. When Marshal Ney, commanding the army from the field, asked Napoleon for more troops to deliver the killing blow, he was said to have responded: "Troops! Where do you want me to get them from? Do you want me to make them?" In reality, Napoleon thought it was more important to prolong the Prussian arrival to the battle. The Prussians had been hammering the right flank of his army in an attempt to take the village of Plancenoit, and Napoleon knew that as long as the Prussians were engaged there, he would have more time to break Wellington's centre.

This is when Napoleon decided to unleash his trump card, the force that had repeatedly turned unwinnable battles in his favour – his Imperial Guard. Napoleon's 'Invincibles' were fresh faced and ready to fight. Wellington would later say that Napoleon's presence on the battlefield was worth 40,000 soldiers – Napoleon was about to put that to the test. He rode within 600 yards of Wellington's lines to encourage his troops and salute their cries of "vive l'empereur!" The battalions formed three lines, and with music playing, flags flying and saluting Napoleon as they passed, they came thundering out to meet the British central line.

Wellington's cannons were ready to receive them. At such close range huge holes were ripped in the French lines but the mighty guard rode on. They continued through fields covered with the bodies of their fallen allies. The sight was imposing, but Wellington's men were waiting for them in the long grass behind the ridge. As the French broke through the line, the allies leapt up and opened fire at point-blank range, devastating Napoleon's 'unbeatable' force. For the first time in the history of Napoleon's Grande Armée, the cry of "the guard is retreating!" rang through the field. The guard, Napoleon's ace in the hole, had been defeated.

The effect was instant. The French hurried to escape the field and Wellington threw his forces upon the retreating soldiers. Around the same time the Prussians had managed to recapture Plancenoit, and the Old Guard, who had been supporting the French position there, joined the mass of troops retreating in panic. What began as a defeat turned into a rout as the Prussian forces joined the fray, lancing retreating Frenchmen in the back as retribution for the devastation they had felt at the hands of the French Empire. Knowing all was lost, Napoleon made an attempt to plunge himself into the heart of enemy fire, but was prevented from doing so. Embittered, broken and defeated, Napoleon was spotted the next morning by one of his officers, standing near a fire, with tears streaming down his face.

NAPOLEON MYTHS BUSTED

He took a step back in battle

Napoleon was involved in all aspects of battles – he devised plans and directed attacks. He kept good relations with army units and referred to officers and many soldiers by name, inspiring great loyalty from troops.

Napoleon had plenty of opportunity to rally his troops to fight again. He had, after all, 117,000 men in his control in the north – but he did nothing. Battles were fought and won by France, but not by Napoleon. Perhaps then he had realised the ultimate truth – he could win as many battles as he liked, but he could not win the war. The united allied forces were too strong; his own position in Paris too precarious. The campaign, he realised, was lost before it even began. When Napoleon returned to Paris in the early hours of 21 June, he was warned that he was safer to remain with the army, but he bitterly replied: "The blow I have received is mortal." He dully asked for a meeting to build another army to save the country. When this was denied, his response was nothing but alarming laughter. The chamber of representatives, perhaps still a little wary of Napoleon's hold over his followers, invited him to abdicate. Refusal, they told him, would mean deposition. Napoleon abdicated for the second and final time the following day.

After he learned of the Prussians' plans to capture him dead or alive, Napoleon fled the city and considered escaping to the United States. However, this plan proved impossible and instead Napoleon, clearly now a desperate man, sought asylum from his long-time enemies, the British. They responded by placing him on the island of Saint Helena. Although he was still accompanied by a band of loyal followers, his exile marked the end of Napoleon's leadership. He was forced to live out his remaining days in the decrepit and damp conditions of Longwood House. Within six years he was dead. Although his passing marked the end of the conquests that had shaken the foundations of the earth, it was the beginning of a legacy that still burns strongly to this day.

© Alamy, Getty Images, Sol 90 Images

Enigma

HOW BRITAIN'S CODEBREAKERS TURNED THE TIDE IN WWII

Discover how the men and women of Bletchley Park cracked the 'unbreakable' German Enigma and helped defeat Hitler's Nazis

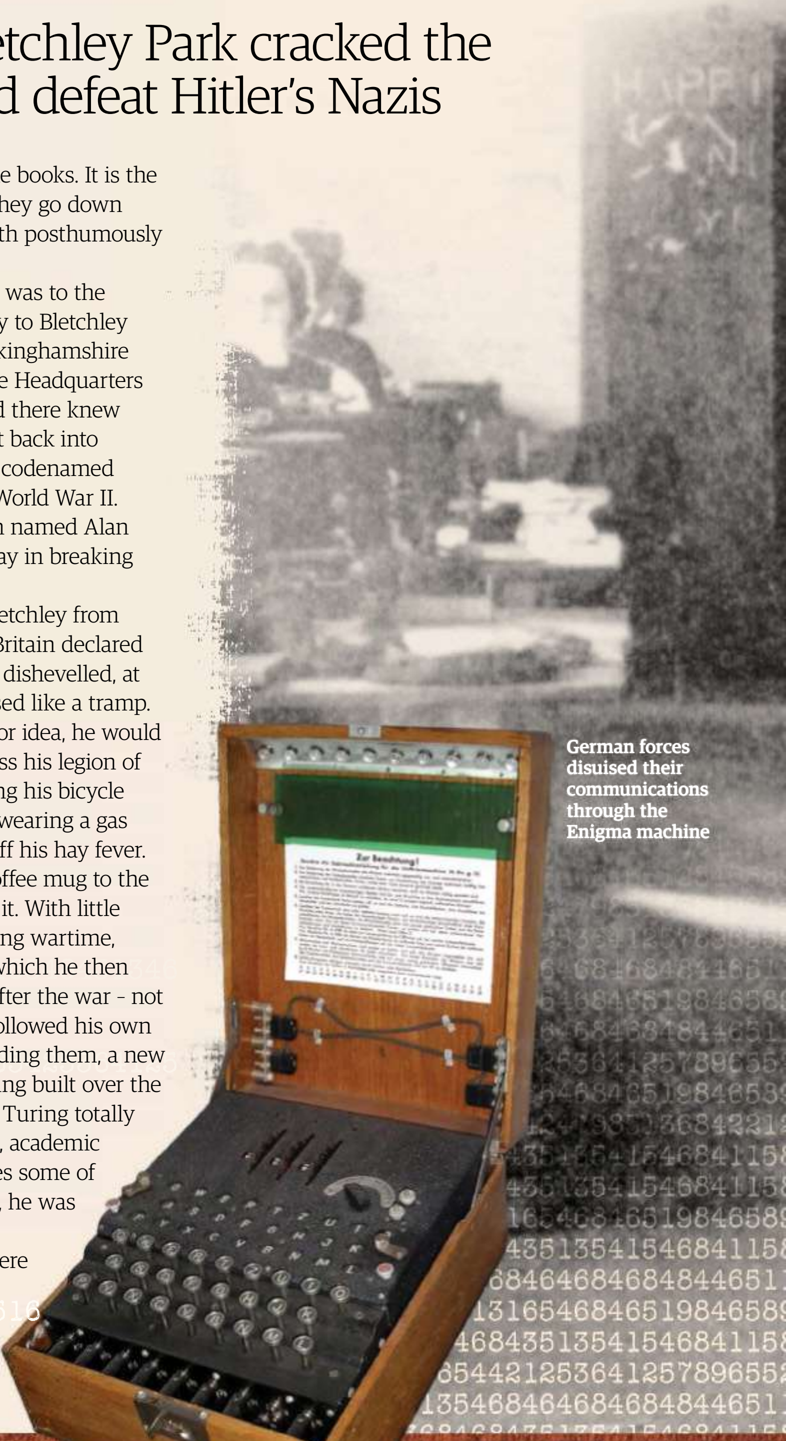
It's February 1942; the carnage of World War II shows no signs of stopping and the balance of world power is precariously poised. Night is about to fall on the Atlantic Ocean and as darkness comes the water is inky-black and icy. In the depths of seas around the world, German U-boats cruise like predators stalking their prey. They lie in wait, patiently waiting their turn to pounce; brazenly, some even encircle convoys, sailing invisibly around them. On this night, one U-boat fires off its torpedoes and an American convoy ship is engulfed in bright flames that light up the sky. The crew on this convoy know they will perish in this icy sea and that the vital supplies and provisions they are carrying across the Atlantic to Britain will also be lost. As screams and shouts finally give way to an eerie silence, its neighbours can only watch helplessly, fearing their turn may soon come. The deadly wolf pack have claimed another victim. The Allies are virtually defenceless against them, knowing only that these deadly ships will strike again, but not where or when.

As the year draws to a close a German U-boat, the U-559, is spotted off the coast of Palestine by HMS Petard and subsequently depth-charged. This time it is the U-boat crew who know that all is lost: their vessel is sinking and they must abandon ship. Lieutenant Anthony Fasson, Able Seaman Colin Grazier and Tommy Brown swim out to it, even though the boat is rapidly sinking below the waves. Seeing some lights remaining on inside the boat, they are astounded to find a four-rotor Enigma (the machine the Germans use for communications) and a book of current Enigma keys. In an act of bravery and ingenuity, they wrap the machine, the keys and the bigram tables in waterproof material, and rescue them for the Allies, not realising how vital their discovery will prove to be. With supreme effort, they manage to reach 16-year-old Naafi boy Tommy Brown, who has waited outside the boat, and hand him the machine and the books. It is the last act of Fasson and Grazier, for they go down with U-559 as it sinks. They are both posthumously awarded the George Cross.

This treasure – for that is what it was to the British codebreakers – made its way to Bletchley Park, a country house in rural Buckinghamshire that had been set up as Intelligence Headquarters at the start of the war. Those based there knew they now had a good chance to get back into breaking the German naval codes, codenamed 'Shark', and affect the outcome of World War II. An eccentric young mathematician named Alan Turing would have a key role to play in breaking the Nazi code.

Born in 1912, Turing came to Bletchley from Cambridge, aged 27, the day after Britain declared war on Germany. His clothes were dishevelled, at best; others thought he often dressed like a tramp. When excited over some problem or idea, he would stutter with his eagerness to express his legion of ideas. He would often be seen riding his bicycle around the Bletchley countryside, wearing a gas mask to avoid the pollen that set off his hay fever. In his office, he would chain his coffee mug to the radiator so no one else would take it. With little faith in banking and currency during wartime, he put his money into silver bars which he then buried, intending to dig them up after the war – not realising that by the time he had followed his own elaborate set of instructions for finding them, a new town called Milton Keynes was being built over the countryside. To the onlooker, Alan Turing totally fitted the bill of a typical, eccentric, academic boffin; to his colleagues, themselves some of the brightest minds in the country, he was a true genius of his time.

The Allies knew the Germans were using a machine named Enigma and teams of codebreakers



German forces disuised their communications through the Enigma machine

Glossary

Enigma: Resembling an expanded typewriter, the Germans used this machine for communication. It is a portable machine that enciphers and deciphers messages using a keyboard, rotors and electrical impulses to generate millions of possible letter combinations.

Typex machine: Standard British cipher machine with special modifications so that it operated like Enigma, with rotors, keyboard and a paper feed with a printer. It was used to turn encrypted text back into German.

Bombe: Not a computer, but an electronic machine that could check off, at speed, hundreds of possible letter combinations to reduce the potential number of that day's possible Enigma settings.

Crib: An intelligent guess by looking for patterns in the coded text, usually found in common phrases or words used by the German operators, or sometimes by spotting their mistakes, such as a repeated word lazy use of their girlfriend's name or a rude word.

Cillis: Procedural errors by German Enigma operators, where they used recognisable message settings instead of random, or had failed to alter the rotor wheel position before sending their text.

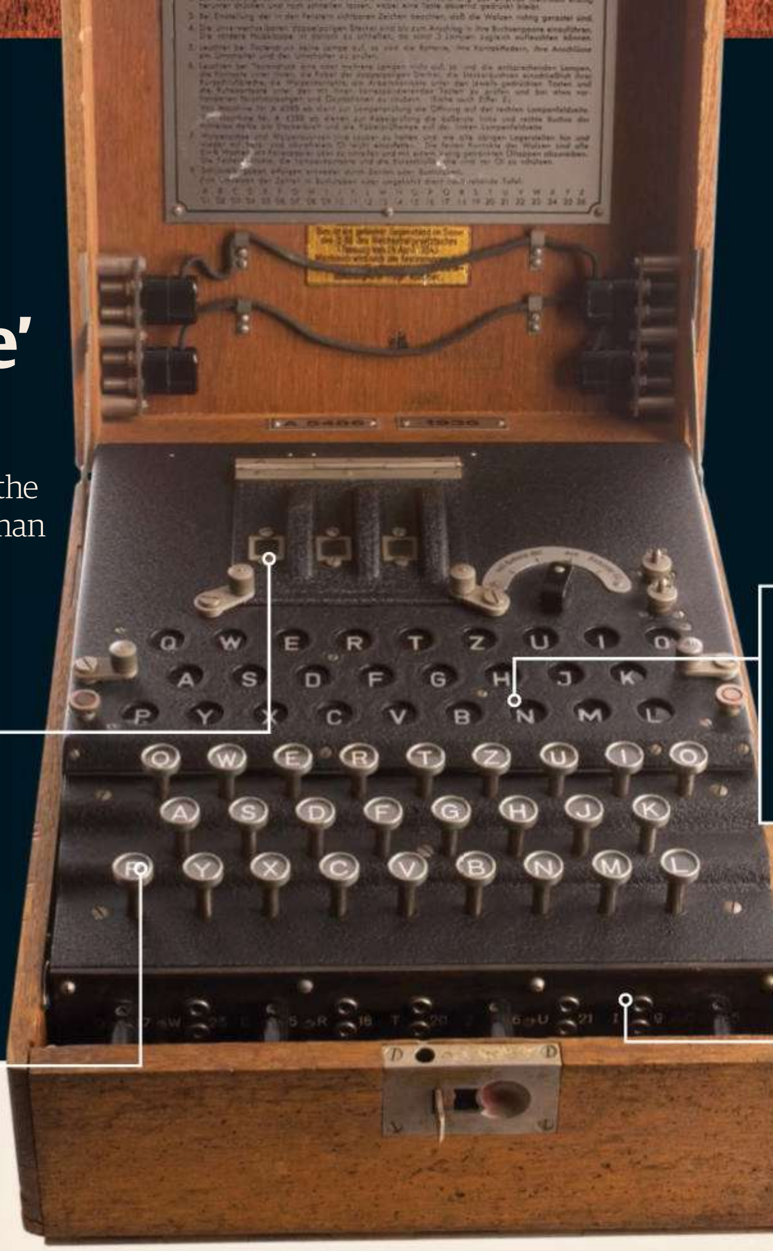
Menu: A set of diagrams based on that day's 'cribs', to feed into the Bombes to help reduce the length of time needed to confirm that day's Enigma settings.

Wrens: Members of the Women's Royal Naval Service.

Colossus: The world's first semi-programmable computer. A practical, digital processing machine, it used 1,500 valves and could do mathematical calculations in hours that had taken weeks by hand.

The 'unbreakable' Enigma

Discover the main devices on the complicated and portable German communications machine



Rotors
The standard Enigma had three rotors, the advanced machine had four. These scrambled messages into unintelligible cipher text. Each rotor had numbered ring scales for each of the German Armed Forces and the rotors could be changed daily. The settings were changed at midnight and each rotor could be set to any one of 26 different ring settings.

Keyboard
As the operator pressed one of the 'typewriter' keys, an electric current was sent through the rotating code-letter wheels. No enigma letter could ever be enciphered as itself. The recipient operator would type into his machine the received Morse message in the same order.

Lampboard
Each typed key sent an electrical impulse through the machine and a letter would light up on the adjacent lampboard. This would be repeated until the whole message had been enciphered, when it would then be radioed in Morse to its recipient. The lampboard would light up with the real letters as the cipher was typed in.

Plugboard
This made the machine's wiring much more complicated, increasing the possible encoding combinations by millions. The plugboard settings could also be changed daily. The A-socket of the plugboard connected to the first terminal inside the entry plate, the B-socket to the second, and so on.

DILLY KNOX

British, 1884-1943

Brief Bio

Knox worked with Turing from September 1939 at Bletchley, from where the first breaks into daily-changing Enigma were made. Knox and his team, Intelligence Service Knox, broke the German Secret Service (Abwehr) codes in December 1941. An Old Etonian and a student from King's College, Cambridge, Knox was regarded as brilliant but eccentric. His background was in classics rather than mathematics.

> "For the duration of the War, Hitler believed Enigma to be unbreakable, especially after the German Army changed the cipher daily instead of once every few months"

at Bletchley were trying to crack the code this machine used. The teams worked in newly constructed prefabricated huts, each given a number instead of a name for secrecy. In Hut 8 they were concentrating on cracking the German Naval ciphers. They already knew that Naval Enigma operators were more careful than Army operators, thus making it harder to use educated guesses, or 'cribs', to spot German mistakes. But now they realised the number of possible settings were hugely expanded, due to the increase in code wheels on the four-rotor Enigma. Turing, already working on updating the Polish Bombe machines, realised the vital importance of having machines that could speed up the process by mechanically checking off these millions of settings combinations.

While at Cambridge before the war, Turing had developed an original idea: a 'Universal Turing Machine', a sort of 'super-typewriter' that could identify symbols, write, erase and carry out other tasks, all automatically and without human intervention. However, having studied previous Polish encription machines and a replica Enigma, Turing knew he needed more than even his hypothetical machine. So he studied the mechanics of Enigma, the rotors, wiring and boards, and sought to devise an electrical system with circuits that could decrypt that same text.

Human intervention, Turing knew, was still essential: 'cribs' and mathematical work would still be needed to help the Bombe machine, the device that would decipher encrypted German messages. The thought of a machine capable of checking millions of combinations at speed was revolutionary. However, Turing was a theoretician rather than a practical codebreaker, so Gordon Welchman, a codebreaker and brilliant administrator working in Hut 6, recruited Oliver

A brief history of WWII's codemakers and breakers

1923

Invention
A Dutch invention, the first cipher motor machine is patented by Dr Arthur Scherbius, who markets it at the 1923 International Postal Union Congress for use in banking, but it proves unsuccessful. Enigma is marketed for use in Germany's armed forces instead for its potential for military use.

1932

The Poles
Three Polish mathematicians – Marian Rejewski, Henryk Zygalski and Jerzy Rozycki – make the first break into military Enigma using mathematical methods. This includes the invention of Zygalski sheets, a slow and time-consuming method that was used in the days before advances were made to the Enigma machine.

1939

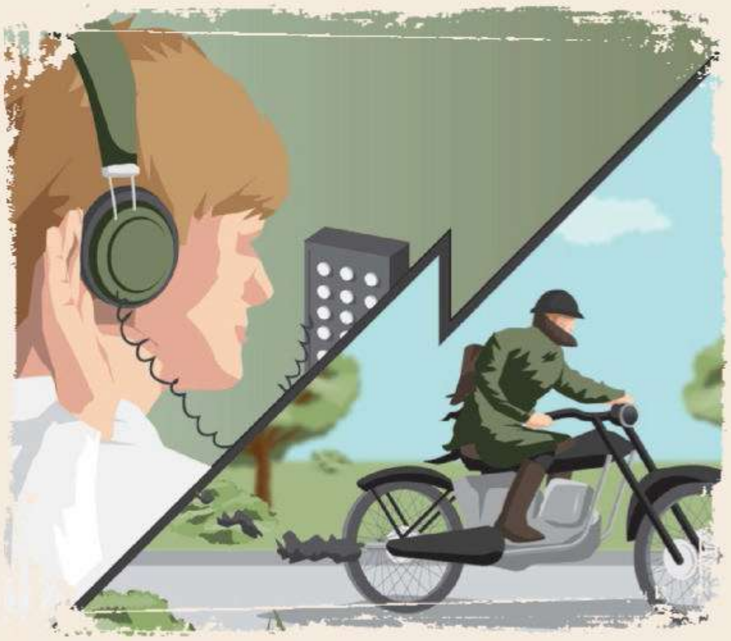
Sharing secrets
In July, a secret meeting takes place in Poland between representatives of Bletchley Park (Peter Twinn, Dilly Knox, Alan Turing and Tony Kendrick) and Gustav Bertrand of French Intelligence, to share discoveries made since 1932 by Polish cryptanalysts. By September, the Poles have passed models of Enigma to British intelligence.

1940

Breaks, Bombes and tips
In January the 'Green' (Army) and 'Red' (Luftwaffe) Enigma keys are cracked and in February the sinking of U-33 brings Bletchley its first 'pinch': an Enigma machine. By March the first Bombe machine, 'Victory', is installed into Hut 1 and later that year a new Enigma key is introduced.

Step-by-step guide to codebreaking

Follow our six-point guide to crack codes like they did in Bletchley Park



01 Listen to the enemy to gather the intelligence

At Station X, Bletchley originally used a radio-transmitting room at the top of the Mansion House's turreted tower to intercept Morse, teleprinter and radio codes. However, Bletchley's secret location needed protection, so a series of 'Y' stations were set up across the country. Intercepts were sent to Bletchley either by motorcycle courier or by direct teleprinter line, and were logged into the Registration Room.

02 Break the cipher using mathematics and cribs

Using brainpower and ingenuity, the codebreakers first worked by hand by looking for features that corresponded to the original plain text. Using cribs and contact analysis, the codebreakers could often spot a possible pattern in the text. Human error on the part of the operators and psychology (imagining how the operators might undertake their work) also came into play when looking for cribs.

03 Make sense of the nonsense

Process and check that day's 'cribs', then set up the Typex machines to the same settings as the Enigma machine and type in the enciphered message. Once deciphered it would come out on long strips of paper; cut and glued onto the back of the original message, they were sent back to Hut 6 to finish any decryption left over, via a specially built chute, and then ultimately to Hut 3 for final translation and strategic analysis by a special team.

04 Translate and understand the German plain text

Hut 3 would use linguists to translate German, Italian and Japanese codes, using the decrypted text sent from Hut 6. At this stage, the Index room would check and cross-reference to see if anything could be spotted that had been seen before, using Hollerith machines and thousands of index cards in Block C. Once analysed, the information was ready to send on as usable intelligence to Churchill in his daily update.

05 Send intelligence to Churchill and commanders in the field

Only a few commanders knew about Bletchley and were forbidden to act on its findings, codenamed 'Ultra', until the Germans had been deceived into thinking it had come from another source altogether. 'Special Communication Units' were set up to feed information to the field, first in France in May 1940, then in North Africa and elsewhere from March 1941. All 'Ultra' messages were destroyed once received.

1941

Cracking Dolphin

Using the 'rodding' technique, the Italian Naval cipher is broken after the Battle of Matapan by Dilly Knox and his 'girls.' With the recovery of Enigma coding documents and notebooks from German submarines, notably U-110, along with repetitive weather transmissions, Bletchley is finally able to read German Naval Enigma.

1942

Cracking Shark

In February, the Germans introduce a more complex four-rotor Enigma for U-boats: 'Shark', leading to a blackout. In October, two German short-signal codebooks arrive at Bletchley, rescued from U-559 by Fasson and Grazier on HMS Petard. Shaun Wylie and the Hut 8 codebreakers can now break Shark and read U-boat traffic.

1943

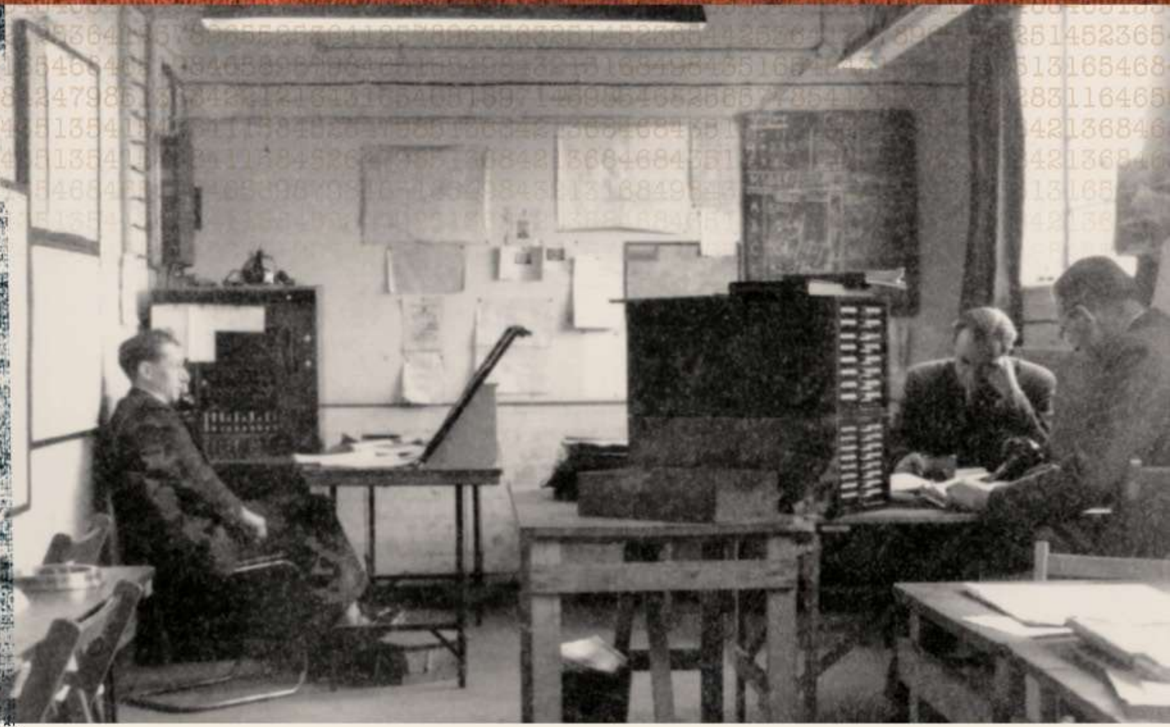
Colossus

The Germans introduce a new short weather code, but Hut 8 avoid another blackout with the help of the faster Bombes. Shark is re-broken within ten days – a deciding factor in the Second Battle of the Atlantic. Max Newman and Tommy Flowers design and build Colossus, the world's first semi-programmable computer.

1944

D-Day success

Hut 8 and Hut 4's crucial decryption and translation of German Naval Enigma plays a key role in the Double Cross deception, codenamed Operation Fortitude South, fooling Hitler into believing the Allied landings were planned for Pas de Calais and not Normandy, thus having a huge impact on the outcome of D-Day.



Eyewitness Jean Valentine

The former member of the Women's Royal Naval Service served at Bletchley

Image courtesy of Bletchley Park Trust

How did you come to be at Bletchley?
I grew up in Perth, Scotland, and when I was 18 I decided to join up. I took an intelligence test at a local Navy recruiting centre. When I got my summons, I was given a railway warrant to go to a training centre for Wrens in Dumbartonshire. After two weeks I was told I was going to be sent to London, but was not told what my work would be. I was then sent on from London to a Y Station in Eastcote, Middlesex, where I first saw a Bombe machine. Later I was sent to work at Bletchley Park.

Were you aware of the other work going on at the Park?
No, everything was compartmentalised. When I was working on the Bombes, if we got a possible result we would phone it through to an extension number: it wasn't until after the war that I realised I had been phoning Hut 6 just across the path! If the menu had worked and German text came out on the tape, it went to the pink hut just opposite Hut 11 where it was translated into English. Apart from that small section of the Park, I had nothing to do with any other work carried out elsewhere.

What did you do in your free time?
We used to go to the village hop on a free Saturday night. There were lots of clubs and societies at the Park, which men and women could attend if their shifts allowed and if they could get to and from their billets to attend: music, theatre, sports; [it featured] a huge variety.

What was the work like?
The shifts were quite arduous: 8am to 4pm, 4pm to midnight or midnight to 8am. Once you had learnt how to work the Bombe it wasn't complicated, just repetitive. The Bombe would search for answers and would stop if it thought it had found one. It was noisy, but like a tickety-click noise; it didn't really bother me, although it did others. We were young and disciplined and knew we were part of the war effort so we just got on with it. I found the work a rather fascinating experience; I enjoyed it! There were all sorts of people working at the Park, all different classes, and we just all worked together. Everyone was treated the same, whether military or civilian. The night shifts were a bit disruptive – especially on our eating patterns. There were some cases of burnout: I was once sent to the sick bay and slept for nearly three days! Then I had two weeks leave and came back refreshed.

What did you do after Bletchley?
In 1944 when I was 19 years old, I was sent to Ceylon to work on Japanese meteorological codes; I stayed there for 15 months. I never told a soul I was working at Bletchley Park. It was a great surprise when the first book came out in 1974 and the big secret was out. However, many people were uncomfortable with talking about Bletchley after all that time, and some are still.

Lawn, a mathematician from Cambridge, to help with the making of the machine; thus 'Victory', the first Bombe, was built and installed in Hut 1 on 18 March 1940. Welchman later improved the design of the Bombe with an electronic diagonal board, which increased the machine's powers and capabilities.

Although the German Air Force Enigma was by now being read daily, Naval Enigma proved a tougher nut to crack. In 1941, two significant sea battles - one inside the Arctic Circle, one in the Atlantic - led to the recovery of Enigma coding documents. It was with this information that Turing calculated a new method he called 'Banburismus', because it involved holes punched on long pieces of paper made at Banbury. For the rest of the summer of 1941, Bletchley was able to read the majority of German Naval Enigma, thus providing vital protection to British shipping and a real success story for Bletchley. A significant breakthrough had been achieved, but the team would face tougher battles as the war rumbled on.

The genesis of Bletchley occurs in August 1938 when, at a small rural railway station half way between the university cities of Oxford and Cambridge, a group of ordinary looking people arrive for a social gathering at Bletchley's Victorian country house. Led by Captain Ridley, the entourage are here to enjoy that simple but favoured pursuit of the upper classes: a shooting party weekend. Or are they? In fact, the group of men assembling at this isolated location in the depths of the Buckinghamshire countryside are all either members of MI6 and the Government Code & Cipher School (GC&CS), or esteemed scholars and academics, turned codebreakers. For now, they will assess the mansion house and its surrounding area as a possible location to site intelligence operations in the event of a war that seems likelier with every inflamed speech Hitler gives.

GORDON WELCHMAN

British, 1906-1985

Brief Bio

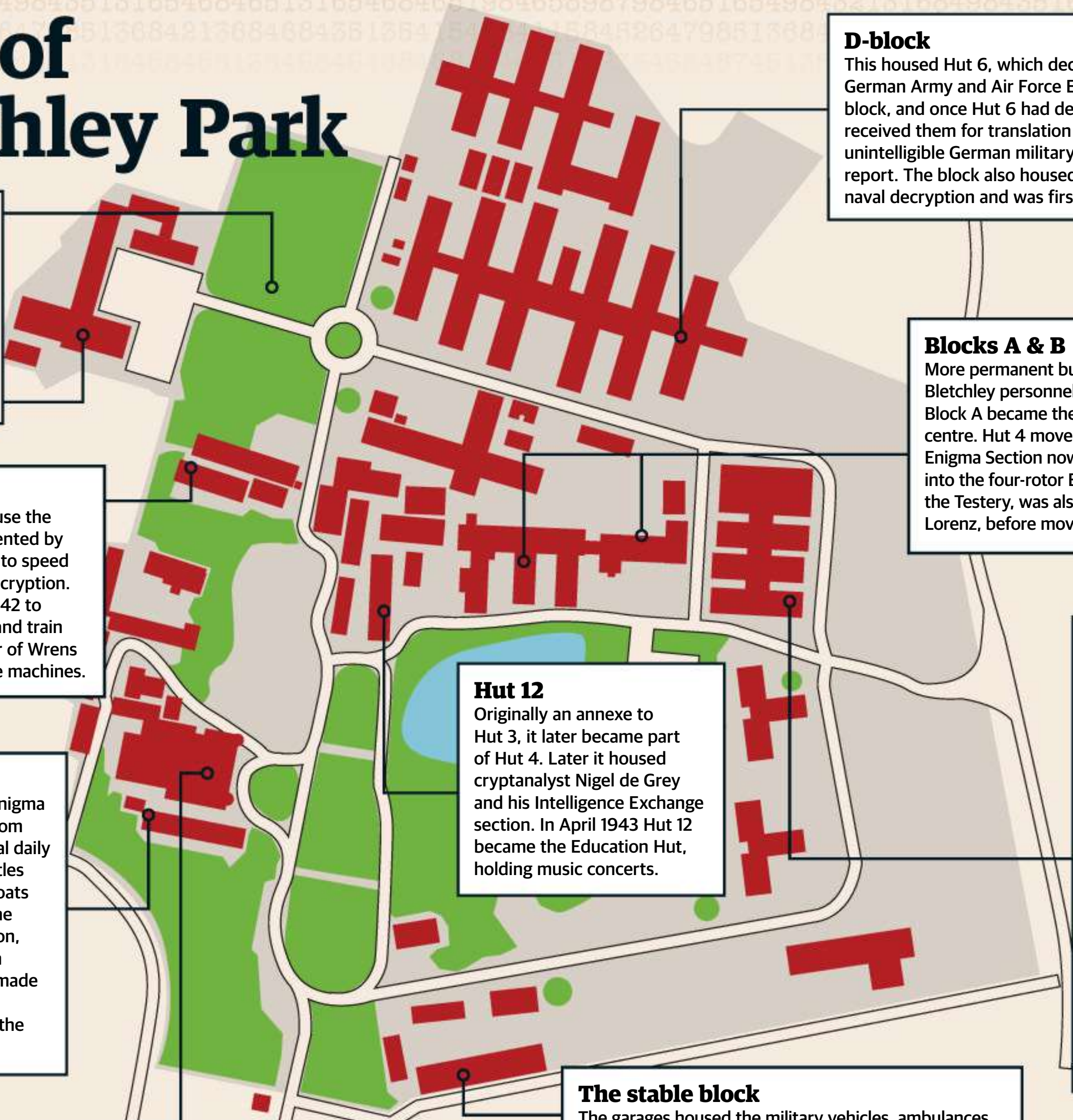
Recruited by Alastair Denniston from Cambridge, after a short two-week course in London in March 1939, he reported to work at Bletchley on 4 September. He instigated Hut 6 Traffic Analysis (SIXTA), and with his immense organisational skills he turned Bletchley Park from a cottage industry to an efficient organisation taking in intercepts and outputting intelligence 24 hours a day, seven days a week, every day of the year.

When the inevitable happens, they and others return to begin the work that some later believed shortened the war by two years. Men and women from all walks of life will descend onto the railway platform and begin the walk up to Bletchley Park: mathematicians, classicists, engineers, Wrens, WAAFs, linguists, typists, administrators and even debutantes. Each will become a small cog in a large wheel, working independently and under extreme secrecy, unaware of the work being carried out in any hut outside their own. Having signed the Official Secrets Act, they are aware only of the vital importance their work could be to the war effort and that they can never speak of it to anyone.

Despite their undoubted brilliance, it wasn't the British at Bletchley who first made a break into Enigma: that distinction belongs to another nation entirely. In 1932, the Polish had first cracked Enigma; at the time, the cipher changed only once every few months, but by the outbreak of the war it was daily. With the invasion of Poland imminent, they turned to the British for help in breaking the Enigma settings, now running at an intimidating 15 trillion possible combinations - that's a staggering 15 billion billion.

Teams of top codebreakers were installed at Bletchley Park in the prefabricated numbered huts. These teams were led by Dilly Knox, John Jeffreys, Peter Twinn and Alan Turing. The first breakthrough came with the unravelling of the administrative key used by the German Army, simply known as 'The Green.' This was followed by breaking the 'Red' key, which was used by the Luftwaffe. Of course, it was of paramount importance that the secret that Enigma's code was being broken was kept secure, so a cover MI6 'spy', nicknamed 'Boniface', was invented; throughout the war, Germany believed any breaks in intelligence came as a result of double agents working in the field, instead of a remote codebreaking team.

Map of Bletchley Park



Blocks F & H
These housed the Testery, Newmanry and the Heath Robinson and Colossus machines. Block F also housed Japanese codebreaking.

Huts 11 and 11A
Hut 11 was built to house the Bombe machines, invented by Turing and Welchman to speed up Enigma settings decryption. Hut 11A was built in 1942 to house more Bombes and train the increasing number of Wrens needed to operate the machines.

Hut 4
Used for decrypting Enigma messages sent over from Hut 8, providing crucial daily intelligence in the battles between German U-boats and Allied convoys. The Double Cross Deception, codenamed Operation Fortitude South, was made possible by messages processed in Hut 4 in the lead-up to D-Day.

The mansion
Headquarters and recreational; housed senior staff's offices. Originally held the telephone exchange and teleprinter rooms, later moved to a blast-proof hut. This Victorian country house also had a dining room, library, billiard room and ballroom.

D-block
This housed Hut 6, which decrypted daily settings of the German Army and Air Force Enigma. Hut 3 was also in this block, and once Hut 6 had decrypted the messages, Hut 3 received them for translation and analysis, making often-unintelligible German military language read like a credible report. The block also housed Hut 8, which was used for naval decryption and was first headed by Turing.

Blocks A & B
More permanent buildings were needed as Bletchley personnel outgrew the wooden huts. Block A became the Naval Section's decoding centre. Hut 4 moved to Block B in 1942. The Naval Enigma Section now concentrated on breaking into the four-rotor Enigma. Ralph Tester's section, the Testery, was also housed here to break into Lorenz, before moving into Block F.

Hut 12
Originally an annexe to Hut 3, it later became part of Hut 4. Later it housed cryptanalyst Nigel de Grey and his Intelligence Exchange section. In April 1943 Hut 12 became the Education Hut, holding music concerts.

Block C
A huge clerical index was created by punching onto cards using Hollerith machines. Clerical staff built up a cross-referencing system to help the codebreakers, detailing names of personnel, locations and units. Each week, up to two million cards were used; they were stored in thousands of brown cardboard boxes. Each card was photographed and sent to the Bodleian Library in Oxford as a back-up.

The stable block
The garages housed the military vehicles, ambulances and carrier pigeons; three linked cottages became staff accommodation; the former fruit store became Turing and Knox's 'think-tank' room, known as 'the bungalow.'

What the senior staff's offices are believed to have looked like

The British used Typex cipher machines from 1937

The codebreaking mechanism was industrialised by the Bombe machine, invented by Alan Turing and Gordon Welchman in response to the need to speed up the process of running through all the possible Enigma wheel configurations. Operated by Wrens, the work was hot, smelly and noisy, but it was invaluable. By 1942, Bletchley's success had reached North Africa, where intelligence enabled the Royal Navy to cut Rommel's supply lines and keep General Montgomery informed of his every move. Early that year, however, the Germans introduced a more complex Enigma machine with an extra rotor. This caused a major information blackout and proved to be one of the greatest challenges to the codebreakers at Bletchley. However, by the end of 1942, the codebreakers had cracked that one too, thanks to the bravery of the seamen Fasson and Grazier who captured vital Enigma keys and books from the sinking U-559. From now on, Bletchley was able to read 'Shark'.

OLIVER LAWN

British, 1919-2012

Brief Bio

A mathematician and cryptanalyst, Lawn was recruited from Jesus College, Cambridge in July 1940 by Welchman to work on German Army and Air Force Enigma. Working in Hut 6 and then in Block D, he contributed to the design of the Bombes (high speed, four wheel) in 1943. In January 1944 he made the first break into new Enigma 'Uncle D' - a German modification of the three-rotor Army and Air Force Enigma with new reflector wheel and pluggable wiring.

However, it was the breaking of the German's strategic ciphers that gave Bletchley arguably its greatest success. Initially, manual efforts enabled the cracking of these ciphers, used by Hitler to communicate with Berlin and his commanders in the field. Professor Max Newman realised a new type of machine was needed to keep up with the increasing volume of intercepts being received. With the help of a brilliant young General Post Office (GPO) engineer, Tommy Flowers, such a machine was designed and constructed. This became known as Colossus: the world's first semi-programmable electronic computer and it became essential to the planning by Allied forces for the invasion of Europe and operation D-Day.

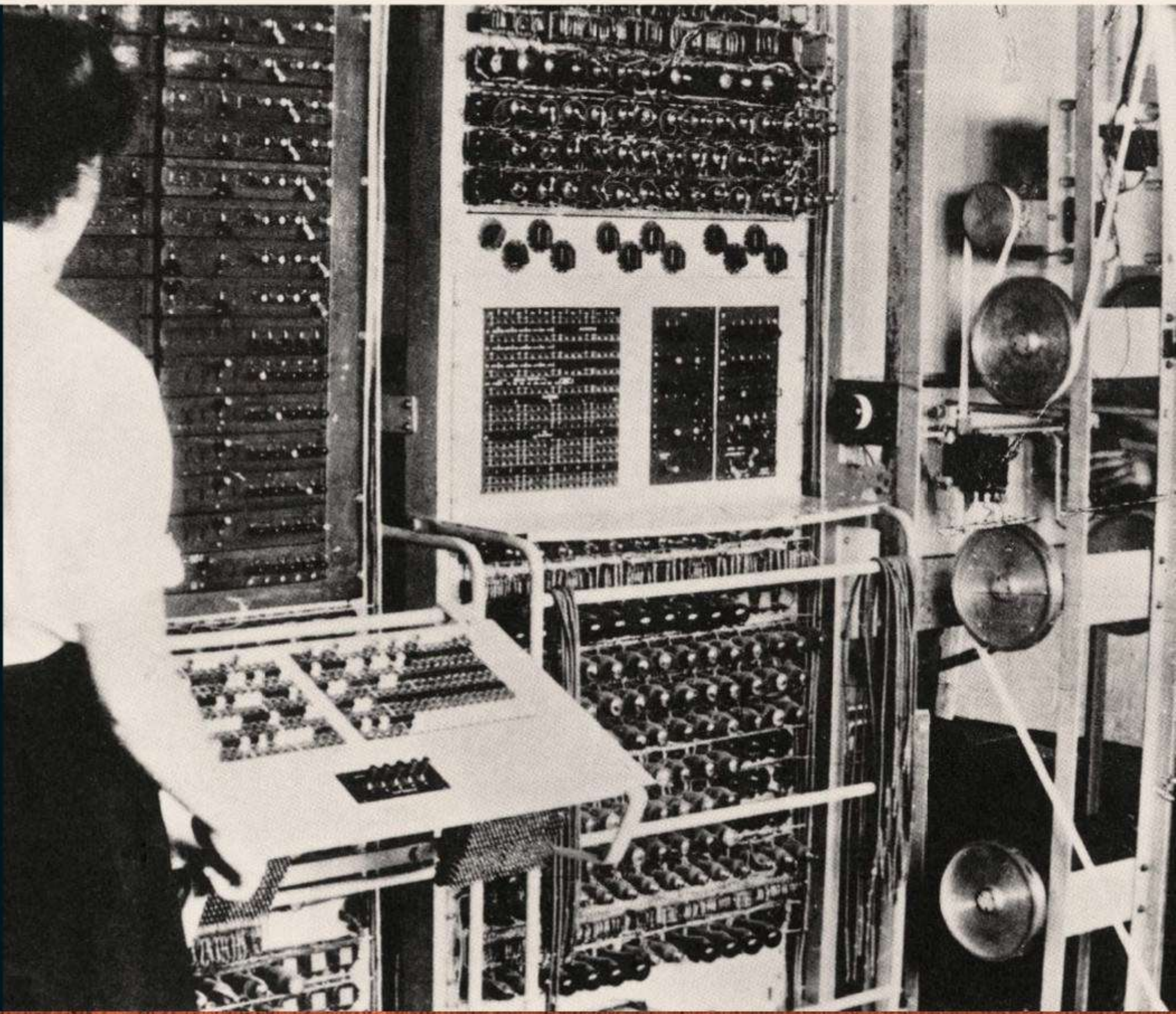
Such successes were hoped for at that first 'shooting party' at the mansion in 1938, but, certainly in the beginning, there were many - even within the government itself - who doubted the impact codebreakers could make to the strategic planning of the war. Of these codebreakers, perhaps the most famous known today is Alan Turing. He may have looked and even acted like a true eccentric, but he possessed one of the finest brains of his generation, and his unique ideas for a 'Universal Turing Machine' undoubtedly laid the groundwork not only for the development of the electronic machines built inside Bletchley as the War progressed, but also for the concept of the computer age. Even in a setting such as Bletchley that was filled with great minds he stood out, leading the historian and wartime codebreaker Asa Briggs to comment, "You needed exceptional talent, you needed genius at Bletchley and Turing's was that genius."

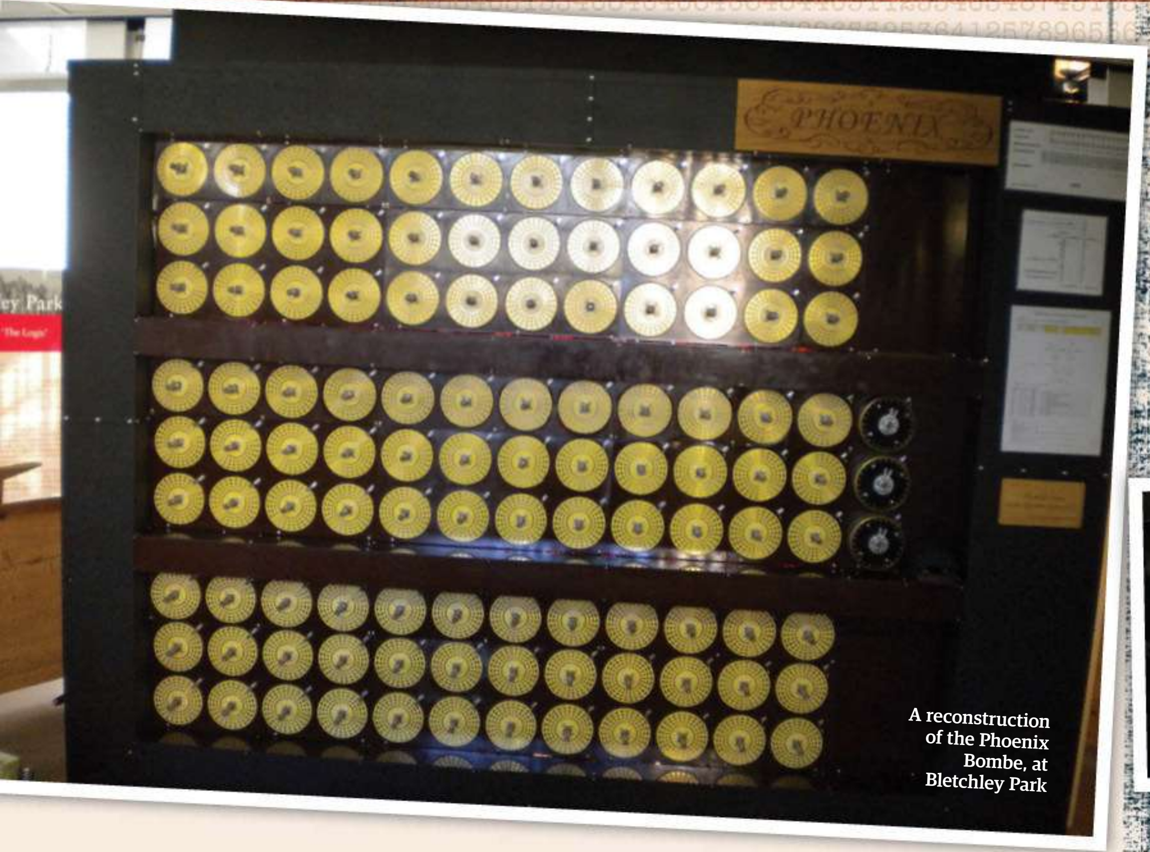
Of all his colleagues and codebreakers at Bletchley, his work with Tommy Flowers may have excited Turing the most. They first met in 1939, when the talented young GPO engineer was first introduced to the Enigma secret. Both men were enthusiastic, experts in their fields and respected each other from the outset. Turing would sometimes visit Flowers at his laboratory workshop in Dollis Hill, where they first discussed the idea of building a machine that could decrypt Enigma by using electromagnets. While this would prove to be beyond the scope of the technology then available, Turing's blueprints and vision for such a machine stayed with Flowers and later resulted in Colossus.

Churchill's golden geese

The British PM was one of Bletchley Park's biggest supporters

Daily boxes of high-level decrypts were sent to Churchill's office in locked boxes, the key to which he carried on his personal key ring. Only a select few in the Foreign Office and the military knew where they had come from, and not all of those shared Churchill's faith in Bletchley Park. During his visit in September 1941 he inspected the machines and huts, meeting senior codebreakers. Afterward, he gathered them outside Hut 6 for a short speech, in which he famously described them as his "geese that lay the golden egg - and never cackled." Recognising Churchill's support and respect, Bletchley sent him a letter asking for more staff. The prime minister's response was swift and decisive: "Make sure they have all they want on extreme priority and report to me that this has been done. Action this day."





A reconstruction of the Phoenix Bombe, at Bletchley Park

> "Turing would often be seen riding his bicycle around the Bletchley countryside, dressed in full gas mask to avoid the pollen that set off his hay fever"

Behind this genius was a troubled man, though. The former Cambridge student could be awkward socially and was a homosexual in an age when this was not only frowned upon, but actually illegal. He proposed to a colleague at Bletchley, Joan Clarke, who accepted, but he then recanted the offer and told her of his sexual orientation. Turing became something of an all-purpose consultant for the growing operation and crossed the Atlantic in November 1942, for highest-level liaison not only on the desperate U-boat Enigma crisis, but on the electronic enciphering of speech signals between Roosevelt and Churchill. His genius and contribution to the war effort was never properly acknowledged in his lifetime, though, and in 1952 he faced criminal charges after he struck up a relationship with another man, and was placed on hormonal treatment designed to reduce libido. In 1954, at the age of 42, Turing was found dead in his home in Manchester, having apparently committed suicide by cyanide poisoning.

Alan Turing devised a number of ways for breaking ciphers

Today, Turing is rightly celebrated for his many and varied achievements, and a bust of his head sits beside an exhibition of some of his personal effects. In 2009, Prime Minister Gordon Brown apologised on behalf of the government and the nation for Turing's prosecution, and publicly acknowledged the debt of gratitude owed to him by the Allies. The nation and the world's gratitude should be directed at Turing and those he worked with, all of whom passed through Bletchley's nondescript railway station. That station saw so much: the girl who joined the Wrens for the dashing uniform and a chance to serve at sea, who then found herself posted to a place just about as far from the sea as it was possible to get in England. The young man in the middle of his mathematics degree and a renowned chess champion, invited to put aside his studies for the duration, and the secretary, eager to 'do her bit', who applied for a clerical position in London but was found to be fluent in German and instead surprisingly given a train ticket to a small town called Bletchley.

They were ordinary men and women, some barely out of school, whose unique talents and skills were put to use in an extraordinary way. They all came willingly, if a little unknowingly - often via a small, anonymous house in Baker Street, where they signed the Official Secrets Act - to this seemingly insignificant Buckinghamshire town. As they stepped off those trains, they would have had no idea what amazing achievements they would become part of, even if they would never see recognition for it in their lifetime; nor could they have known the legacy they would help bestow on the nation. But come they did: first slowly, in their hundreds, then more and more as Britain faced the horrors of the Blitz, and then battles at Dunkirk and D-Day, until by 1945 there were about 10,000 people working at the Park. Bletchley is where their story begins, a story that can now be told in full and rightfully celebrated.

Bletchley's three greatest successes

The code-breaking centre's greatest achievements

01 Cracking Lorenz

Although the 'Y' Stations were intercepting the German cipher machine Lorenz messages in early-1940, they had no idea how the machine was encrypting them. John Tiltman spotted an operator's repetition with abbreviations in August 1941 and used these small inconsistencies to crack the code. Bill Tutte used mathematical analysis to work out how the Lorenz machine worked without even seeing one and by 1942 Lorenz messages were being deciphered. Complications to the Lorenz design in 1943 led Max Newman and his team to need to design an entirely new electronic machine that would break Lorenz; the Colossus.

02 The invention of Colossus

Tommy Flowers, a brilliant GPO engineer, built Newman's design and created the world's first electronic semi-programmable computer in December 1943. By the end of the war, the ten Colossus machines in use were ordered to be dismantled, along with all records but only six were. It had taken weeks to break Lorenz with mathematical calculations: Colossus could do this in hours, reading the paper tape at 5,000 characters a second and sending the tape travelling in the wheels at 48 kilometres (30 miles) per hour.

03 D-Day

Without Bletchley, D-Day may well have had a different outcome. In June 1944, Colossus helped to fool German High Command of Allied plans. As well as providing information on German positions, the breaking of ciphers sent by the German Secret Intelligence Service allowed the Allies to confuse Hitler over where they would land; Hitler decided to divert his troops away from the very beaches the Allies had chosen in Normandy. Bletchley was able to read messages between Garbo (a network of 27 fictitious spies) and the Abwehr, showing Hitler had fallen for the deception.

© Alamy, Getty, Edward Crooks

What if…

The USA had won the Vietnam War?

VIETNAM, 1955-1975

DR ANDREW WIEST

Dr Andrew Wiest currently lectures at the University of Southern Mississippi and is the founding director of the Dale Centre for War and Society. His books include *The Boys Of '67: Charlie Company's War In Vietnam*, *Vietnam's Forgotten Army: Heroism And Betrayal In The ARVN* and *Vietnam: A View From The Front Lines*. He has also organised trips for Vietnam veterans suffering from PTSD, to visit the country they once fought in. Wiest has developed a 'study abroad' programme for US students wishing to soak up Saigon or Hanoi.

What would have happened if the United States had won the Vietnam War?

There are a lot of academics and historians who look at Vietnam as a part of something much bigger – namely the Cold War. So if the US had won, the Cold War would probably have ended a little sooner and the dawn of that unilateral superpower controlling things would have come quicker.

In Southeast Asia, everything would be radically different – including a faster and more thorough confrontation between the USA and China. I doubt China would have sat by and let an American victory happen without repercussion – even though they were not exactly fans of the Vietnamese either.

I don't think Beijing would have invaded Vietnam to repel the Americans, as they did in Korea, but it certainly would have been the USA against China and Russia. And it would have been a war that was not just cold but glacial. American politics would certainly have been more tumultuous as well.

If you look at the US presidential elections since the 1960s – every one of them has been fought over Vietnam to one extent or another. It is still the most controversial aspect of a controversial time period. Had they come out of that smiling, with another greatest generation on their hands, US politics would have looked quite different. For instance, it is hard to see the Republican revolution taking place. Republicans typically have an aggressive foreign policy, it is one of their tropes, but if Democratic policy had won in Vietnam – because it was the Democrats who started the war in Southeast Asia – that would have taken a lot of heat away from their rivals.

Would they have become involved in more conflicts?

Yes, I think the USA would have been much less gun-shy during the 1970s and 1980s. Reagan tinkered with it but that use of force to solve conflicts didn't really come back until the first Bush and then with Bill Clinton. The reason the US did not rely on its military, on any great scale at least, to solve problems during the 1970s and the 1980s was all down to the country's failure in Vietnam.

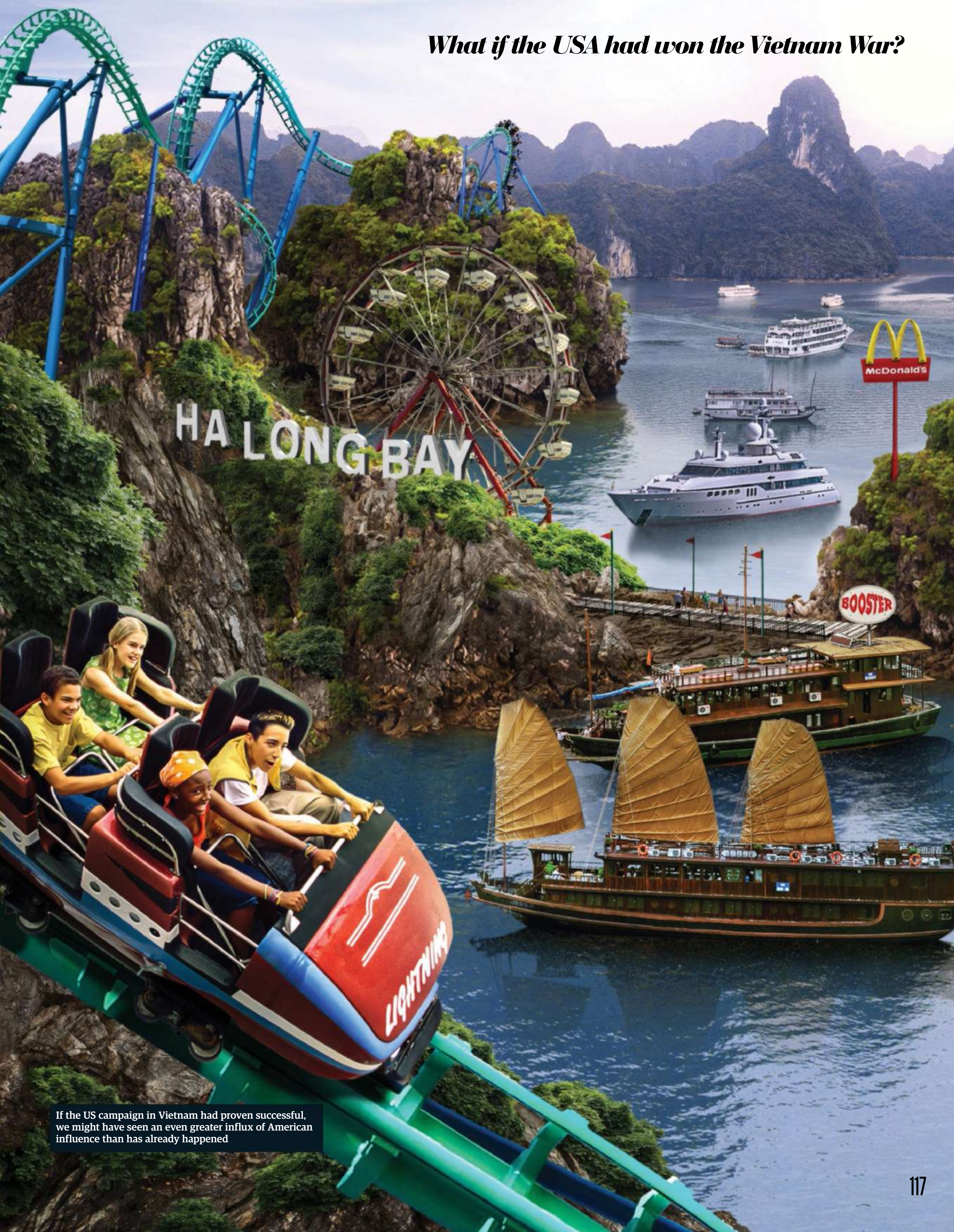
When the Vietnam War began to cross into Cambodia it created the environment in which Pol Pot and the Khmer Rouge came to power. What resulted was a four-year holocaust. Could this have been avoided?

If the USA was ever going to win the Vietnam War it would have been during the Tet Offensive of 1968. That was the turning point and that was when the public, back in the United States, saw the North Vietnamese were not just going to retreat and surrender – it was literally a fight to the death.

Of course, there was no big, magical American victory during Tet, but let's imagine there was. Let's imagine the US had repelled that attack quickly and conclusively and the war was essentially over as a result. At that point in time, the Khmer Rouge was not a big player in the conflict. It is only after the US began its military incursions into Cambodia and the government in that country began to fall that everything became out of hand. A victorious USA in Vietnam would not have required any entrance into Cambodia and, as a result, you almost certainly would not have seen the rise of the Khmer Rouge. They are intrinsically tied to how the Vietnam War progressed, no doubt about that.

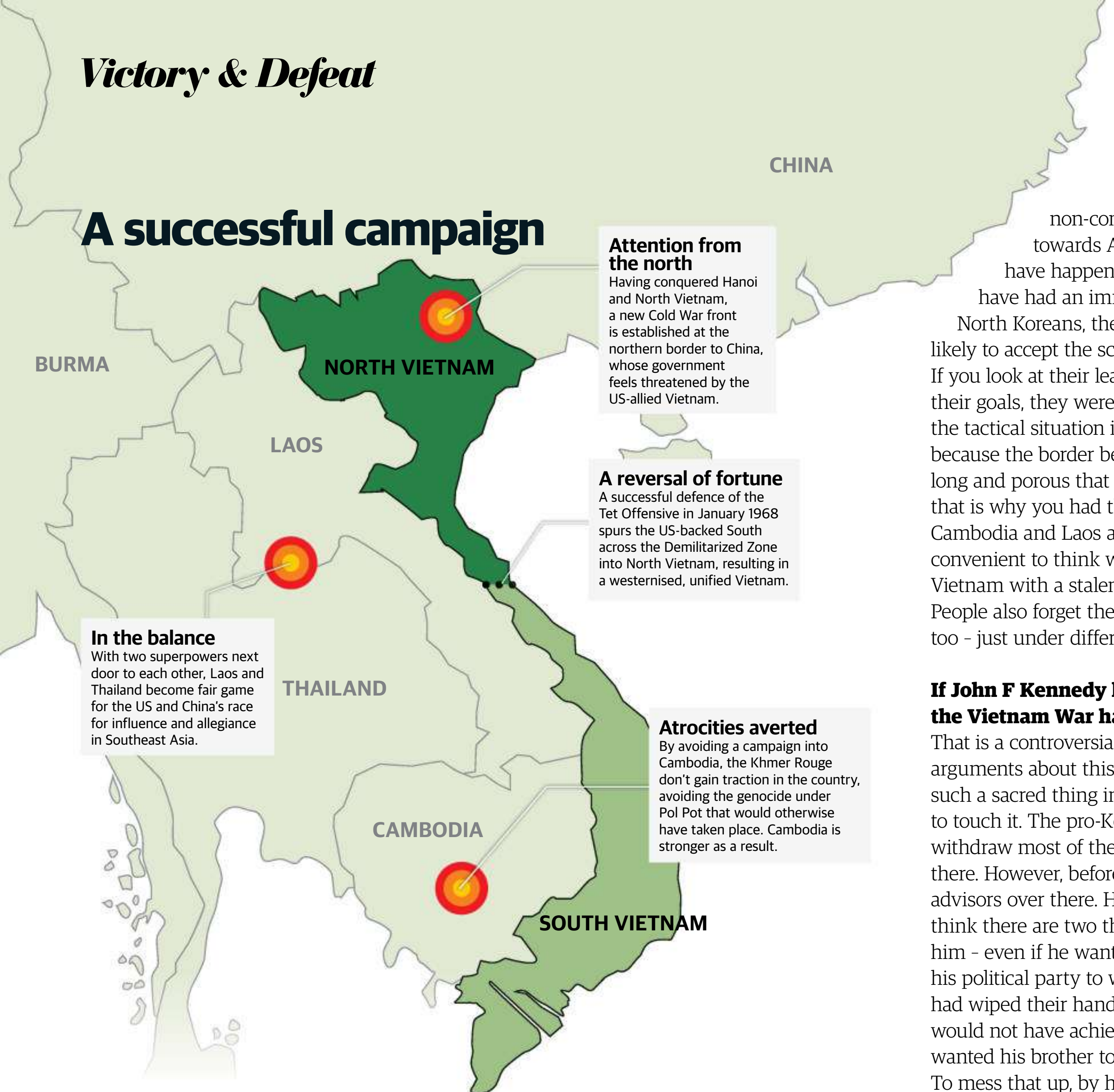
Would we ever have seen a situation like in Korea where the communist North and the democratic South are split down the middle, even to this day?

No, that was never going to happen. One side was going to reunify the country, no matter what. So if there was a big American victory, one situation you have is reunification under


HA LONG BAY
McDonald's
BOOSTER
LIGHTNING

If the US campaign in Vietnam had proven successful, we might have seen an even greater influx of American influence than has already happened

A successful campaign



Attention from the north
Having conquered Hanoi and North Vietnam, a new Cold War front is established at the northern border to China, whose government feels threatened by the US-allied Vietnam.

A reversal of fortune
A successful defence of the Tet Offensive in January 1968 spurs the US-backed South across the Demilitarized Zone into North Vietnam, resulting in a westernised, unified Vietnam.

In the balance
With two superpowers next door to each other, Laos and Thailand become fair game for the US and China's race for influence and allegiance in Southeast Asia.

Atrocities averted
By avoiding a campaign into Cambodia, the Khmer Rouge don't gain traction in the country, avoiding the genocide under Pol Pot that would otherwise have taken place. Cambodia is stronger as a result.

non-communist rule. As a result of that, the turn towards Asia the USA is presently taking would have happened then as opposed to now. We would have had an immediate conflict with China. Unlike the North Koreans, the North Vietnamese were much less likely to accept the scenario where the country remained split. If you look at their leadership, and their pronouncements and their goals, they were not going to go for a 'tie'. In addition, the tactical situation in Vietnam was much trickier. This is because the border between North and South Vietnam is so long and porous that it would be very difficult to police – and that is why you had the Ho Chi Minh trail, the excursions into Cambodia and Laos and all of that other stuff. So it might be convenient to think we could replay the Korean War and end Vietnam with a stalemate, but that was never going to happen. People also forget the South Vietnamese wanted reunification too – just under different circumstances.

If John F Kennedy had not been assassinated, would the Vietnam War have been avoided?
That is a controversial question. There have been so many arguments about this – and, of course, Kennedy's legacy is such a sacred thing in the States that it is political kryptonite to touch it. The pro-Kennedy forces argue he wanted to withdraw most of the 16,000 military advisors that were over there. However, before Kennedy there were only 600 military advisors over there. He had begun a war over there and I think there are two things that still would have hamstrung him – even if he wanted out. The first is that he still wanted his political party to win another term, and if the Democrats had wiped their hands of Vietnam there is a good chance they would not have achieved that. The second is that Kennedy wanted his brother to be the next man in the White House. To mess that up, by handing Vietnam to the communists, would have sunk this. I would also argue that Robert McNamara, who was Kennedy's confidant in the first place, and the architect of the Vietnam War, was going to give him the same advice he gave Lyndon B Johnson – which was to go in with all guns blazing. You have to remember that both

> "If the USA was ever going to win the Vietnam War it would have been during the Tet Offensive of 1968"

How would it be different?

Real timeline

1945

Vietnamese Declaration of Independence
Based on the American Declaration of Independence, Ho Chi Minh asks the USA and the West to oppose French colonial rule in Vietnam and support what will be "a free and independent country."
2 September 1945

Ho Chi Minh contacts President Truman
The Vietnamese revolutionary writes to Truman asking him to "urgently interfere" in the foreign rule of his country. Truman fears Vietnam becoming communist and instead backs the French.
28 February 1946

Real timeline

The Geneva Conference
France agrees to the decolonisation of Vietnam. Free elections are promised, but the USA suspects communist Ho Chi Minh may win. It installs a brutal dictator, Ngô Đình Diêm, in South Vietnam. He is viewed by Ho Chi Minh and the North as a puppet ruler.
21 July 1954

Assassination of Đình Diêm
Diêm – whose anti-Buddhist policies famously caused the monk Thích Quang Đúc to light himself on fire – is murdered in a brutal but mysterious coup d'état.
2 November 1963

Alternative timeline

USA reunites Korea
Fears that China would support the North prove unfounded. The USA manages to push back the comparatively minimal army of Kim Il-sung and successfully reunites the two Koreas. Seoul aligns itself as a Western-friendly government.
27 July 1953

A man suspected of supporting the Viet Cong forces being arrested and detained by US forces

A convoy of US tanks in Vietnam

Kennedy and Johnson faced the post-World War II consensus: to fight a difficult, problematic and long war against what they perceived as a communist threat or to embark on social changes back home - in particular the civil-rights movement. I believe Kennedy was also going to veer toward the civil-rights movement - just as Johnson did. But I don't think you get both - civil rights and the end of Vietnam. That mixture would have brought the Democrats down at the voting booth.

Is there any way you can see that the Vietnam War may have been avoided?

Asking anyone to do the right thing back then was difficult. Had Franklin Roosevelt lived, maybe things could have been avoided. He had a guy on his team who was a communist, namely Stalin, and Roosevelt was not a fan of European colonialism. So he may have sided with Ho Chi Minh's desire to have an independent Vietnam, free from French rule. Had he lived longer, with all of his clout, I think that is the best chance we would have had to avoid starting a war out there.

Vietnam is now awash with KFC restaurants, Coca-Cola, multiplexes and other instances of American pop culture. So who really won the war?

Well, that is the thing - they are now America's staunch allies. It shows that - first of all, as Sun Tzu said, the best tool to win a war is not always the military. It was American culture that eventually prevailed. If you look at things like Rambo and all these other Hollywood movies that attempted to justify the conflict, it is obvious how much impact it had on the USA. But it was just a blip on the radar to the Vietnamese. It cost them many more lives, but it was all part of a bigger struggle to independence. Today, Vietnam has a huge young generation and this is all ancient history to them. They have moved on, but ironically it is the face of the USA they now buy into.

Gulf of Tomkin fabrication
North Vietnamese ships are reported to have fired on a US patroller, The Maddox, in the South China Sea. President Johnson uses the event to justify going to war. Declassified documents later confirmed that no attack happened. **2 August 1964**

The My Lai Massacre
At My Lai, families are raped, tortured and killed by US soldiers. Lieutenant William Calley, who instigated the horror, walks free, but world opinion becomes opposed to 'America's war.' **16 March 1968**

Paris Peace Accords
Nixon's government agrees to a cease-fire, with US ground troops and POWs returning home. The reunification of Vietnam is now a matter between the respective Saigon and Hanoi governments. **27 January 1973**

Fall of Saigon
The war ends with the North Vietnamese taking Saigon by force and celebrating a reunified country. Ho Chi Minh, who died in 1969, remains a national icon. Saigon is now known as Ho Chi Minh City. **30 April 1975**

Tet Offensive
On Vietnamese New Year, the North surprises the South with a sudden offensive. The city of Huê is hit with extensive fighting. South Vietnam and its allies suffer drastic losses. **30 January - 3 March 1968**

Ho Chi Minh at the UN
Ho Chi Minh, gives a rousing speech at the UN. But with the new Korea becoming an international trading partner, Western nations side with the USA on Vietnamese reunification. **December 1956**

Gulf of Tomkin fabrication
Johnson, respecting Kennedy's opposition to communism in Asia and Latin America, fabricates the Gulf of Tomkin incident to justify war in Vietnam. **2 August 1964**

Failed Tet Offensive
The North Vietnamese conduct a failed attempt to take Saigon, Huê and other cities in South Vietnam. Forewarned about the attack, the US Army quickly repels their enemies. **30 January - 14 February 1968**

Free elections
Pressured into elections, US fears come true and Ho Chi Minh becomes president of Vietnam. However, believing this would sustain the South Vietnamese to communist rule, the Eisenhower government argues the elections were fixed. **January 1956**

Fixed elections?
President Eisenhower releases a statement claiming that, "after extensive CIA investigation we can reveal the elections in Vietnam were rigged." South Vietnam is to continue with a 'democratic' regime headed by an interim coalition of allied countries. **March 1956**

Kennedy's speech
Concluding upon how close the world came to nuclear meltdown during the Cuban Missile Crisis, President Kennedy affirms that all communist countries must be treated as rogue states. Military involvement is increased heavily in Vietnam. **October 1962**

Cambodia's involvement
The White House offers to supply Cambodia's Communist Party of Kampuchea guerrilla fighters in aid and arms if they can offer the US details of the Ho Chi Minh trail supply route. The deal is only revealed decades later. **August 1967**

Fall of Hanoi
On Ho Chi Minh's birthday, the North Vietnam capital collapses under the military might of the US army. The war is over. China becomes so concerned that Mao immediately agrees to a trade pact with Coca-Cola. **19 May 1968**

© Daniel Sinoca, Dreamstime

Eye Witness

FALL OF THE BERLIN WALL, GERMANY, 9 NOVEMBER 1989

ANDREAS RAMOS

Born in Colombia and raised in the USA, Ramos lived in West Germany for seven years before moving to Denmark. He's authored ten books, including a number of best-selling titles. He's also a lecturer in Digital Marketing at the Silicon Valley Business School. He remains an outspoken commentator on the fall of the Berlin Wall and hopes future generations will remember its importance.

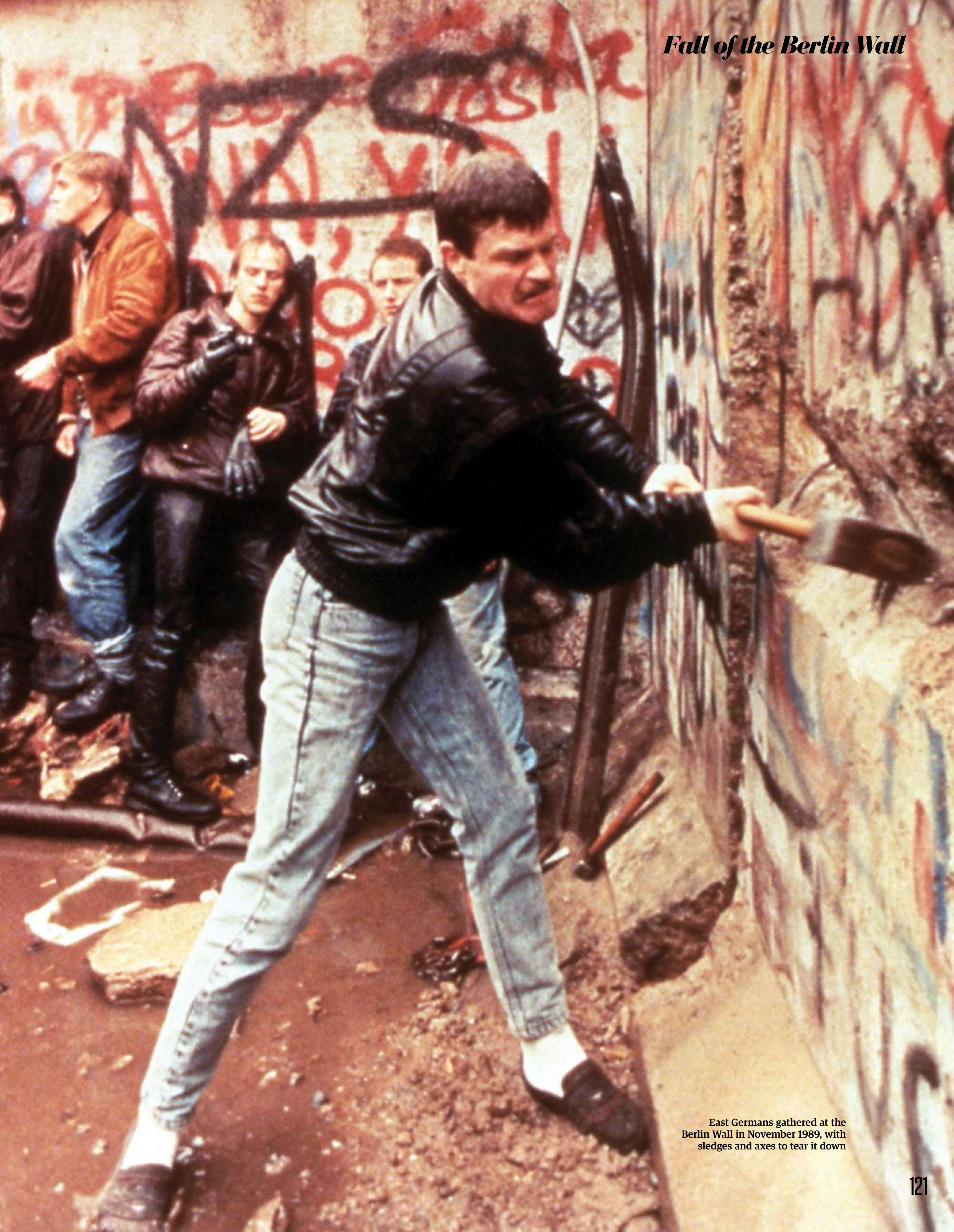
> “As we made our way into West Germany we could all sense that the whole continent was about to change forever”

For 28 years, the Berlin Wall stood resolute, an imposing symbol of the Soviet Union's cast-iron hold over much of Eastern Europe. For almost three decades, the citizens of the Wall's Eastern side lived under the watchful eye of the German Democratic Republic, a semi-autonomous government laid in place by its Soviet masters in Moscow. Heavily guarded and laced with barbed wire, the 155-kilometre (96-mile)-long, 3.6-metre (11.8-foot)-high structure ensured the German capital remained divided through the fearful years of the Cold War. No East German was permitted to cross the border into the West; the sights and sounds of a free Berlin a few hundred yards away a constant reminder of how fractured Europe had become in the decades following the end of World War II. But as the 1980s drew to a close, this symbol of division became the breaking point in European socialism. Based in Denmark at the time, science and technology student Andreas Ramos travelled to Berlin to witness first-hand the frustrations of a continent boil over in the streets of a divided city.

“When I went to study at Heidelberg (in southwest Germany) in 1978 no one in government, academia or the general public could imagine the Berlin Wall would ever fall or the Soviet Union could collapse”, explains Ramos. “NATO was built on the premise of eternal conflict with the USSR. But by the mid-1980s, after the USSR's failure in Afghanistan, it was clear the Soviet Union had to change. But collapse? They simply hadn't planned for change. It all happened on the streets, not within the government. I was in Germany for seven years and then went to Denmark to work on a doctoral dissertation. I'd been to Berlin many times and had friends there. From the edge of the Wall we watched everything, and when the East Germans began to tear down the wall, we joined them.”

A month prior, the first metaphorical cracks in the Soviet Union's hold on Eastern Europe started to show. Communication between Moscow and the German Democratic Republic (GDR) government led by hardline party leader Erich Honecker had broken down as the Motherland struggled to contain its rapidly unravelling vision for a united socialist future. Up until this point, the borders of the Eastern Bloc remained intact, but the growing pressure from refugees attempting to flee the failing communist system became too much for the neighbouring Hungarian government to ignore. On 19 August 1989, Hungary effectively opened its physical borders and allowed over 13,000 East Germans to surge across the border into Austria. As the refugees sought sanctuary in the West German embassy, it sent a shock wave through the infrastructure of the Eastern Bloc. A wave that would reach all the way to Berlin and beyond.

Back in the capital, the streets were more alive than ever. A previously morose and subdued city was now bustling as its citizens took up arms in peaceful protests. East Berliners could sense the government was starting to unravel. The resignation of Erich Honecker, the staunch idealist who had stated only months before that the Berlin Wall would stand tall



East Germans gathered at the Berlin Wall in November 1989, with sledges and axes to tear it down

Timeline of a nation uniting

CST

19 August 1989
Prior to the Wall's physical collapse, the political landscape regarding it is already falling apart. The opening of Hungary's borders with Austria can be seen as the initial catalyst.

4 September
Peaceful protest
Following a similar influx of refugees into a now-open Czechoslovakia, a series of peaceful protests are organised across East Berlin.

18 October
East German leader Erick Honecker is forced to resign by his own party following his refusal to change the city's immigration policies.

4 November
We are the people
With Erick Honecker and his 'shoot to kill' edict removed, the Peaceful Revolution of 1989 reaches its height. The chant, "We are the people!" echoes through the streets of East German cities.

9.30am 9 November
Crowds begin to gather all along the Berlin Wall as rumours of a policy change run amok.

1.00pm
The GDR holds a press conference where it announces all GDR citizens are permitted to cross over to West Berlin.

5.05pm
The first few East Berliners make their way into the West as guards quickly lose control of the situation.

8.00pm
Media announcement
Huge crowds gather at the Berlin Wall, hacking it to pieces as the media televises the scenes around the world.

22 December
Despite multiple breaches in the Wall, the Brandenburg Gate is officially opened for all Berliners to pass through.

3 October 1990
With the Wall itself almost completely demolished, East and West Germany are united in a formal ceremony. The US, British and French governments relinquish stewardship of West Berlin into the hands of a new united and democratic German government.

Regardless of age, class or background, chipping away at the 28 year-old Wall was a symbolic action that united a nation

THIS IN THE NAME OF THE PEOPLE

With the sun still high in the sky, citizens from both East and West Berlin clamber on top of the Wall

for a century to come, had galvanised the nation's hope for change. The 'Peaceful Revolution', as it came to be known, reached its height on 4 November 1989, an event that attracted Ramos and many others to Berlin. Arriving on the afternoon of 9 November, Ramos could sense an air of tension, but also one of burgeoning hope. "The build-up wasn't just in Germany; it was the whole year of revolutions across Eastern Europe. The Soviet Bloc was disintegrating, one nation after another", comments Ramos. "As we made our way into West Germany we could all sense that the whole continent was about to change forever."

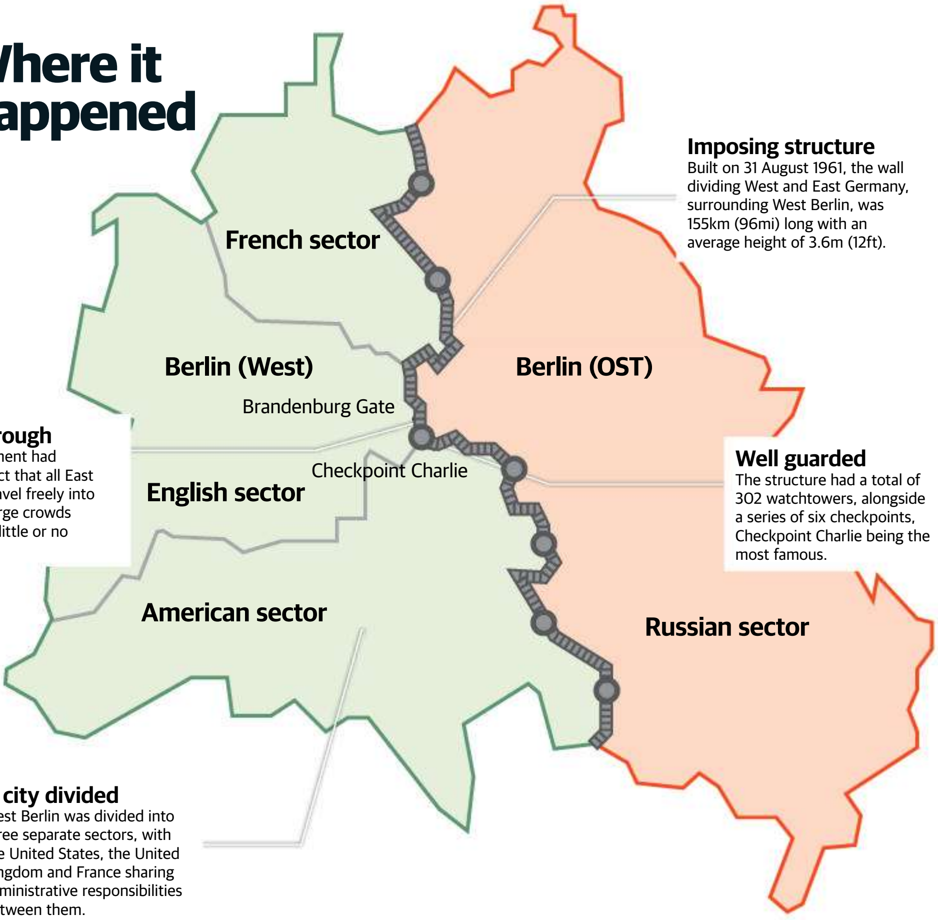
That evening the inevitable finally became a reality. In the weeks since Honecker's forced resignation, his successors had attempted to rejuvenate the party's reputation by holding a series of press conferences that promised radical changes to national policies. Shortly before that day's official press conference, GDR's official and unofficial spokesman Günter Schabowski was handed a small note that confirmed all East Berliners were now allowed to cross the border into the West with the proper identification. However, without any other explanation to help him digest this news, Schabowski was thrust in front of a ravenous media. One garbled and mostly improvised statement later and it was official: the once impenetrable gates of East Germany were opening. The problem was, this news wasn't communicated down to the guards and officials manning the many guard posts along the wall. With frustration building among the crowds of East Berliners, the situation was a powder keg waiting to explode.

As the news started to flood across East Berlin, hundreds of people began to gather at each checkpoint demanding to let through into West Berlin. To Colombian-born Ramos, it was utter chaos, but it was chaos charged by hope rather than anger. "It was November and it was extremely cold that night, but in the excitement everyone was milling around in anticipation. Restaurants and bars, which by law were meant to close, were all open well into the early hours. Laws became meaningless that night," he recalls. "People came from all over Europe: we spoke in many languages. There were British, French, Spaniards, Italians, Greeks and many Scandinavians, plus, of course, the Germans. That night, Berlin was Europe. Remember; at the time, there were no cell phones, no video, no Twitter, no Facebook, no selfies, so remarkably, there aren't that many photos of that night. Today, of course, there would be billions of photos."

As Ramos and his friends approached the Wall itself, the air seemed alight with a mixture of confusion, frustration and apprehension. "As the news of the law changing spread it became a massive sense of relief, of 'it's over', of excitement. After decades of baseless promises from politicians and pointless dreams of uniting of families, it suddenly became possible in a delirious joy", he says. "Someone wrote it was the world's largest street party, and it was. 5 million people in one city. East Germans flooded across the borders and went visiting throughout all of Germany.

The cities declared free bus and streetcar tickets for them, free museums and zoos, free everything for the

Where it happened



Imposing structure
Built on 31 August 1961, the wall dividing West and East Germany, surrounding West Berlin, was 155km (96mi) long with an average height of 3.6m (12ft).

Breaking through
Once the government had broadcast the edict that all East Berliners could travel freely into West Germany, large crowds passed over with little or no identity checks.

Well guarded
The structure had a total of 302 watchtowers, alongside a series of six checkpoints, Checkpoint Charlie being the most famous.

A city divided
West Berlin was divided into three separate sectors, with the United States, the United Kingdom and France sharing administrative responsibilities between them.

> "From the edge of the Wall we watched everything, and when the East Germans began to tear down the wall, we joined them"

visiting East Germans. It was an incredible time." The Wall was suddenly no longer the impenetrable barrier to another world. East Berliners were flooding into the other side of the city while others started attacking the wall with any tool they could find.

The military looked on dumbfounded. Some of them even joined in the demolition job. "It was clear that both governments, East and West German, plus the US military, had lost control", comments Ramos. "They stood by helplessly, watching everyone bustle around. I talked with East German soldiers who told me their rifles were empty. No bullets. They looked forward to coming across the border. West German police, who are always so orderly and authoritative, just watched. They didn't know what to do; this had never been planned." He adds, "many of us pushed through the wall and went to the East Berlin side. It was mutual: West Germans and East Germans tore down the wall together to unite themselves once more."

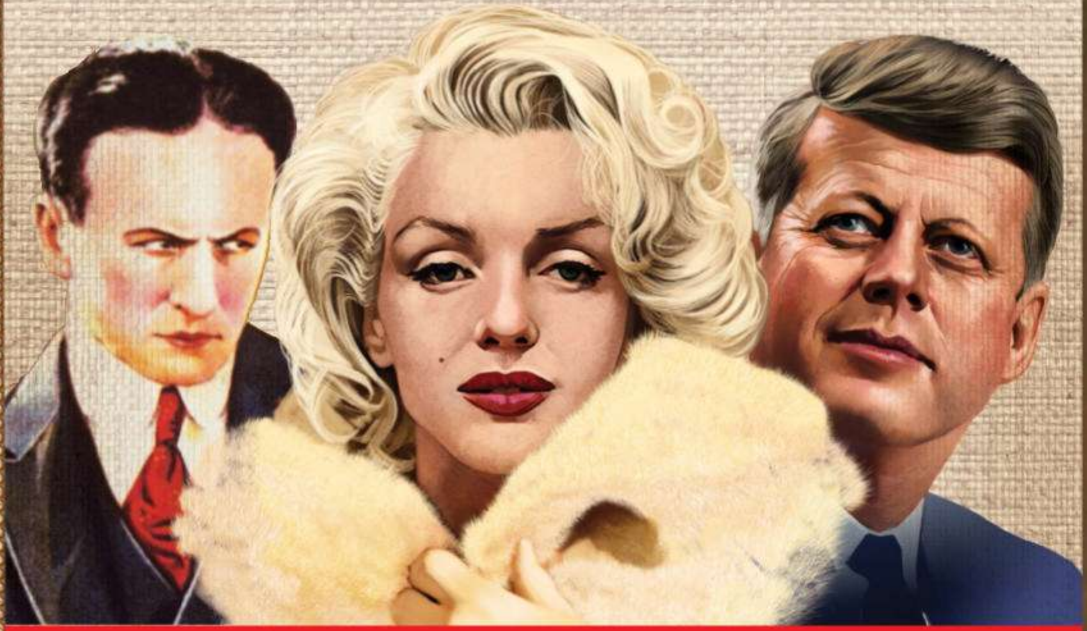
Breaking down the wall itself was no easy task, but it became a cathartic coming together of a nation suddenly reunited in matter of hours. Citizens from East and West gathered on each side to start hacking away, pulling away chunks and lofting them on high, like mementos from a fun day out. Ramos himself was right in the middle of the crowds tearing into the wall that evening. "Opening the Wall went on for hours", he remarks. "It was made of thick slabs of concrete, nine or twelve feet (three or four metres) high. Small holes were made with hammers, but to open the wall so large numbers of people could pass, industrial machinery was needed. Somehow, West German construction companies showed up with jackhammers and cranes which broke apart the slabs and lifted them out of the way."

In the months that followed, Germany was unified as a single, free nation for the first time since the final shots of the Second World War and Europe – and the world – was changed forever. Germany would go on to become an economic superpower, but that chilly evening in Berlin has remained an iconic image of social and political upheaval. "It was one of the most astonishing events of my life. It was 25 years ago and I still remember so many moments, especially the mood", recalls Ramos on that historic day. "The fall of the Berlin Wall ended a chapter of European history reaching back more than a hundred years. However, it also opened a new chapter, and so far, we don't yet know what it's going to be or where it's going to lead."

Origins and aftermath

Following the end of World War II in 1945, Germany was split into four distinct zones, with each one administered by each of the main Allied forces. Berlin itself was divided in two, with West Berlin existing as a free city and East Berlin absorbed into the increasing Soviet grip on Eastern Europe. In 1961, the semi-autonomous communist government the German Democratic Republic – under direction from the Kremlin – decreed that a new wall would be erected to physically divide the city in two, effectively cutting East Berliners off from the rest of the Western world. For 28 years, the Berlin Wall signified a city evolving in two very different directions. When the first East Berlin citizens passed the guard patrols into the free West Berlin, it was the start of the breaking up of the Eastern Bloc and the first steps toward a unified Germany that would see it become one of the most robust economic powers in Europe.

© Alamy



FAME & FORTUNE

See behind the fickle veil of fame and meet some of history's biggest stars

126 10 superstars you never knew existed
Forgotten celebrities who paved the way for the stars of today

133 Anatomy of a Greek sculptor
Discover how Greek celebrities were portrayed

134 Houdini's final trick
How history's greatest illusionist became obsessed with debunking

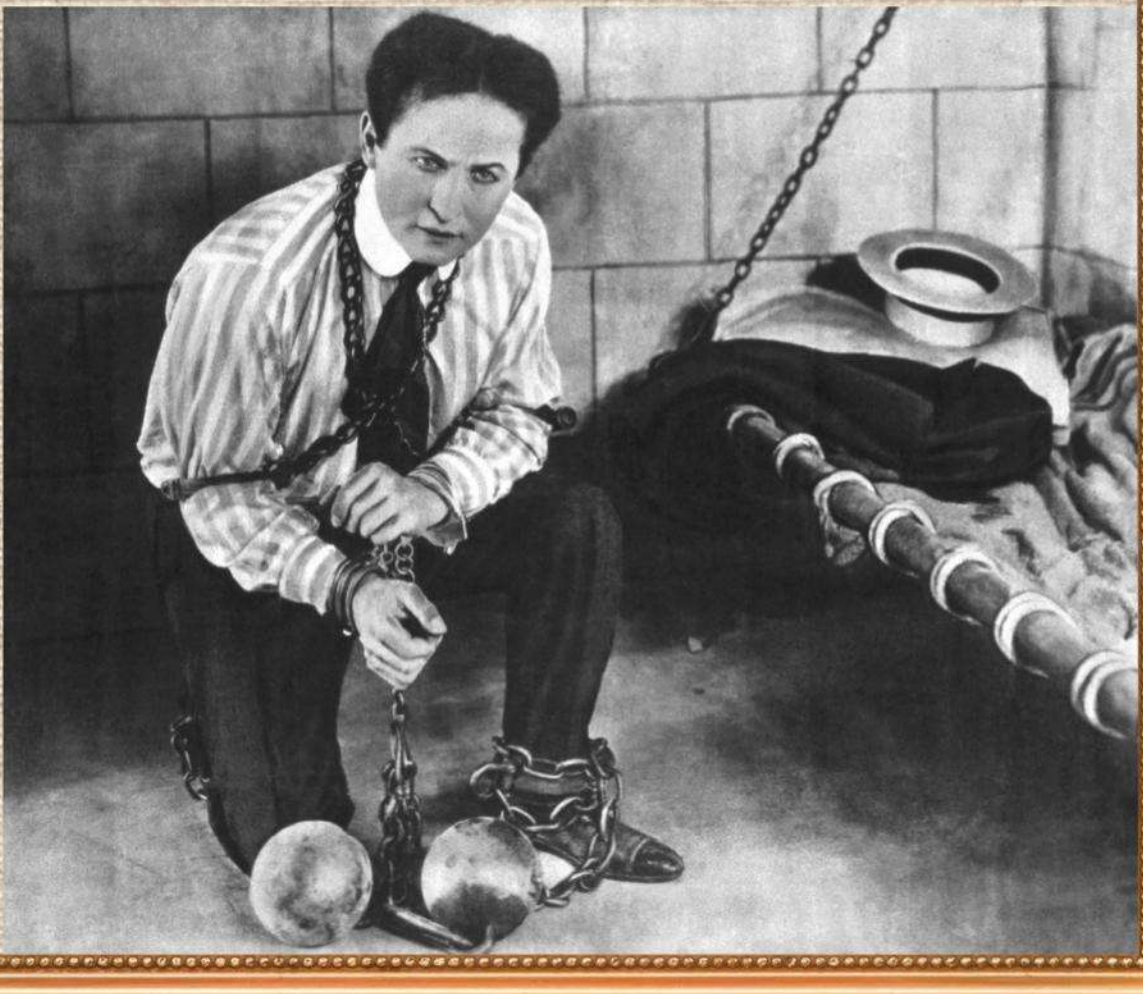
142 Inside a 1950s television studio
Beaming the news to the nation during television's formative years

144 My way: Frank Sinatra's dark side
Delve into the rumours of mafia connections that dogged the crooner's entire career

150 Day in the life of a 1950s movie star
What life was really like on film sets for stars like Lauren Bacall and Audrey Hepburn

152 Becoming Marilyn
Before she was the blonde bombshell we all know, the young Norma Jeane was a quiet and troubled child

ecial
MONROE — DIMAGGIO



COME MARVEL AT THESE 10 SUPERSTARS YOU NEVER KNEW EXISTED

Once household names, these celebrities of the past are now mostly forgotten. Nonetheless, they certainly left their mark...

In these days of social media, it can take only moments to hit the spotlight. It takes slightly longer to become a superstar.

Of course, the fame game was slower in the past. The sports heroes and entertainers of the Elizabethan or Victorian eras could not be witnessed in action by millions of television viewers. Ancient Greeks and Romans didn't have the popular press to tell of their exploits. Yet many stars did become famous. There has always been a way to spread the word.

Some superstars are remembered fondly after their deaths. Others, like Shakespeare and Bach, enjoy success during their lives, but become true superstars later, when their true greatness is reassessed. The ten stars here have not had the staying power of Shakespeare, but are historically significant nonetheless. Whoever thought an athletic event could become so popular after one man, blessed with plenty of energy, lost a bet? Or that the recording industry would change forever when an Australian diva noticed her name being used to sell perfume? Or that the Hollywood star system would begin after an actress agreed to die (sort of)? In the world of superstars, truth is often stranger than fiction.

10

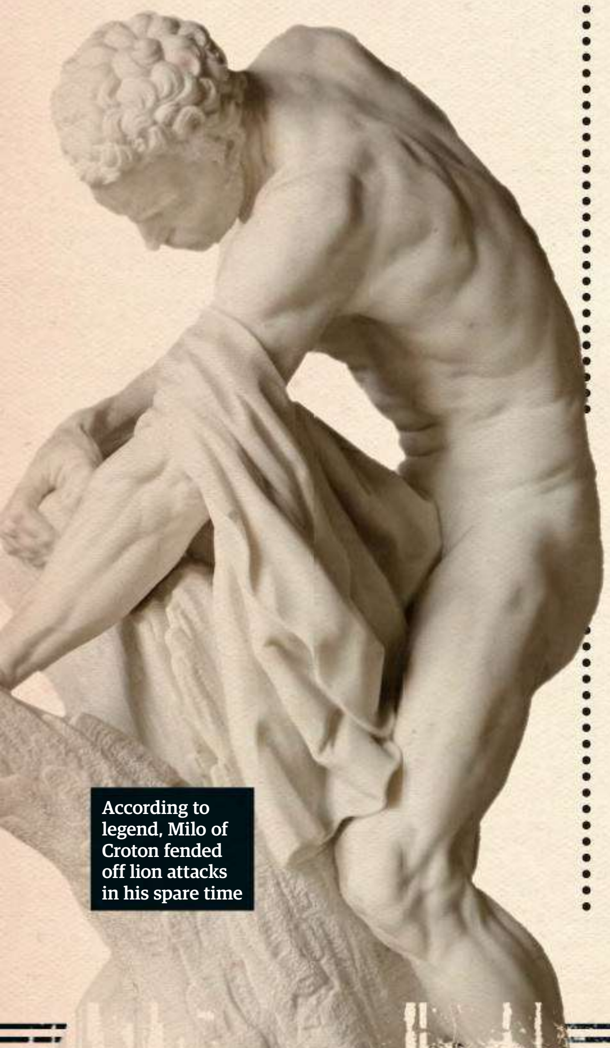
ANCIENT GREECE'S GREATEST OLYMPIAN

MILO OF CROTON 6TH CENTURY BCE

Profession: Champion wrestler

Modern-day counterpart: Mike Tyson

The ancient Olympians – a round-up of the region's greatest male athletes (women were eventually given the Hera Games) – became celebrities in their own right. Like today's sports fans, arguing vehemently about the greatest modern Olympians, scholars have had lengthy debates as to who was the greatest star of the Greek games. The most popular event – the finale of each Games – was wrestling in its various forms. Milo of Croton proved almost unbeatable in upright wrestling. Milo's record was incredible: the champion of six Olympic, seven Pythian, nine Nemean and ten Isthmian Games, a period of gruelling competition covering some 24 years between 540 and 516 BCE. According to one historian, Milo followed his sporting years with a brief but outstanding military career.



According to legend, Milo of Croton fended off lion attacks in his spare time

Florence Lawrence was one of many Canadian pioneers of the movie industry

09

AMERICA'S FIRST LADY OF THE MOVIES

FLORENCE LAWRENCE 1890-1938

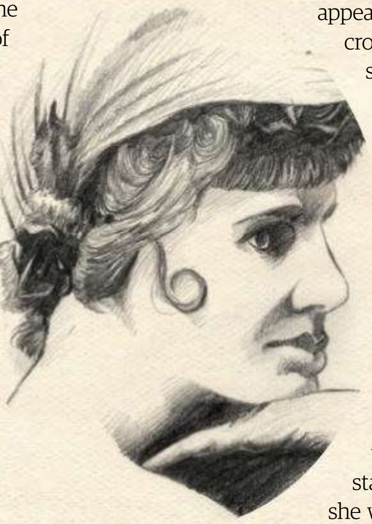
Profession: Actress, screen idol

Modern-day counterpart: Lindsay Lohan

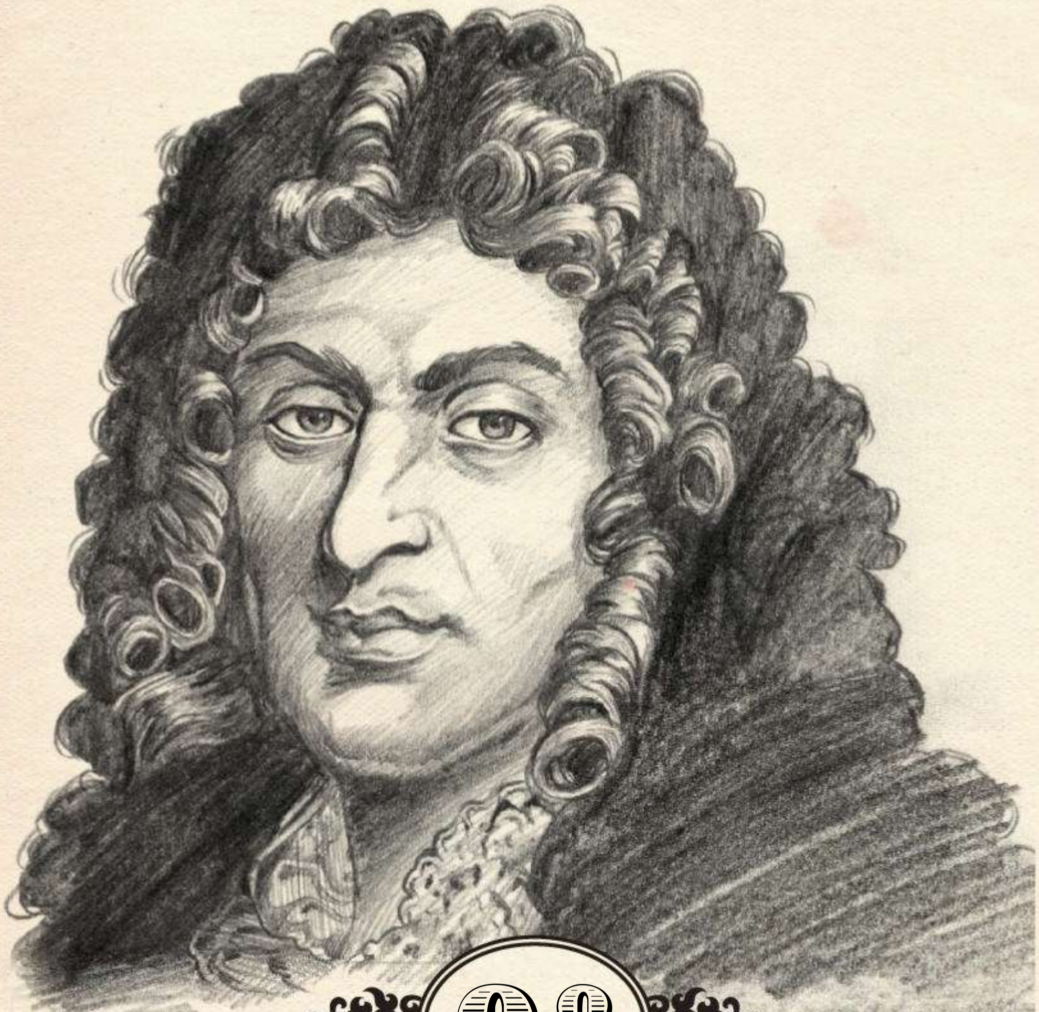
In the early years of American movies, actors' names were not revealed, lest they become too egotistical and demanding. Stars of the theatre were bad enough, but in this new medium – where actors were seen around the world, larger than life, to millions of people – they could be even more difficult to handle. It might have been true, but the system was never going to last.

In 1910, maverick producer Carl Laemmle turned a popular movie face into a household name. "The Biograph Girl", so-called after the studio owned by Thomas Edison, was a pretty 22-year-old whose face already lured millions to the 'flickers', as she churned out 100 short films every year. To guarantee her face made the news, however, Laemmle didn't just reveal her name; he killed her as well. In March, he sent out a press report that the mysterious Biograph Girl had died in a tragic streetcar accident.

It was one of the industry's first publicity stunts. This was followed quickly by an announcement that the report of her 'death' was a lie. She was still alive – and she was no longer the Biograph Girl, as she was now working for Laemmle's new studio. Her name was Florence Lawrence. However, the fact that this all-American girl was actually Canadian, or that her real name was the rather less poetic Florence Annie Bridgwood, was not revealed. A week later, the lady herself appeared in person, greeting huge crowds. Lawrence was mobbed by starstruck fans, who tore at her clothes in the United States' first public display of movie-star adulation. Armed with his own mini-empire, based on the new star system, Laemmle moved operations to California, started Universal Studios, and became one of the founders of Hollywood.



Sadly, Lawrence was also one of the first movie stars to discover the fickle nature of stardom. Her career ended after she was injured in a studio fire in 1915. She tried to make a comeback a few years later, but the public was no longer interested. Losing her fortune in the 1929 Wall Street Crash, still in chronic pain from her back injury, and forgotten by most of the world, she committed suicide in 1938, aged 52.



08

THE TRIPLE THREAT: GENIUS COMPOSER, MUSICAL VIRTUOSO... AND BALLET DANCER

JEAN-BAPTISTE LULLY 1632-1687

Profession: **Official composer at the French royal court**

Modern-day counterpart: **Andrew Lloyd-Webber**

For centuries, western music was mainly used by the Catholic Church for devotional and spiritual compositions. Though wandering minstrels would entertain villagers with lighter fare, musicians and composers would not become superstars.

In the 17th century, as the Church's authority weakened, composers became free to write not just sacred music, but also music for the new breed of virtuoso musicians - the violinists, lutenists, harpsichordists and opera singers who became the first musical stars. Even the greatest instrument-makers, such as Stradivari and Ruckers, became celebrities. And the composers? The best - or most fashionable - ones even had groupies, who would swoon at them in the grand concert halls!

More than a century before Mozart and Beethoven dominated the music scene, Giovanni Battista Lulli, a miller's son from Italy, was first discovered as a 12-year-old violin virtuoso, and taken to the French royal court. His flair for the violin, however, proved to be just the tip of his talent iceberg. He studied composition, learnt the harpsichord and guitar, and even learnt to dance, writing ballets for the court. He danced the *Ballet Royal De La Nuit* with the young monarch, Louis XIV, whom he would serve devotedly. His reward: in an age of extravagance, Louis gave him access to dozens of musicians, eventually resulting in the first orchestras.

Lully became a French citizen in 1661, even 'translating' his name into French. The versatile composer went on to cofound the Paris Opera, composing more than 20 operas. He collaborated with librettists like the great French playwright Moliére, with whom he invented the 'comédie-ballet', a new form of theatre that incorporated comedy, ballet and incidental music.

Just as music was Lully's life, it eventually proved to be his death, as he dropped a large baton on his foot during a performance. Gangrene set in and he died a few weeks later.

07

THE ORIGINAL METHOD MAN

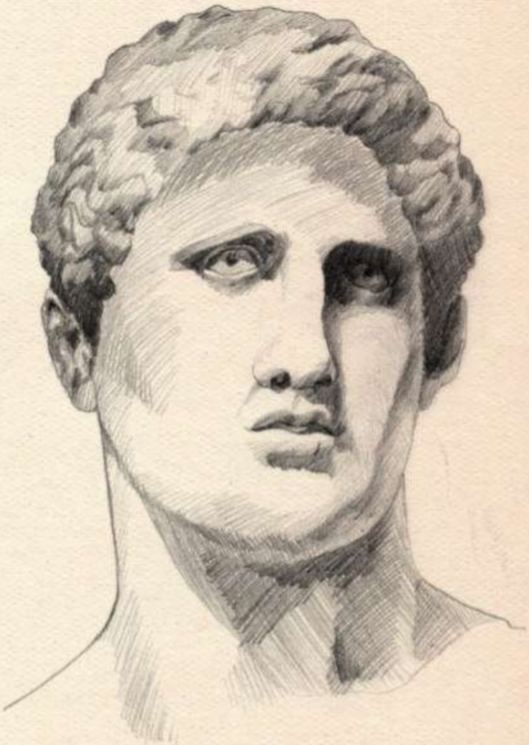
POLUS 4TH CENTURY BCE

Profession: **Tragedian**

Modern-day counterpart: **Daniel Day-Lewis**

While the Greeks famously invented theatre, most actors did not win any celebrity status until the fourth century BCE - and one of the most popular was Polus. Little is known about any of these actors today, but enough has been written about Polus to make him seem like an intriguing character. Some 2,300 years before "the Method" was invented, he was perhaps the first method actor, using techniques that would put Brando or Newman to shame. In the title role of Sophocles' *Elektra*, he wanted to bring on the emotion when Elektra received the urn with her brother's ashes. Even in Greek theatre, male actors would play female roles - a tradition that would continue until after Shakespeare's time. Polus is said to have borrowed from the tomb the ashes of his own son, who had recently died. With these ashes, tears must have flowed freely.

It is a legendary tale, and - if indeed it is true - one of the few anecdotes known about any actor of the Ancient Greek stage.



The 1960s' civil rights movement ended the prominence of blackface performance in Hollywood

06

ALL-SINGING, ALL-TALKING, ALL-FILMING SUPERSTAR

AL JOLSON 1886-1950

Profession: **Singer, entertainer, all-around show-off**

Modern-day counterpart: **Lady Gaga**

At his peak, Al Jolson was known as "the world's greatest entertainer", with his manic energy and powerful singing voice. Since then, he has fallen from favour – partly because more than 100 years have passed, and partly because blackface performers (Jolson was a Russian-born Jew, who "blacked up" to sing songs like *Swanee* and *Blue Skies*) are now considered a shameful aspect of old-time show business.

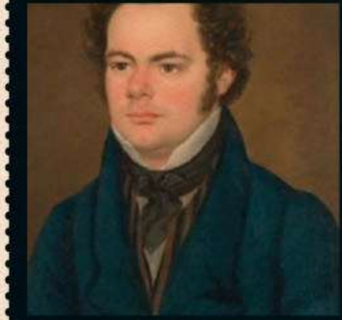
Audiences of 1911, however, did not consider him offensive or insulting. That year, during a performance of *Paris Is A Paradise For Coons* (a play despised by critics, even in those non-PC times), he suddenly decided he agreed with the scathing reviews. He stopped the action in mid-act, stepping out to the front of the stage. "I'll tell you how the story comes out", he told the audience. "The fella gets the girl. Now shall we go on with it, or do you want to hear me sing?" The crowd roared with applause and Jolson took over with some of his favourite songs, leaving the rest of the cast fuming.

By 1927, despite his obvious star quality, he was a 41-year-old has-been. However, his career was revived when he made his Hollywood debut in *The Jazz Singer*, known as the first talking picture. In truth, it was a silent film broken up with a few musical numbers. Jolson's dialogue consisted of a mere 281 words, all ad-libbed into a microphone with the same rebellious self-confidence he had shown in his stage shows. With their primitive editing facilities, the filmmakers couldn't really stop him. His most famous line – "You ain't seen nothing yet" – summed up the excitement and potential of the 'talkies' or 'talkers', as talking films would soon be called. *The Jazz Singer* was a major hit, leading all Hollywood studios to quickly equip themselves for sound.

He followed with an even bigger hit, *The Singing Fool* (1928). Movie studios were now looking to the theatre for their new stars, as strong voices suddenly became as important as photogenic faces. But Jolson's own Hollywood career, despite its initial triumph, would prove to be short-lived.

CELEBS WHO NEVER KNEW FAME

Revered today, they were 'nobodies' in their own lifetime



FRANZ SCHUBERT

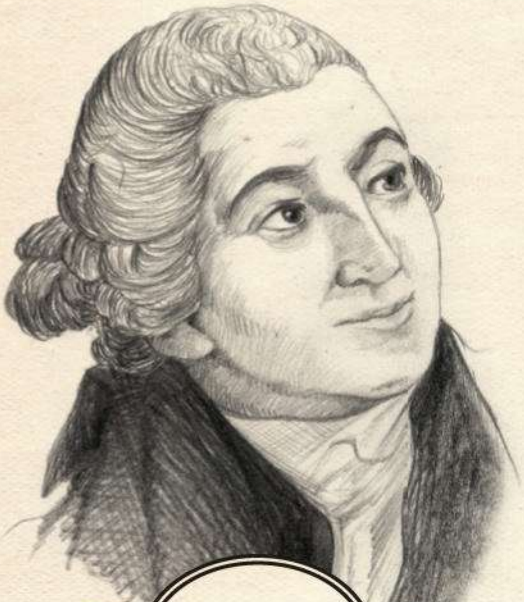
This Austrian composer was amazingly prolific, churning out piano and ensemble pieces, operas, symphonies and over 600 songs. He died at 31, and his music remained mostly unknown for another ten years. It was finally discovered by his fellow composers Schumann and Liszt, in a polished chest where Schubert's manuscripts were kept safe by his brother, Ferdinand.

EMILY DICKINSON

One of the United States' best-loved bards today, as well as probably its most painfully shy in life. Only a measly seven of her poems were published during her lifetime, but she kept hundreds of others in boxes and drawers all around her home. These were not discovered until after her death, and the first collection of her poetry was published four years later, in 1890.

LEON BEIDERBECKE

This Idaho-born musician joined popular bandleader Paul Whiteman, who often featured Beiderbecke's innovative cornet solos. Alcoholism and stress ended Beiderbecke's career, and pneumonia ended his life, at 28, in 1931. Seven years later, a novel based on his life brought his name to the fore, and recordings were dusted off. He was reassessed as the first great jazz innovator among white musicians.



05

THE MAN WHO BROUGHT RESPECT TO SHAKESPEARE

DAVID GARRICK 1717-1779

Profession: **Actor, theatre manager, producer**
Modern-day counterpart: **Ben Affleck**

Long before the days of movies or television, David Garrick was so famous as a stage actor that the term "Garrick fever" was coined - not just about him, but about an illness that happened to be spreading through Dublin at the same time. A dubious honour, especially for an actor and producer who changed the way Shakespeare was performed, bringing more reverence to the Bard and the performers, and putting an end to the heckling and lewd audience behaviour that had characterised early performances.

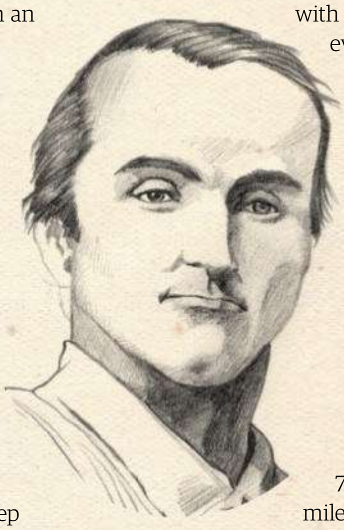
Garrick was an accidental superstar. Planning a career in law, he had worked as a winemaker in London. In his spare time, he wrote plays for the local theatre. In 1741, he made his acting debut when another cast member pulled out. Later that year, he played Shakespeare's Richard III, becoming the talk of the town. Perhaps because of his untrained acting background, he eschewed the grand gestures and melodrama with which Shakespeare had previously been performed. Instead, he had a realistic and believable approach that old-style actor James Quin described as "alive in every muscle and every feature." Stage acting was changed forever. "If the young fellow is right", said Quin, "I and the rest of the players have all been wrong." In 1831, some years after Garrick's death, the exclusive Garrick Club was founded in London. For centuries, the acting profession had been scorned by "polite" society, but Garrick had left it with a new respect.

04

AMERICA'S FAVOURITE ENDURANCE ATHLETE

EDWARD PAYSON WESTON 1839-1929

Profession: **Long-distance walker**
Modern-day counterpart: **Tom Daley**



Today, race-walking might be one of the most ridiculed athletic events. Edward Payson Weston, however, turned it from an obscure novelty to one of the coolest sports of 1861 - and he wasn't even competing against anyone in doing it!

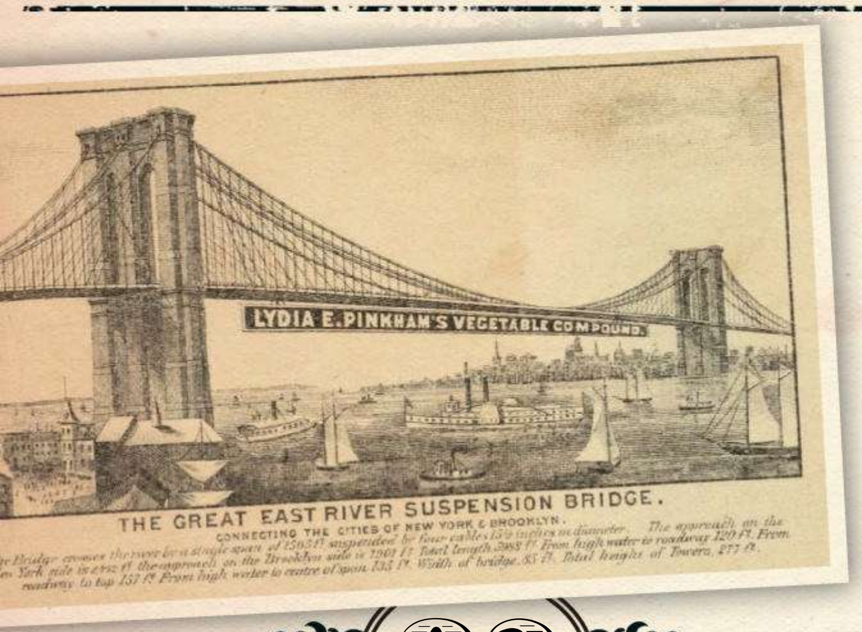
Originally, Weston did it simply because he had lost a bet with a friend of his, agreeing to walk a distance of 769 kilometres (478 miles) from Boston to Washington, DC, when he predicted that Abraham Lincoln would lose the upcoming US presidential elections. After Lincoln's landslide victory, Weston took only ten days, despite facing deep snow and mud enroute, arriving in time to meet the new president in person at his inaugural ball.

His walk was not done quietly, but accompanied by a barrage of promotion. At a time when such endurance feats were even more unusual than today, generally greeted with astonishment, he was cheered at every town, kissed by the women, surviving on food handouts from generous people on the way.

His achievement popularised multi-day walking races, which he would often enter. However, he preferred solo, open-country walks, with a generous wager to make it worth his while.

He continued these walks for many years, sometimes retracing his steps as he became older - and bettering his previous times. In 1913, at age 74, he hiked 2,488 kilometres (1,546 miles) from New York to Minneapolis, completing the journey in 51 days!

Edward Payson Weston (second from right) in 1915, during a reception after one of his famous walks


LYDIA E. PINKHAM'S VEGETABLE COMPOUND.
THE GREAT EAST RIVER SUSPENSION BRIDGE.
CONNECTING THE CITIES OF NEW YORK & BROOKLYN.

03

THE FACE THAT SOLD A MILLION (OR MORE) VEGETABLE COMPOUNDS

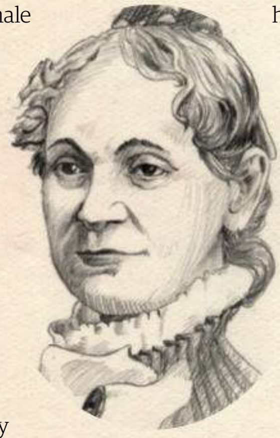
LYDIA E PINKHAM 1819-1883

Profession: **Ex-schoolteacher, home remedy-maker, 'saviour of the human race' (according to the song, at least)**

Modern-day counterpart:

Paul Newman

Pinkham was perhaps the most famous American woman of her time - or at least, in her old age and in the years after her passing. Her wise, caring, grandmotherly face was on every bottle of Lydia Pinkham's Vegetable Compound, which offered to cure almost everything, especially so-called 'female weaknesses.' "Health of women is the hope of the race", suggested the newspaper ads. She was a face you could trust. When her image was removed from the bottles in the 1890s, sales tumbled; when it was returned the next decade, annual sales increased by nearly 2,500 per cent.



Pinkham, as a young schoolteacher, had first brewed the product - a concoction of unicorn root, fenugreek seed, black cohosh and a small amount of alcohol to prevent freezing - in 1843. It was not until decades later, promoted aggressively by her son Daniel, that it became an essential addition to medicine shelves across the United States. Lydia's image, the drawing printed on each label, was not copyrighted, ensuring that she was eventually recognised across the Atlantic as well. Despite the contributions of Daniel, as well as her other children, it is thought that with her expertise and way with words, Lydia herself wrote most of the advertising material.

Customers were invited to write to Mrs Pinkham, who would personally answer their health questions - a practice that she would continue for years after her death. By then, her daughter-in-law Jennie had taken over, replying to letters as the new "Mrs Pinkham." Countless companies have followed in Lydia's footsteps, either turning their founders into the face of the product or, where the founders didn't prove as 'natural' as Mrs Pinkham, fictitious characters such as Ronald McDonald. The lady herself, however, is perhaps best remembered for an unofficial advertising jingle, *The Lydia Pinkham Song*. This changed its lyrics and became *Lily The Pink*, a hit 1968 song by the British band the Scaffold, extolling the benefits of a miraculous "medicinal compound."

02

THE MOST DARING PERFORMER IN HISTORY? MAYBE SO!

CHARLES BLONDIN

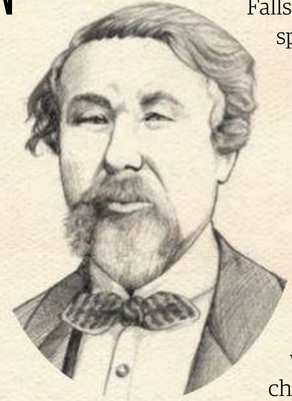
1824-1897

Profession:

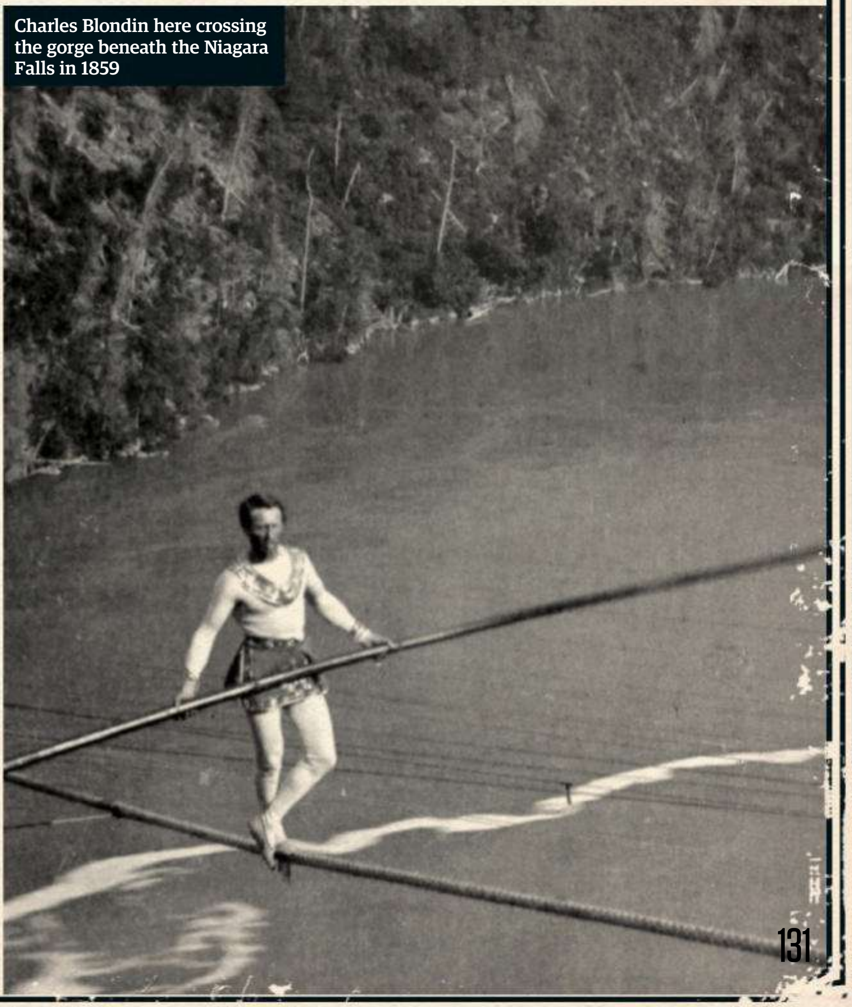
Tightrope walker, daredevil

Modern-day counterpart:

David Blaine



With a combination of great skill and utter fearlessness, French tightrope walker Charles Blondin (born Jean-Francois Gravelet) became one of the most nerve-racking showmen of his time or any other. Bored with the usual feats of his circus troupe, he left them during an 1859 tour of North America, announcing he would walk across a rope stretched 82 metres (270 feet) above Niagara Falls. Watched by 25,000 spectators, he not only strolled across the rope, but also did a back somersault, brought on a heavy camera and tripod to take photos, and walked backward across it. He would later vary his act in even more terrifying ways: standing on a chair, walking blindfolded, wrapped in a sack, stilt-walking, cooking omelettes on a portable stove, and pushing a brave volunteer in a wheelbarrow. Despite such derring-do, he was able to safely retire to peaceful old age, remembered as "the hero of Niagara."



Charles Blondin here crossing the gorge beneath the Niagara Falls in 1859

01

THE FIRST MODERN POP MUSIC STAR... IN 1904!

DAME NELLIE MELBA 1861-1931

Profession: Prima donna singer
Modern-day counterpart: Beyoncé

The great singers of the 19th century, able to fill concert halls in their time, are mostly forgotten today. In many cases, this is because they were never recorded - or, if their careers continued into the very early days of gramophones, the primitive sound quality couldn't do justice to their remarkable voices.

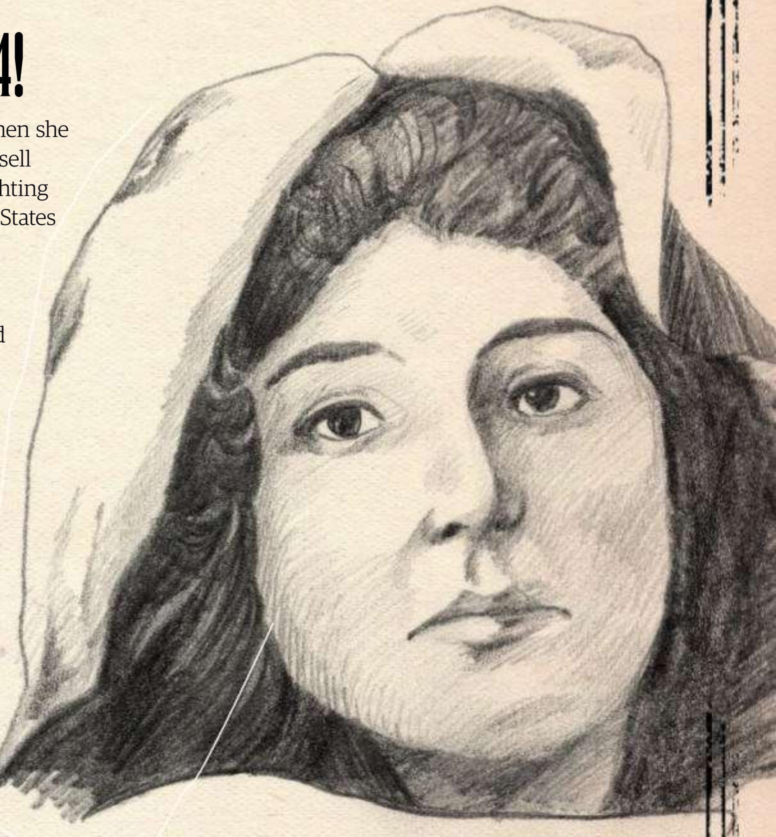
Operatic soprano Dame Nellie Melba is still well known in her native Australia, where she is considered a national hero, honoured with her face on the Australian 100-dollar note. However, she was one of the most world's popular singers of her time, the toast of Covent Garden, the New York Metropolitan Opera and many other prestigious venues. But her talents did not end with her voice. Her business skills could provide a lesson for today's divas - and they possibly do. "You must not only sing; you must not only act", she said, "you must also be stage manager, press agent, artistic advisor." Media-savvy, she lured newspapers with publicity stunts and controversial quotes, some of which she would later deny, but not until they had already been circulated and brought her firmly into the spotlight. In full control of her career, she was the first artist to perform on British radio, in the music broadcast in 1920.

She always kept one eye on financial matters. When celebrity chef August Escoffier dedicated to her a dessert called Peche Melba, which became a popular dish, she did not bow to this flattery. The way she saw it, he owed her millions of dollars in unpaid royalties. In New York, when she found her name was being used to sell perfume, she responded by copyrighting her name around the entire United States - although, unlike many superstars of today, she stopped just short of producing her own perfume.

Her business genius, however, did extend to merchandise. She was one of the first to see the potential of sound recordings to sell music. Whatever the limits of their quality, they could allow people to enjoy her concerts without leaving home. By 1904 she had branded herself and her published material with a special mauve label. Records with this label cost 21 shillings - a shilling more than the ordinary mortals next to her on the record shelves. The message was simple: Melba was a byword for quality.

Her rivals followed her lead; Italian diva Adelina Patti had her own pink label, sold by music shops that proudly advertised "Patti is singing here today." However, few in those early days could come close to matching Melba as a recording star - even though she was already 45 years old when she had her first hit record.

Naturally, image was vitally important as well. Even as she approached old age, she worked hard to keep looking good. This was where she went too far; she died of complications caused by a disastrous facelift.



> "MEDIA SAVVY, SHE LURED NEWSPAPERS WITH PUBLICITY STUNTS"

THEN & NOW

WEALTH

Now: Jennifer Lawrence, the number one Hollywood box-office star of 2013, made $34 million that year. But even with that staggering number, it was nothing compared to Tom Cruise.

Then: Clara Bow, the number one Hollywood box-office star of 1927, was on a salary of $2,800 a week - the equivalent of $36,208 a week today, or less than $2 million a year. Chicken feed! But then again, she didn't need to speak.

FASHION

Now: Promoting the latest fashions has become such a major role that a new type of celebrity was devised: the supermodel, starting in the early-20th century, with pin-up girls like the ubiquitous Evelyn Nesbit.

Then: Although David Garrick made acting a more high-minded profession, stars of the 18th and 19th centuries would dress flamboyantly. It kept the public entertained in magazines and street gossip.

MUSIC

Now: Record and compact-disc players have been replaced mainly by digital formats. Indeed, with so much software and instruments available, making it easier to record, more people are making their own music.

Then: Without gramophones or radios, a piano was as much a fixture of many Victorian homes as those devices would later become. The first song that broke the barrier for selling a million copies was *After The Ball* in 1893 - and that was the sheet music version.

AWARDS

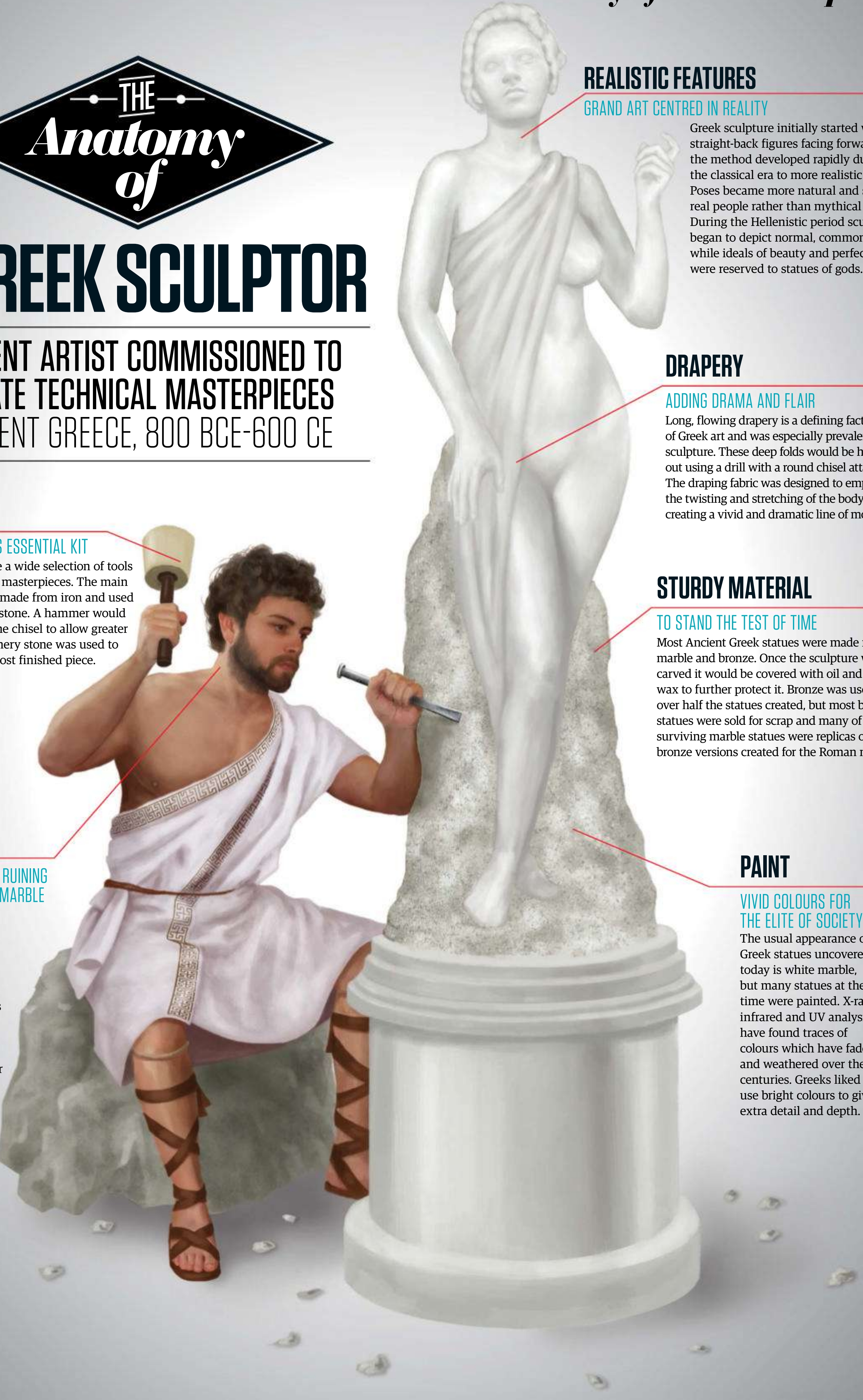
Now: Awards ceremonies are a major part of the entertainment world, whether in cinema, where the Oscars were first handed out in 1929, theatre, as the Tony Awards date back to 1947, or music, as the Grammy Awards from 1958.

Then: As most entertainment wasn't mass-produced, awards were not a fixture of the past. Even literary prizes were rare. Charles Dickens never won anything, for example. In 1895, however, Henry Irving became the first actor to win perhaps the greatest prize: a knighthood.

THE *Anatomy of* A GREEK SCULPTOR

ANCIENT ARTIST COMMISSIONED TO CREATE TECHNICAL MASTERPIECES

ANCIENT GREECE, 800 BCE-600 CE



TOOLS

EVERY SCULPTOR'S ESSENTIAL KIT

Sculptors would use a wide selection of tools while creating their masterpieces. The main tool was the chisel, made from iron and used to chip away at the stone. A hammer would also be used with the chisel to allow greater control, while an emery stone was used to smooth out the almost finished piece.

SKILL

DEVELOPED AFTER RUINING MANY BLOCKS OF MARBLE

It took great skill and training to become a successful sculptor. Many artists were mentored and became apprentices to celebrated sculptors, while others, such as Lysippos, Alexander the Great's sculptor, taught themselves from an early age. Sculptors had to have a skilled eye as they didn't create each part one at a time, but instead worked around the figure stage by stage.

REALISTIC FEATURES

GRAND ART CENTRED IN REALITY

Greek sculpture initially started with straight-back figures facing forward, but the method developed rapidly during the classical era to more realistic forms. Poses became more natural and showed real people rather than mythical figures. During the Hellenistic period sculpture began to depict normal, common people, while ideals of beauty and perfection were reserved to statues of gods.

DRAPERY

ADDING DRAMA AND FLAIR

Long, flowing drapery is a defining factor of Greek art and was especially prevalent in sculpture. These deep folds would be hollowed out using a drill with a round chisel attached. The draping fabric was designed to empathise the twisting and stretching of the body, creating a vivid and dramatic line of movement.

STURDY MATERIAL

TO STAND THE TEST OF TIME

Most Ancient Greek statues were made from marble and bronze. Once the sculpture was carved it would be covered with oil and hot wax to further protect it. Bronze was used for over half the statues created, but most bronze statues were sold for scrap and many of the surviving marble statues were replicas of bronze versions created for the Roman market.

PAINT

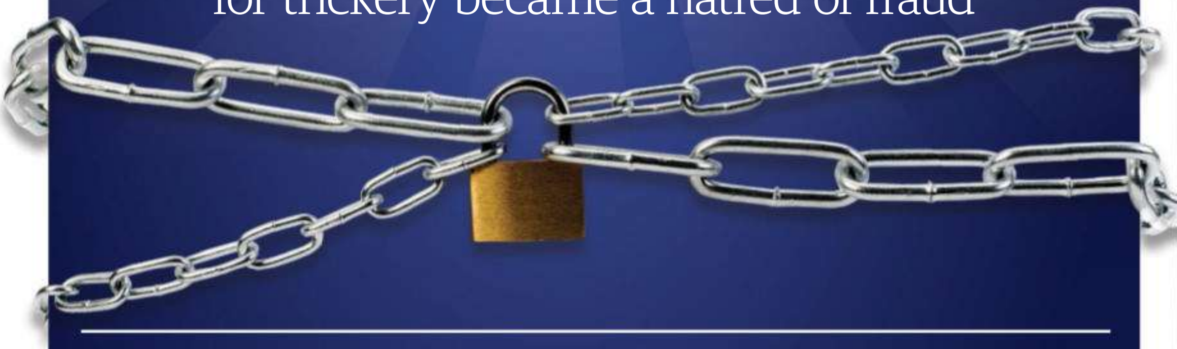
VIVID COLOURS FOR THE ELITE OF SOCIETY

The usual appearance of Greek statues uncovered today is white marble, but many statues at the time were painted. X-ray, infrared and UV analysis have found traces of colours which have faded and weathered over the centuries. Greeks liked to use bright colours to give extra detail and depth.

© Kevin McGivern

HOUDINI'S FINAL TRICK

Houdini was the world's greatest illusionist, but when he suffered a tragic loss, his love for trickery became a hatred of fraud



It's 1923. Those gathered around the table at the séance are enraptured by the wonder of what unfolds before their eyes. The medium at the head of the table is producing what looks like an otherworldly ectoplasm from their mouth, while objects are flying around the room. Any gathered there who didn't believe in spirits beyond the grave before certainly do now. There is one man at the table, however, who doesn't seem as surprised as everyone else. In fact, he looks strangely familiar. Suddenly, the man leaps from his chair and takes off a rubber nose and wig, bellowing "I am Houdini. And you are a fraud!"

Ehrich Weiss, better known as Harry Houdini, could confound audiences with death-defying acts of escapology, magic and mystery. Yet in his later career, he became obsessed with debunking spiritualists, appalled by the way in which they fooled the general public and made a mockery of grief. That wasn't the magic he knew and loved, and in his crusade, he gained a reputation for a special brand of scepticism. He was an instrumental member of a 'debunking team' for *Scientific American* magazine, and would attend thousands of séances throughout his lifetime, in order to truly understand the methods used by tricksters. In the end, it would all but take over from his previous magic career. Houdini became increasingly consumed with the idea of busting myths, until his untimely and, some would say, suspicious death.

Spiritualism was at its peak during Houdini's lifetime, but it started to gain momentum much earlier. The landmark case that, for some, gave spiritualism credibility involved the Fox sisters in Hydesville, New York, 1848. Upon moving into a new family home, a knocking sound could often be heard coming from within the walls and fixtures of the building. As time went on and the knocking continued, the sisters created a sort of 'communication' with the knocking noises, whereby they would make noises, and hear replies in the form of knocks from the walls. On investigating the history of the house, they found that a local man had been buried in the house's basement, and the noises were believed to be his way of contacting the living from beyond the grave. The tale gripped America, and essentially formed the foundations of spiritualism as it was known in Houdini's time.

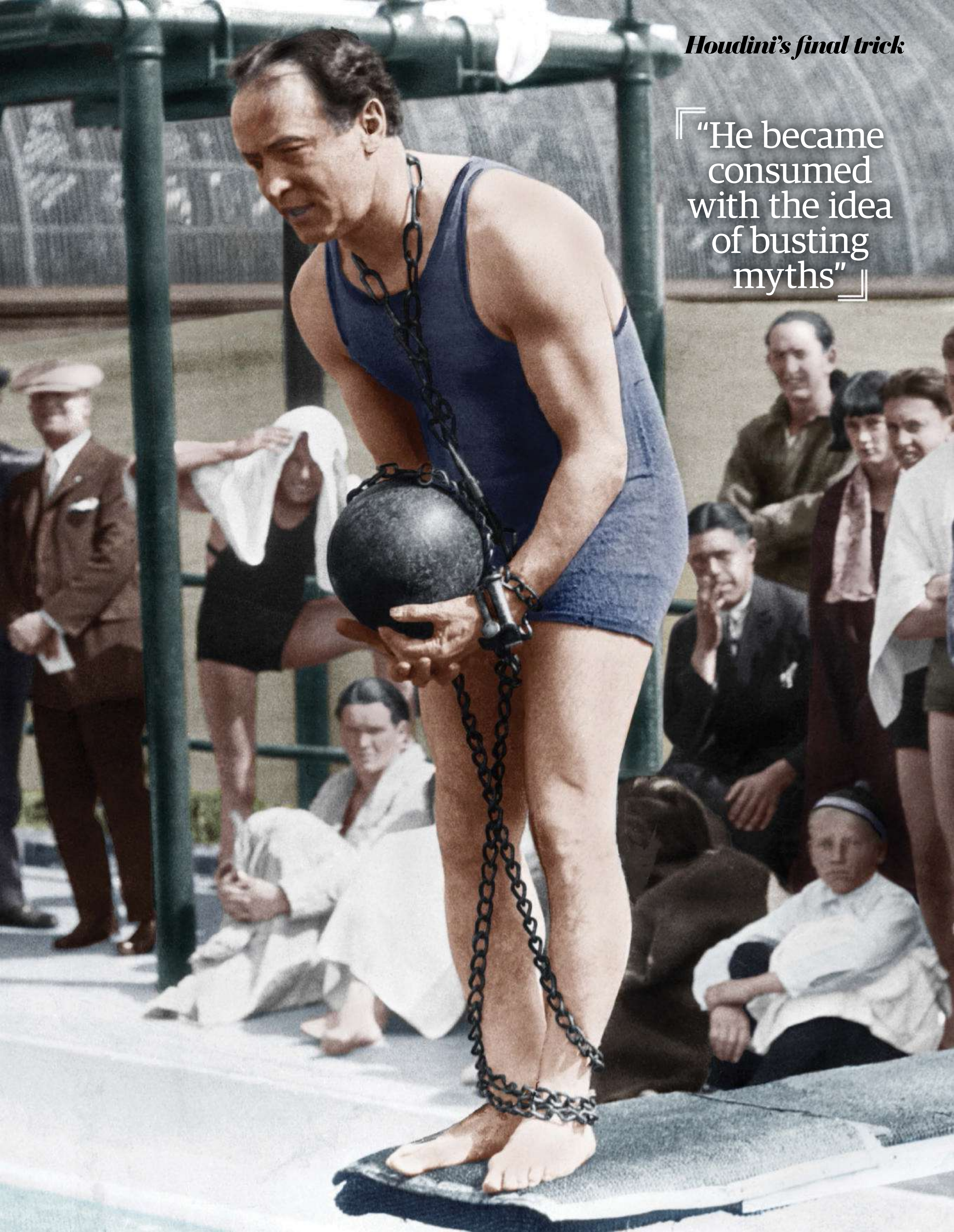
Years later, one of the sisters, Margaret Fox, admitted the stunt had been faked and confessed that she had battled with the guilt of deceiving the whole nation. Blaming the stunt on her youth and naivety, she called it "the greatest sorrow of [her] life". She retracted the confession later, but the truth of the story was largely irrelevant by that point. Spiritualism had set down its ghostly roots.

EHRICH WEISS

Hungarian, 1874-1926

Brief Bio

Born in Hungary into a working-class family, Weiss emigrated with them to Wisconsin, USA, when he was four years old. After reading a biography of Robert Houdin, a great French magician, he decided to become an illusionist, and is best known for tricks of escapology. He also performed vanishing acts and other tricks, before debunking spiritualism after the death of his mother.



> "He became consumed with the idea of busting myths"

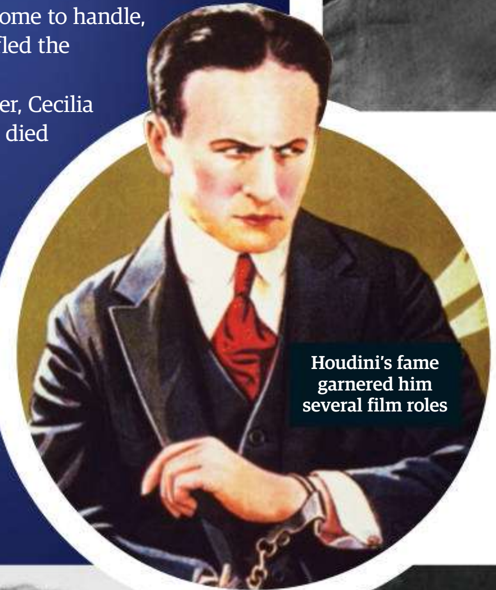
Spiritualism offered a social accessibility in a way that no other religions did, as women and those of lower social means were able to lead sessions, and even went on to become some of the country's most famed mediums. The phenomenon also tapped into the huge loss of life in the First World War, and part of its success may have been linked to a mass grief across the nations involved. Mediums would demonstrate their powers in various ways, ranging from freely moving tables and chairs and unexplained noises to the production of ethereal ectoplasm, from their mouths or genitals.

As a magician, Houdini was incredibly deft at recognising the tricks played by mediums – in his early career, he had even played some of them for audiences himself. At a show in Kansas, he had wowed audiences by recounting the name of a recently killed man in the town where he was performing. He had in fact just strolled around the town's cemetery, checked local birth and death records and spent time talking to local gossips. The information he revealed on stage was something every audience member knew, but the theatrical setting and apparent contact from the dead was too much for some to handle, and audience members fled the auditorium in fear.

When Houdini's mother, Cecilia Steiner Weiss, fell ill and died on 17 July 1913, he was devastated. The funeral was held back, against Jewish custom, so that he could see the body one last time, and he was largely thought to never have recovered from the grief of losing her.

Houdini and Cecilia had always been close; she had supported his

Houdini was an entertainer first and foremost, but was driven by a moral duty to protect the vulnerable



Houdini's fame garnered him several film roles

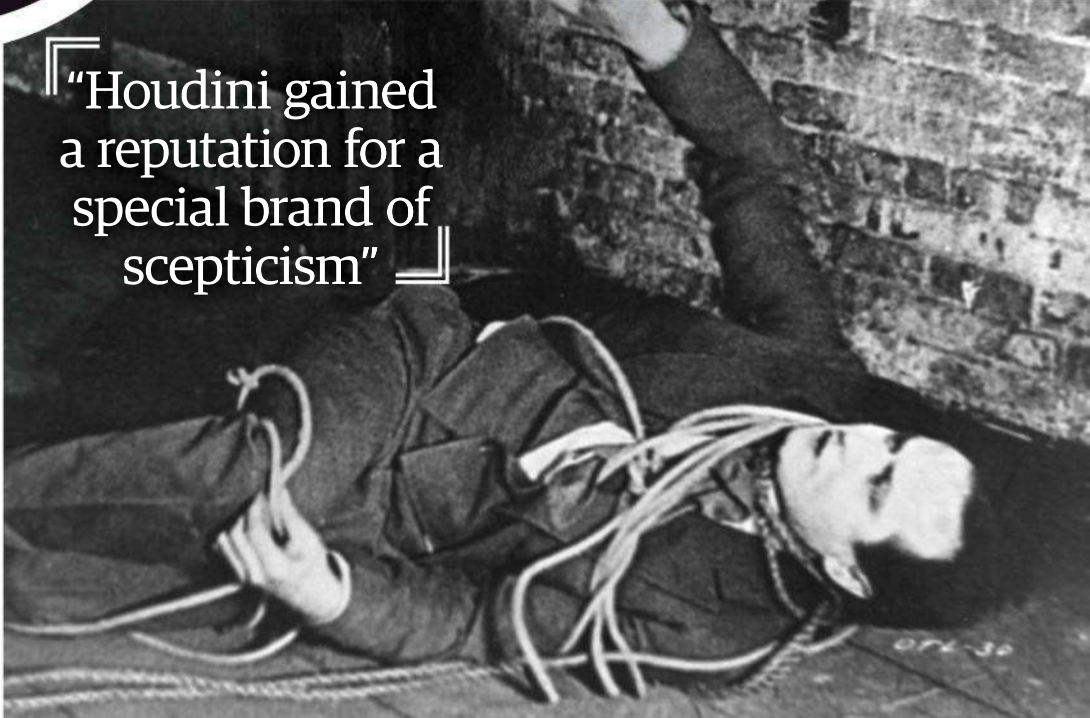
HOUDINI'S OTHER GUISES

Houdini wasn't just an illusionist – he tried out other jobs too

Film star
Houdini's film career began as a way to show his outdoor escapes as part of his stage show, but grew quickly. His first starring role was in a serial called *The Master Mystery* and from there followed films such as *The Grim Game*, *Terror Island*, *The Man From Beyond* and *Haldane Of The Secret Service*. Houdini's film success could never match up with his affection for magic, and in 1923, he bowed out of the movie business altogether.

Spy
In 2006, the book *The Secret Life Of Houdini* claimed Houdini was a spy for Britain and the US in WWI. Houdini could speak German, which would have been essential, and authors William Kalush and Harry Sloman argued Houdini spied on political leaders and royalty, using his career as a cover. The link was made when they found a diary written by William Melville, a British spymaster, which mentioned Houdini.

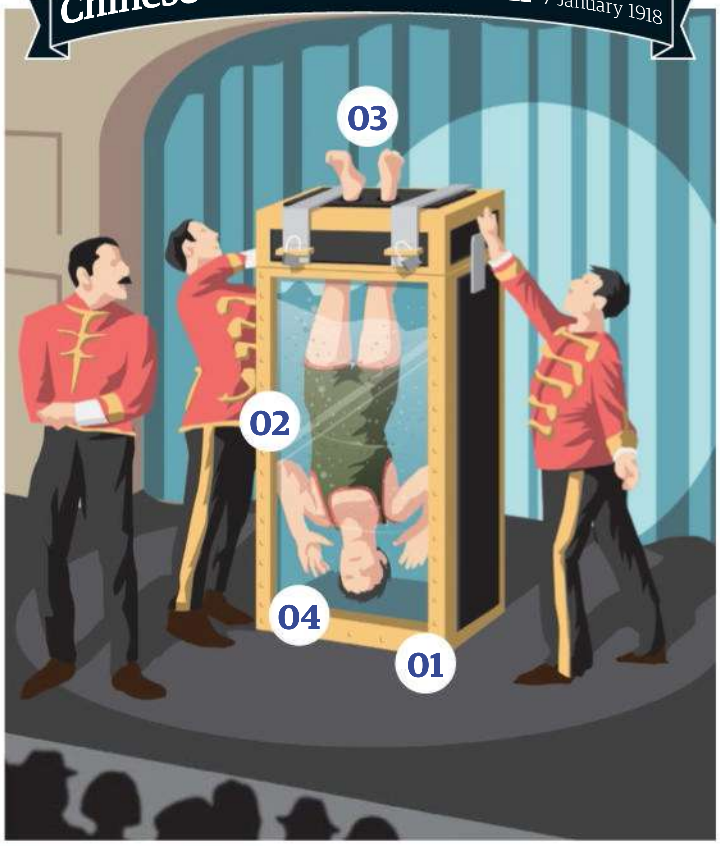
Aviator
Just after 1900, Houdini was gripped by a fascination with flight, and purchased a French biplane in 1909. He became a competent pilot and flew around Australia, intending to be the first person in the country to do so. It came to light that a Mr Defries from London had already pipped him to the post three months before, and never one to do things by halves, Houdini didn't fly his plane again.



> "Houdini gained a reputation for a special brand of scepticism"

THE GREAT HOUDINI'S GREATEST TRICKS

Chinese Water Torture Cell 7 January 1918



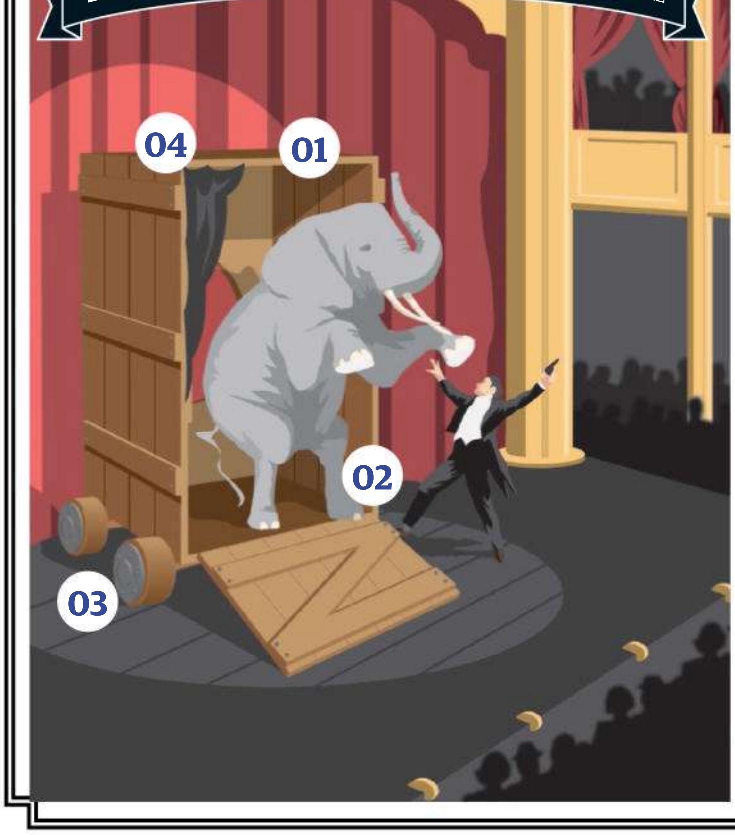
01 The cell was made of mahogany, metal and glass, so that a submerged Houdini could be seen. However, for the escape itself, a curtain was drawn across the cell.

02 The cell would be filled with water on stage as Houdini drew attention to the various inescapable features of the cell, then went off-stage to change into a bathing suit.

03 Houdini was strapped into ankle stocks attached to the top frame of the box. He was then hoisted, head first, into the cell. Water spilled over the sides creating more air space, and a curtain covered the tank for the escape.

04 Houdini would use the bars to help himself up to the top of the cell, free his feet from the stocks and climb out from the cell.

The Vanishing Elephant 21 September 1912

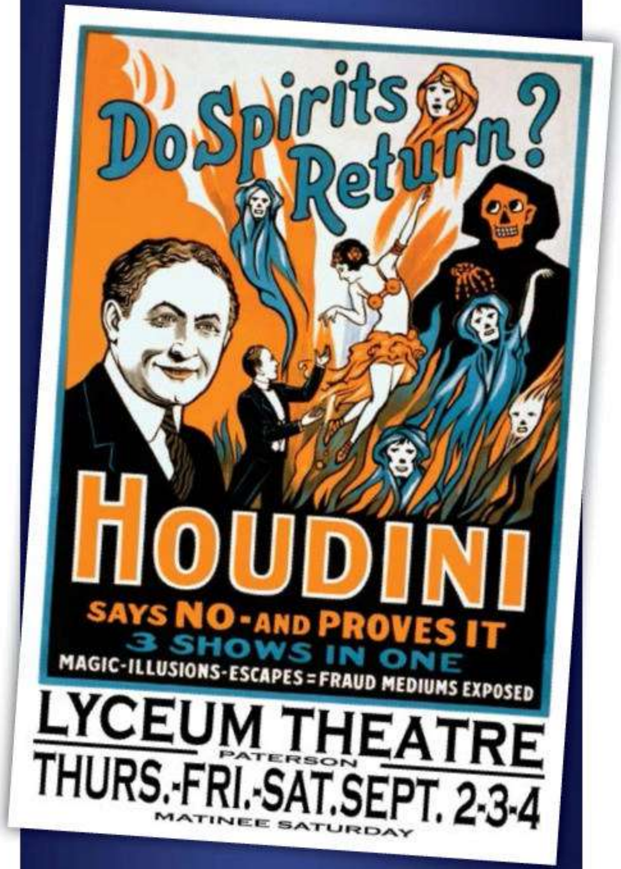


01 Houdini would describe the large box on stage as being "around eight feet [2.4 metres] high", but it was actually much larger. The huge theatre made the box look small in comparison.

02 Houdini fed the elephant and led her into the box, then closed the front curtains of the box.

03 A team of 12 men were tasked with moving the box around, while the trainer, who was inside with the elephant, moved her to one side.

04 A black curtain matching the inside of the box was drawn over the interior, hiding the elephant. The circle cut into the back of the box allowed in enough light to mask the darkness in the box and the front curtain was bunched to one side of the box to ensure the elephant was hidden.



Do Spirits Return?

HOUDINI

SAYS NO-AND PROVES IT

3 SHOWS IN ONE

MAGIC-ILLUSIONS-ESCAPES=FRAUD MEDIUMS EXPOSED

LYCEUM THEATRE

PATERSON

THURS.-FRI.-SAT. SEPT. 2-3-4

MATINEE SATURDAY

ambitions to become a magician from early in his life, and after her death, Houdini sought help from mediums in the hope of contacting her again. But at every attempt, Houdini was unconvinced by the attempts of the spiritualists he knew to be charlatans. It was this disappointment at not being able to speak to his mother again that fuelled his anger against spiritualism into something approaching an obsession.

With each trip to a séance or medium, his fervour against their trickery grew, so eventually, he began attending the events in order to work out how tricks were done, rather than in the hope of being convinced. He began to argue in public forums that mediumship was a particularly indecent type of fraud. Houdini chose to wage war not just in person, by attending séances and revealing frauds in small groups, but also through newspapers and books. His writing was always mysterious and often pompous, self-aggrandising and arrogant, and invited plenty of detractors, but also struck a nerve. Just as the temptation to discover how a trick is performed is strong, so the excitement of discovering the methods behind mediumship gripped the public.

Houdini worked with many writers and thinkers to get his message to the masses. His book *A Magician Among The Spirits* was co-written by CM Eddy Jr, and later he commissioned a book to be written by H.P. Lovecraft on the fundamental problems of spiritualism. He also began to tour with talks discrediting the methods of the mediums, where he would show slides of famous mediums and systematically denounce their supposed beliefs. It seemed he was just as entertaining a cynic as he was a magician.

Naturally, a nation largely convinced by the efforts of spiritualists was not entirely happy with

THE STRANGE CASE OF MINA CRANDON

Who was Mina Crandon?

Mina was a prominent Boston socialite who gained a reputation as a psychic, going by the name 'Margery' in the 1920s. She was married to Dr Le Roi Goddard Crandon, a local surgeon, in 1918. She started to experiment with spiritualism as a pastime, and displayed a seemingly natural ability to communicate with the dead.

How did she create the illusion of spiritualism?

'Margery' dressed in skimpy clothing, in order to give the impression of openness and an inability to conceal objects. One of her most famous tricks was the production of a sinewy 'spirit hand', supposedly belonging to her brother, Walter Stinson. She would also kick objects and was often helped by those attending her sessions.

How did she know Houdini?

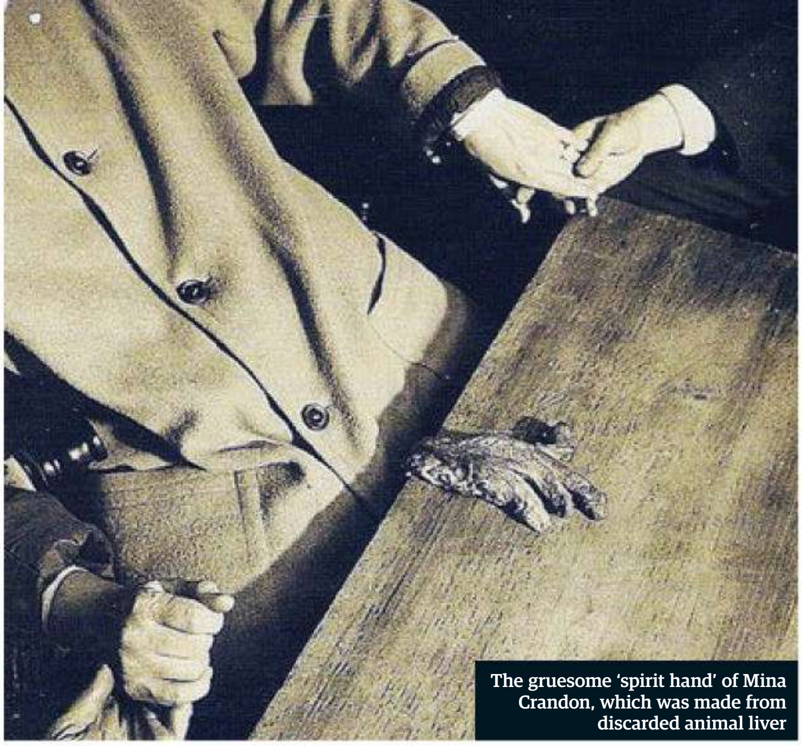
Mina's performance as Margery had gained notoriety after gaining support from people like Conan Doyle. Houdini attended her séance in 1924 when she had convinced the other panellists for *Scientific American* of her abilities, as he wanted to make up his own mind about her.

What happened?

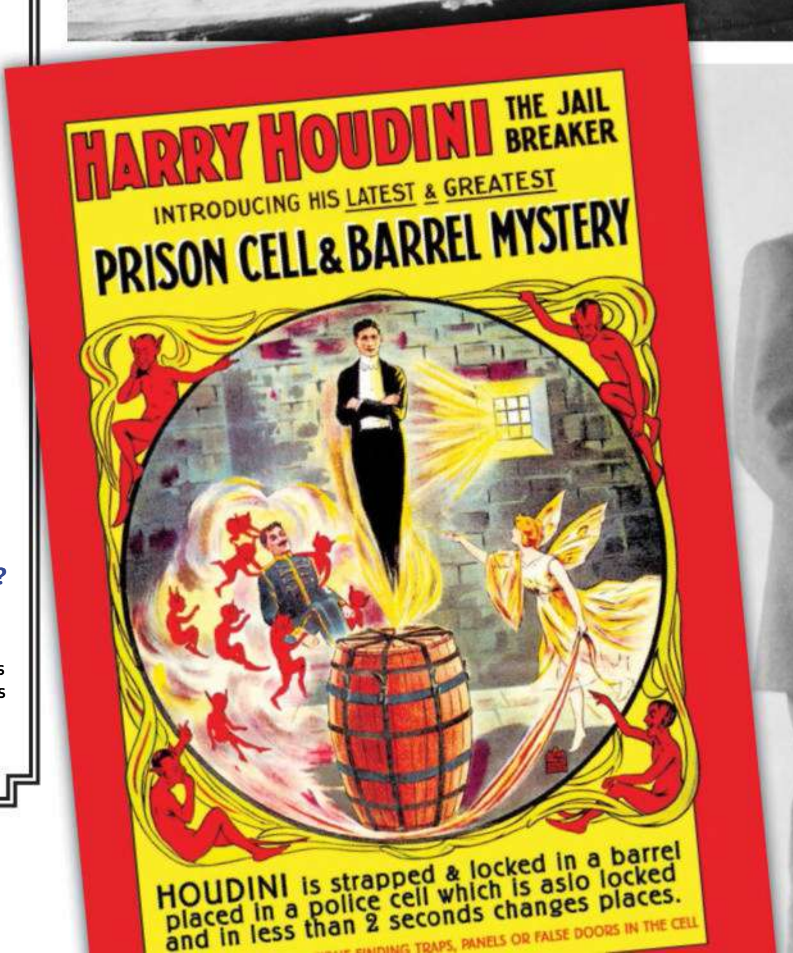
On 23 July 1924, Houdini arrived at the Crandon's Lime Street house in Boston. Here he witnessed her take on the voice of Walter, who communicated directly with Houdini through Margery, asking where he should throw objects. Houdini claimed he could feel her movements and would expose her with one more session.

Did Mina Crandon want revenge?

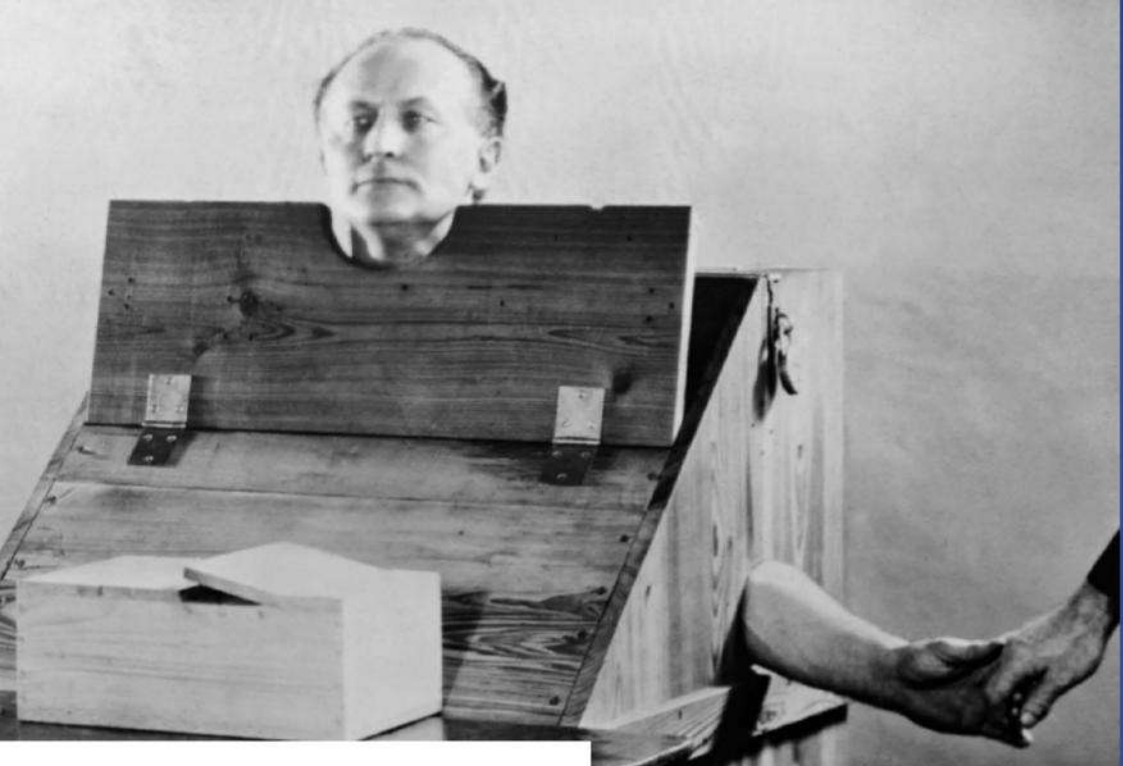
Mina continued to perform as Margery and even added new tricks to her sessions. Margery's supporters rallied against Houdini, and Walter the spirit guide made many claims about Houdini, including one in 1926 that was too close for comfort: "Houdini will be gone by Halloween."



The gruesome 'spirit hand' of Mina Crandon, which was made from discarded animal liver



HARRY HOUDINI
THE JAIL BREAKER
INTRODUCING HIS LATEST & GREATEST
PRISON CELL & BARREL MYSTERY
HOUDINI is strapped & locked in a barrel placed in a police cell which is aslo locked and in less than 2 seconds changes places.
FINDING TRAPS, PANELS OR FALSE DOORS IN THE CELL



The box Houdini created to expose Margery was simple but highly effective

> "Houdini was crushed, and months later publicly exposed the séance as fraudulent"

Houdini's attempts to dismantle the phenomenon. One of his most famous adversaries was in fact a former friend, the Sherlock Holmes author Sir Arthur Conan Doyle. The two had met in 1920 and had a mutual respect for one another, despite their beliefs being at completely opposite ends of the spiritualist spectrum.

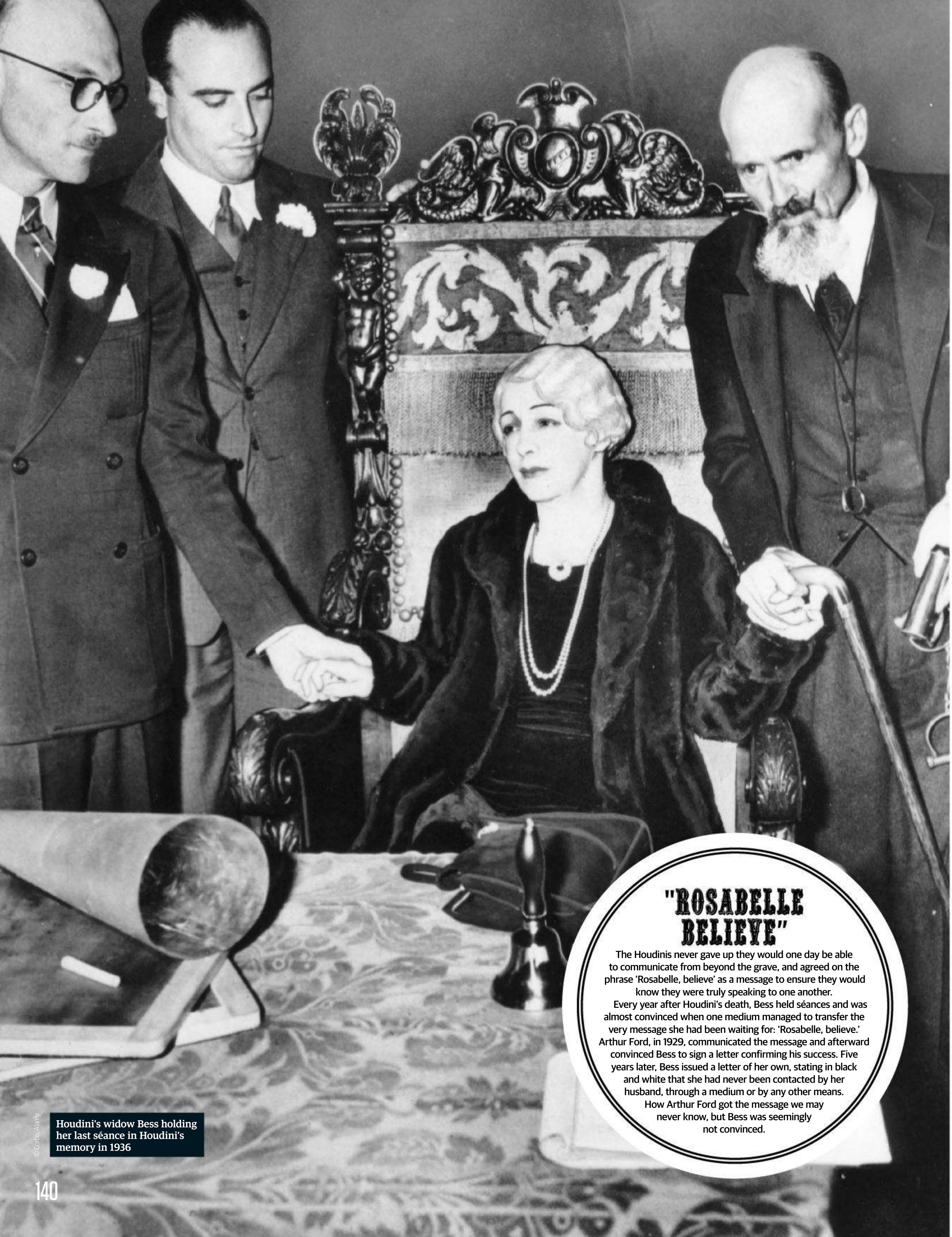
The similarities between the two men are undeniable; both were intelligent and in prominent positions, and Conan Doyle, like Houdini, had lost loved ones. However, perhaps due to a lack of knowledge of magic methods that set Houdini apart, Conan Doyle had been thoroughly convinced by his trips to mediums and forays into the world of the supernatural. In fact, Conan Doyle was a prime example of the grieving relative taken advantage of that so infuriated Houdini, and it was for their sake as well as his own that his campaign raged on.

Houdini's ghost-busting campaign wasn't one that Conan Doyle appreciated, though. He believed Houdini to be a psychic of great talent, despite his protestations, and invited him on several occasions to see mediums he felt could convince Houdini of the movement's authenticity. On one occasion, Conan Doyle invited Houdini to his home for a séance led by his wife, Lady Jean, and Houdini accepted, trusting his host's honesty and respectability. Houdini became even more enthused by the thought as Jean declared that she would attempt to contact his mother, something he, despite his rational mind, still hoped might be possible. The séance started well, with Jean relaying a loving message from Cecilia, through the method of 'automatic writing.' The message read, "Oh my darling, thank God, thank God, at last I'm through. I've tried, oh so often - now I am happy. Why, of course, I want to talk to my boy - my own beloved boy - friends, thank you, with all my heart for this"

Houdini would certainly have been happy with such a message, were it not for two instrumental details. Cecilia only ever spoke broken English, and she never learned to write. Houdini was crushed, but hid his disappointment until months later when he publicly exposed the séance as fraudulent. He maintained he did not blame the Conan Doyles, but believed them to have been swept away with their own beliefs.

The relationship between the two was strained after the encounter and they publicly came to blows over the medium Mina Crandon, who Conan Doyle believed to be a gifted spiritualist, but whom Houdini exposed as a fraud in a high-profile case for *Scientific American*. They had offered a prize of $2,500 to any medium who could convince the panel, on which Houdini sat, that they were genuinely able to channel spirits. When Houdini heard that Mina, who performed under the name 'Margery', had convinced every other member of the panel of her authenticity, he immediately cancelled upcoming shows and headed to Boston to give his judgement. On 23 July 1924, Houdini sat in a séance with Margery, her husband and some believers, attempting to work out her methods. He sat on Margery's left and had worn a tight bandage on his right leg all day so that he could feel any movement, no matter how slight. By the end of the séance he felt he had her worked out, but would need to attend one more session to truly expose her methods.

For his second séance with Margery, he had a special box constructed. The box would conceal Margery's legs, and constrain her arms and neck, so that her head poked out of the top of the apparatus. Without the ability to kick objects or



Houdini's widow Bess holding her last séance in Houdini's memory in 1936

© Corbis Alamy

"ROSABELLE BELIEVE"

The Houdinis never gave up they would one day be able to communicate from beyond the grave, and agreed on the phrase 'Rosabelle, believe' as a message to ensure they would know they were truly speaking to one another.

Every year after Houdini's death, Bess held séances and was almost convinced when one medium managed to transfer the very message she had been waiting for: 'Rosabelle, believe.' Arthur Ford, in 1929, communicated the message and afterward convinced Bess to sign a letter confirming his success. Five years later, Bess issued a letter of her own, stating in black and white that she had never been contacted by her husband, through a medium or by any other means. How Arthur Ford got the message we may never know, but Bess was seemingly not convinced.

> "Mediums would demonstrate their powers in various ways from unexplained noises to the production of ethereal ectoplasm"

the help of her husband, Margery was exposed as a fraud. Conan Doyle refused to accept the outcome, but Mina Crandon did not receive the $2,500 prize, and the case has remained as one of Houdini's greatest triumphs.

In October 1926, two young men entered the dressing room of the Princess Theatre, Montreal, where Houdini sat preparing for his show. They had come, they said, to see whether it was true that Houdini could take a blow to the stomach as had been reported. He replied that he could, if given time to prepare. No sooner had he said it than J Gordon Whitehead, one of the men, punched Houdini four times in the stomach.

The trauma to the stomach either led to or exacerbated a case of severe appendicitis, and the resulting acute peritonitis that killed Houdini, on 31 October – Halloween. The punch was the final event in a long list of unhappy accidents that took place while Houdini was touring with the anti-spiritualism show, including his wife Bess falling ill with ptomaine poisoning, and a chain slipping in the Water Torture Cell trick, leading to a fractured ankle for Houdini. Questions remain over whether this spate of bad luck, ending in Houdini's death at the age of 52, was just a case of bad fortune, or something more sinister. He had, after all, made plenty of enemies through his debunking campaign.

Despite his crusade against mediums, Harry and Bess always had an agreement that if he was able to reach her from beyond the grave, he would. A year after his death, on Halloween, 1927, Bess invited some of the most famous spiritualists of the time to conduct the first of what would be an annual séance in hope of contacting Houdini. Many mediums over the years attempted to convince Bess that they had made contact with Houdini's spirit, but even the most convincing was discovered to be fraudulent.

That someone who so vehemently opposed to spiritualism would still hold on to a shadow of doubt, and that his wife was clearly as eager as those Houdini sought to protect to communicate with the dead is a fascinating twist in the tale. To this day, annual séances are held by fans in the hope of receiving word from Houdini on whether communication is possible and what we can expect after death. Despite the fierce opposition to spiritualism he held on to throughout his life, Houdini always hoped in his heart that contact between the living and the dead was possible. Yet no matter how many times he tried, he could never make contact with the dead while he was alive, and has not yet found a way to make contact with the living in death. It was the mystery that consumed his later life and was the one trick that the Great Houdini could never pull off.

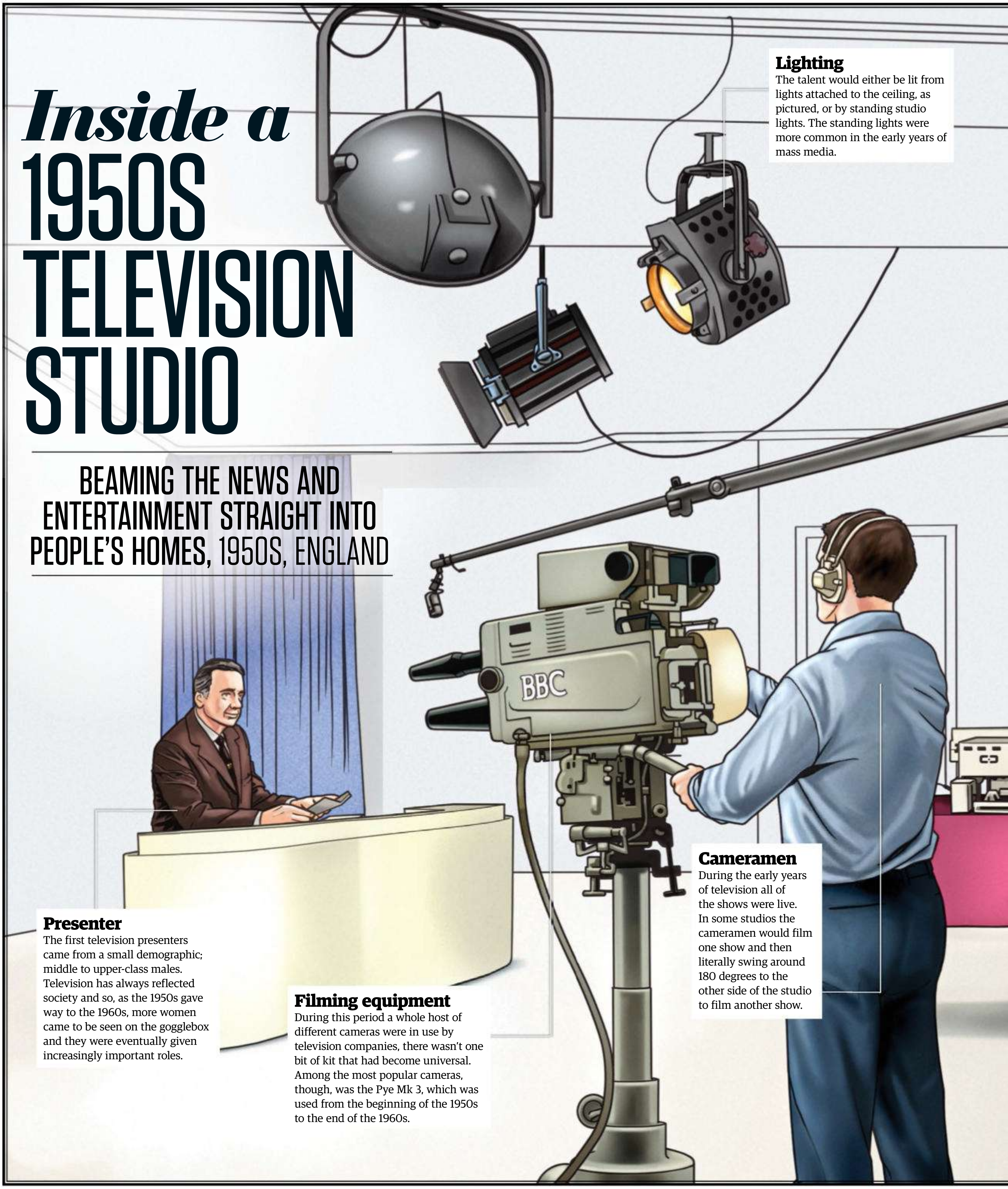
THE CANCER OF SUPERSTITION

In 1926, Houdini commissioned the eminent science-fiction writer H. P. Lovecraft to write a book denouncing spiritualism once and for all. Lovecraft and Houdini had already worked together on various projects, including a semi-fictional short story, *Imprisoned With The Pharaohs*, but the new commission, *The Cancer Of Superstition*, was to be a rational, scientific book, investigating why spiritualism was such a widespread phenomenon. However, Houdini and Lovecraft would never see their revolutionary tome published – Houdini's sudden death on 31 October 1926 put paid to the project.

Bess halted all work on it following Houdini's death, and a detailed synopsis is all that remains of the book. According to the surviving plan, the book would have consisted of chapters explaining the "harmful effects of superstition" and examining its roots in "man's effort to assign causes for the natural phenomena around him." Exactly why Bess halted the project we will never know. Some think it was too much to handle with the grief of her husband's death, but it has been suggested that she still harboured a belief in spiritualism.

Inside a 1950S TELEVISION STUDIO

BEAMING THE NEWS AND ENTERTAINMENT STRAIGHT INTO PEOPLE'S HOMES, 1950S, ENGLAND

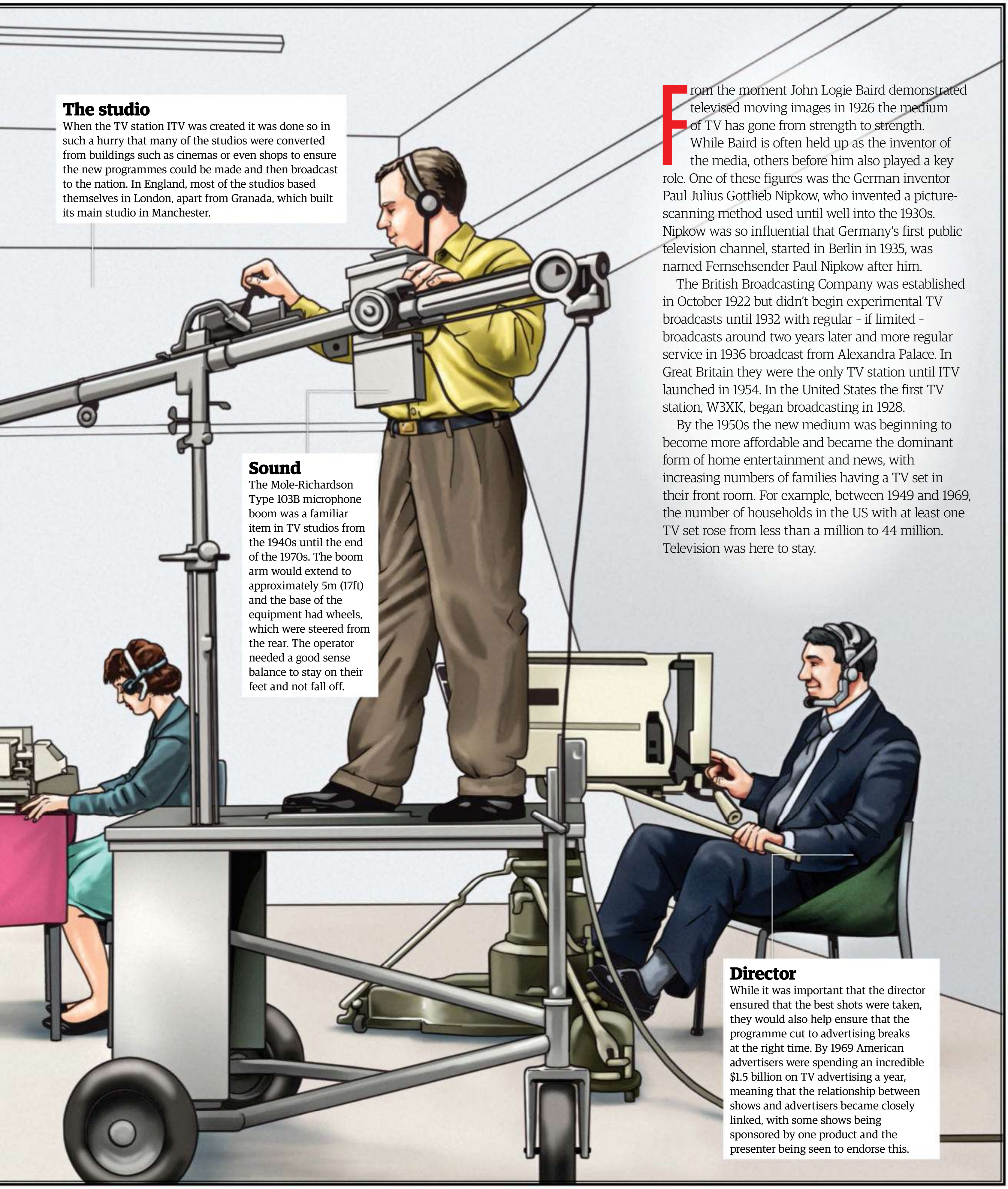


Lighting
The talent would either be lit from lights attached to the ceiling, as pictured, or by standing studio lights. The standing lights were more common in the early years of mass media.

Presenter
The first television presenters came from a small demographic; middle to upper-class males. Television has always reflected society and so, as the 1950s gave way to the 1960s, more women came to be seen on the gogglebox and they were eventually given increasingly important roles.

Filming equipment
During this period a whole host of different cameras were in use by television companies, there wasn't one bit of kit that had become universal. Among the most popular cameras, though, was the Pye Mk 3, which was used from the beginning of the 1950s to the end of the 1960s.

Cameramen
During the early years of television all of the shows were live. In some studios the cameramen would film one show and then literally swing around 180 degrees to the other side of the studio to film another show.



From the moment John Logie Baird demonstrated televised moving images in 1926 the medium of TV has gone from strength to strength. While Baird is often held up as the inventor of the media, others before him also played a key role. One of these figures was the German inventor Paul Julius Gottlieb Nipkow, who invented a picture-scanning method used until well into the 1930s. Nipkow was so influential that Germany's first public television channel, started in Berlin in 1935, was named Fernsehsender Paul Nipkow after him.

The British Broadcasting Company was established in October 1922 but didn't begin experimental TV broadcasts until 1932 with regular - if limited - broadcasts around two years later and more regular service in 1936 broadcast from Alexandra Palace. In Great Britain they were the only TV station until ITV launched in 1954. In the United States the first TV station, W3XK, began broadcasting in 1928.

By the 1950s the new medium was beginning to become more affordable and became the dominant form of home entertainment and news, with increasing numbers of families having a TV set in their front room. For example, between 1949 and 1969, the number of households in the US with at least one TV set rose from less than a million to 44 million. Television was here to stay.

The studio

When the TV station ITV was created it was done so in such a hurry that many of the studios were converted from buildings such as cinemas or even shops to ensure the new programmes could be made and then broadcast to the nation. In England, most of the studios based themselves in London, apart from Granada, which built its main studio in Manchester.

Sound

The Mole-Richardson Type 103B microphone boom was a familiar item in TV studios from the 1940s until the end of the 1970s. The boom arm would extend to approximately 5m (17ft) and the base of the equipment had wheels, which were steered from the rear. The operator needed a good sense balance to stay on their feet and not fall off.

Director

While it was important that the director ensured that the best shots were taken, they would also help ensure that the programme cut to advertising breaks at the right time. By 1969 American advertisers were spending an incredible $1.5 billion on TV advertising a year, meaning that the relationship between shows and advertisers became closely linked, with some shows being sponsored by one product and the presenter being seen to endorse this.

© The Art Agency

During his peak years, Frank Sinatra was one of the biggest entertainment stars in the world

My Way
Frank Sinatra's Dark Side

Rumours of Sinatra's Mafia connections dogged his entire career and the legendary crooner certainly had connections to made men…

In 1950 the US Senate convened a high-profile committee to investigate the growing problem of organised crime in America. Popularly known as the Kefauver Committee, after its chairman Senator Estes Kefauver, its findings included admissions of the FBI's failure to combat countrywide mob activity, leading to more than 70 local 'crime commissions' to combat the Mafia at local level, and a nationwide Racketeer Influenced and Corrupt Organisations Act. Unusually for the time, the proceedings were televised, with more than 30 million viewers eagerly tuning in to watch the testimonies of infamous gangsters: Mickey Cohen, Frank Costello, Jake 'Greasy Thumb' Guzik and others. Narrowly escaping a public grilling on this occasion was a struggling club singer called Frank Sinatra.

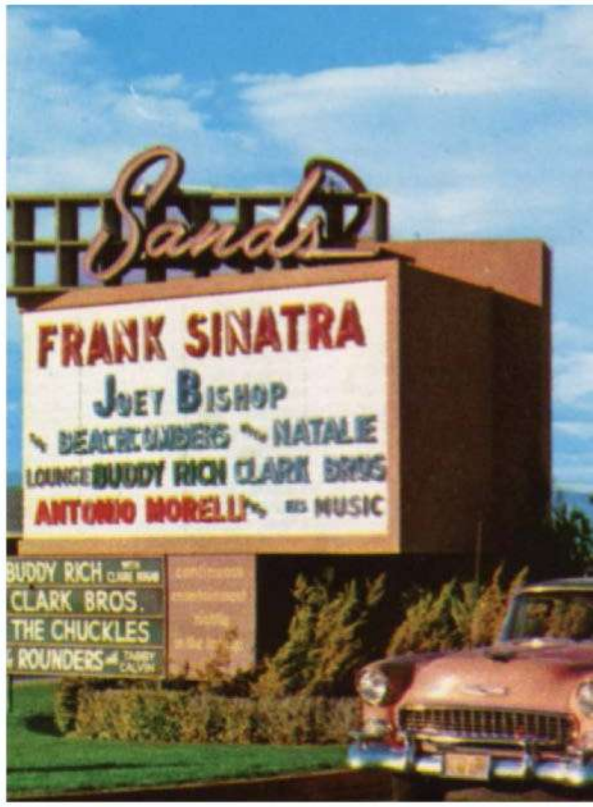
Council Joseph L Nellis questioned the singer in advance to determine his suitability for the stand, and the Kefauver Committee ultimately decided that no real purpose would be served by a Sinatra subpoena: his career was ailing at the time and the Committee generously opted not to finish him off by tarring him with the Mafia brush. However, during his questioning Sinatra nevertheless admitted to more than passing acquaintances with a significant list of made men: Lucky Luciano, Bugsy Siegel, Willie Moretti and Al Capone's cousins, The Fischetti Brothers.

Sinatra would not escape similar hearings in the future. While he always denied any Mafia involvement, his name kept cropping up. He was called before a Joint Senate-House Select Committee on Crime – along with his fellow Rat Pack performer Sammy Davis Jr – investigating gambling and corruption related to sport, in 1972. There was further public testimony, and further denials, in the hearings of the Nevada Gaming Control Board in 1981, where Sinatra was seeking to obtain a lucrative gambling license for his Las Vegas interests. They were never proven, but the whispers of Sinatra's intimate links to the mob were never silenced either. Was he really part of the Mafia? Or was he, as many have concluded, just a 'groupie', in love with the life but content to watch from the sidelines?

Possible Mafia ties stretch back to Sinatra's grandfather's youth in Sicily, the Italian island that was the birthplace of the Cosa Nostra. Frank's grandfather, Francesco Sinatra, was born in 1857 in the hill town of Lercara Friddi: Mafia heartland only about 25 kilometres (15 miles) from the famous town of Corleone. While there's no evidence that Francesco was involved in any dubious undertakings, he lived on the same street as the Luciano family, whose most famous son Salvatore – nicknamed Lucky – would come to be considered one of the fathers of organised crime in New York in years to come. Lucky's address book even contained the name of one of Francesco's in-laws, so it's entirely possible that Francesco and the Lucianos were personally acquainted.

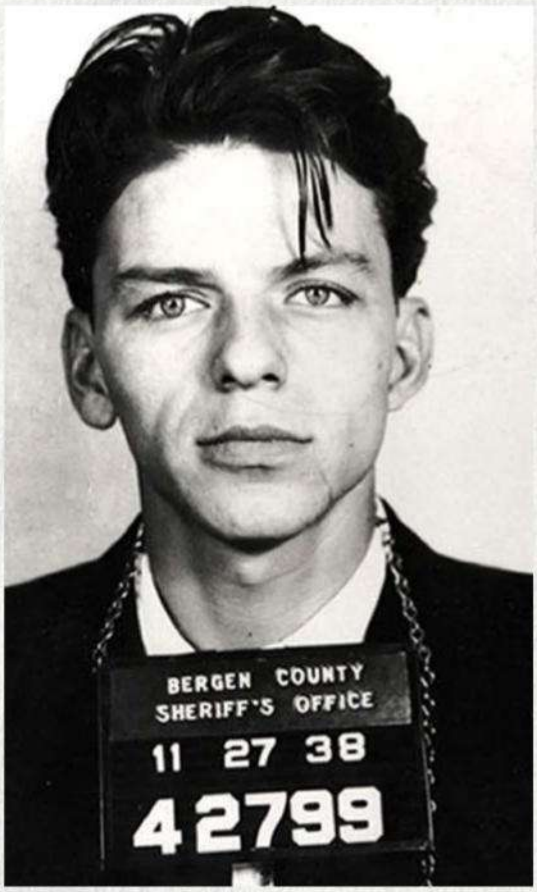
Francesco Sinatra emigrated to New York in 1900 with his wife and five children. The young Antonino, Frank's father, became an apprentice shoemaker, but also worked as a chauffeur and a professional bantamweight boxer. He had run-ins with the law involving a hit-and-run accident – for which he narrowly escaped a manslaughter conviction – and for receiving stolen goods. He married Frank's mother Dolly in 1913, and Frank himself was born, an only child, two years later. Dolly was a midwife, known to some as Hatpin Dolly due to her notoriety for performing illegal backstreet abortions, for which she was convicted twice. But she was also heavily involved in local Hoboken and Jersey City politics, working for two successive mayors at a time when the boroughs were infamous for corruption. When she and Antonino opened a bar in 1917, she became well known for bouncing drunks on the streets with her ever-present billy club.

The bar was the environment in which the young Frank Sinatra grew up, at a time when selling alcohol was illegal thanks to USA's Prohibition laws and, specifically, the Volstead Act. Frank would be doing his homework in the evenings in the corner of an establishment that could only remain in business thanks to his father's bootlegging activities with the local gangster Waxey Gordon, who in turn was connected to Lucky Luciano. Hoboken, as a port town, was a major transit point for illicit alcohol shipments and Frank's uncles, Dolly's



> "The bar was the environment in which the young Frank Sinatra grew up, at a time when selling alcohol was illegal"

SINATRA'S RAP SHEET



Crime: Street fights
Sinatra was a skinny child known for his singing and his closeness to his mother, but he claimed in later life that he saw plenty of delinquent juvenile action. His teeth, he said, were straightened not by a dentist but in a punch-up, and the scar above his nose was from a Coke bottle smashed in his face.

Verdict? Sinatra fed the experiences into his personal mythology: a tough kid who grew up on the mean streets.

Crime: Bootlegging
The Sinatras ran a bar during Prohibition, so naturally there was plenty of illegal activity keeping them in business. Frank grew up among gangsters and bootleggers. It's hard to imagine that Frank, right in the middle of it all, didn't help out his father and uncles with liquor runs on at least some occasions.

Verdict? His family had run-ins with the law, but Frank was never implicated and the bar business remained a roaring success.

Crime: Adultery
In 1938, before Sinatra became famous, he was caught in a compromising position with a married woman – never publicly identified – in north New Jersey. This might not seem very surprising given his reputation as a womaniser, but back then adultery was illegal, so it was a serious business.

Verdict? He escaped a $500 fine when the charges were dropped, but still had to pose for a mugshot.

Crime: Dodging the draft
Sinatra avoided having to join the US armed forces during the Second World War, and a persistent rumour suggested that he'd paid a $40,000 bribe to doctors in New Jersey to be declared unfit for service. While his peers went and fought for the Allies in Europe and Asia, he remained at home living the decadent high life of a superstar.

Verdict? FBI files released in 1998 revealed that Sinatra had been legitimately rejected due to a perforated eardrum and 'mental instability', but the myth still prevails among some.

Crime: Assault
In 1947, while having dinner at Ciro's in Los Angeles, Sinatra allegedly punched newspaper columnist Lee Mortimer. It was reported at the time that, as Sinatra walked past his table, Mortimer made a reference to his Italian ancestry and his links with the Mafia, receiving a punch on the jaw for his troubles.

Verdict? Sinatra had to go to court where he pleaded not guilty and was released on bail. The charges were dropped before the trial when, it was reported, Sinatra paid $9,000 to settle. Rumours of him using his fists to end disputes followed him throughout his career.

Frank Sinatra signing a contract to perform regularly in Las Vegas played a big part in building the city's status

Sands
A PLACE IN THE SUN

Sinatra talking with reporters during his trial for battery against journalist Lee Mortimer

brothers, were also heavily embroiled in the trade. Prohibition, perversely, was big business if you were on the wrong side of the law. It was the making of the Mafia in the United States. Frank's upbringing certainly wasn't wracked with hardship: his family rode out the Great Depression of the 1930s to the extent that Dolly bought him a brand-new car for his 15th birthday.

Despite his constant exposure to mob activities, Frank seized on a different 'racket' very early in life. He gave his first public performances singing along to the player piano in the Sinatra Bar and Grill, at the age of about eight.

His first professional break as a singer came in 1935 when he was 20, as a member of local singing group The Hoboken Four (a trio until Dolly leaned on them to let Frank join). This led to years of singing in clubs and bars in New York and around the country: an occupation in which fraternising with mobsters and their bosses would have been unavoidable. Organised crime went hand-in-hand with the bar business, and even after Prohibition ended, the mob remained silent partners in many businesses. They were also heavily involved in the music industry, controlling most jukeboxes nationwide, an therefore largely dictated what records would be most successful.

"Saloons are not run by the Christian Brotherhood", Sinatra hedged in later life. "A lot of guys were around that had come out of Prohibition and ran pretty good saloons. I worked in places that were open. They paid. They came backstage. They said hello. They offered you a drink. If Saint Francis of Assisi was a singer and worked in saloons he'd have met the same guys. That doesn't make him part of something…"

Sinatra enjoyed a very good year in 1939 – he had a contract with bandleader Tommy Dorsey, a hot enough act for Sinatra's national profile to be hugely increased. In his first year with Dorsey, Sinatra recorded more than 40 songs and topped the charts for two solid months with *I'll Never Smile Again*. But Sinatra's relationship with Dorsey was a troubled one, and their parting in 1942 began the first public rumblings of Sinatra's possible Mafia connections.

With his profile on the increase, Sinatra was keen to go solo, but Dorsey refused to release him from a contract that had years to run. This put Frank in a difficult position; he was being well-paid but his career was not his own. If he broke his contract he would owe considerable chunks of his income to Dorsey for the next decade: a clause

President John F Kennedy at an event at Rice University

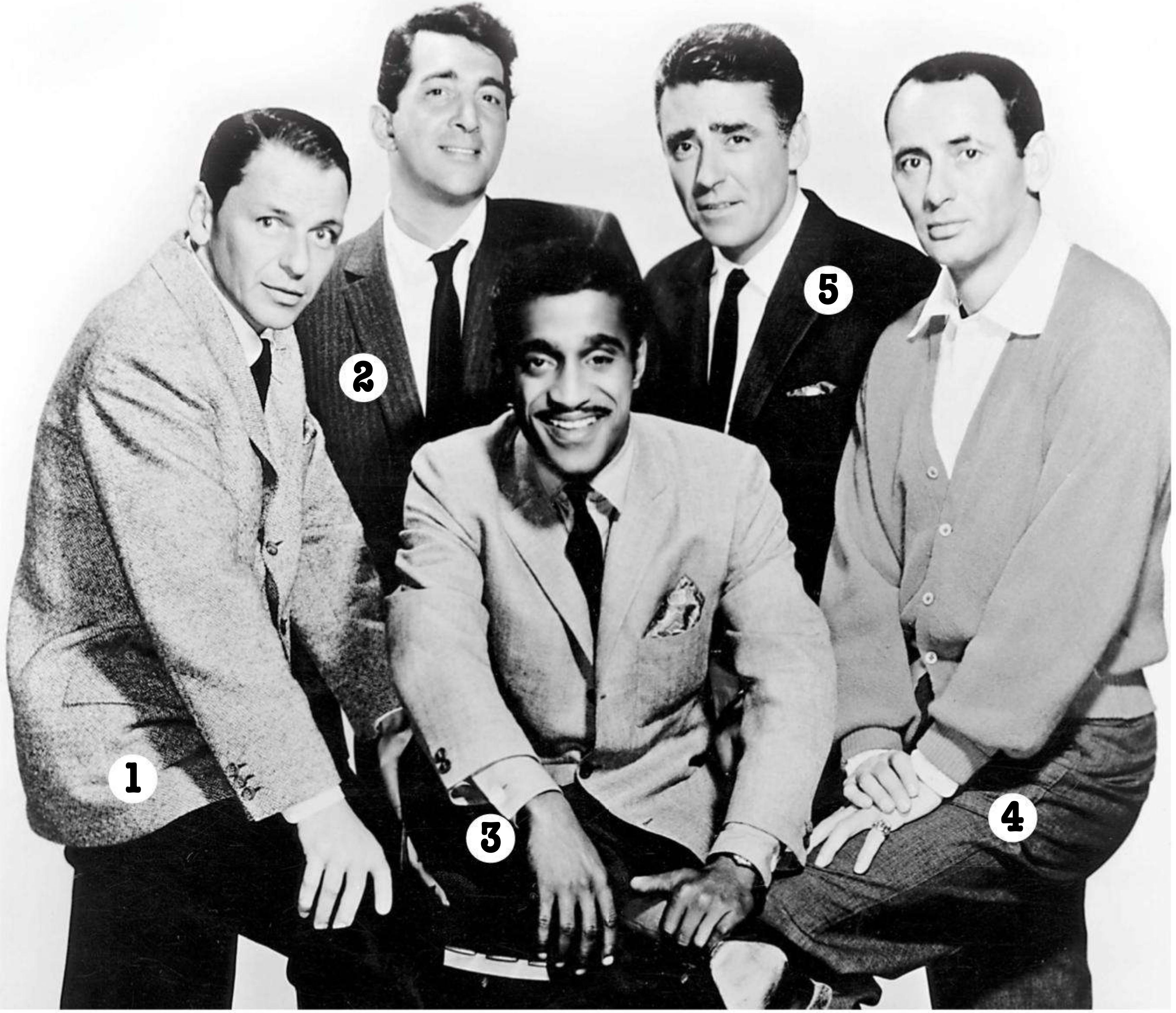
SEAL OF THE PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES

JFK: Sinatra's crush

John F Kennedy and Frank Sinatra first met at a Democratic Party rally in 1955. They immediately hit it off and became firm friends both on the golf course and in the hostelries of society nightlife, where Sinatra was known to occasionally set Kennedy up with some extra-marital female companionship.

Sinatra was even involved in Kennedy's run for the US presidency, and as always, the Mafia weren't far from the story. Kennedy's father Joseph was afraid to use his own Mafia links to help his son's campaign, so allegedly asked John's new best friend to be an intermediary. Sinatra was more than happy to oblige, so he helped to convince mob boss Sam Giancana to employ 'persuasive methods' to deliver Illinois and West Virginia to Kennedy's cause in the Democratic primaries before the election.

The plan paid off, but once JFK was president he soon began to distance himself from Sinatra, realising that it would be unwise for a president to risk mob scandal. The final straw for Sinatra was when Kennedy snubbed him at his Palm Springs home, opting to stay with Bing Crosby instead. The bitter Sinatra, who had invested in lavish decorations and a helipad specifically for the visit, was so upset that he went around his house smashing his treasured Kennedy souvenirs with an axe. A long-standing Democrat, Sinatra switched his allegiance to the Republicans in later years.



The Rat Pack

The name 'Rat Pack' was first given to a group of New York celebrities in the 1950s centred around Humphrey Bogart, later appended to the peer group around Frank Sinatra. The group never referred to themselves by that moniker, preferring the Summit or the Clan. They played together on stage and on film for years, usually crashing one another's gigs rather than performing as a formal group.

⚀ Frank Sinatra, singer/actor

Greatest hits: *My Way, Strangers in the Night, It was a Very Good Year, I've Got You Under My Skin, The Lady Is a Tramp, Fly Me To the Moon, New York New York*
Worst moment: Attempted suicide in 1951.
Did you know? He was replaced by Clint Eastwood in *Dirty Harry* after an injury forced him to pull out, and turned down Charles Bronson's role in *Death Wish*.

⚁ Dean Martin, singer/actor

Greatest hits: *Everybody Loves Somebody, Memories Are Made of This, That's Amore, You Belong To Me, Ain't That a Kick in the Head?*
Worst moment: Walking off the Together Again tour in 1988, leading to a late-life estrangement from Sinatra. Martin didn't like playing stadiums.
Did you know? Drunkenness was part of the reputation he cultivated, but the 'booze' he drank on stage was often nothing more than apple juice.

⚂ Sammy Davis Jr, singer/dancer/actor

Greatest hits: *What Kind of Fool Am I?, Candy Man, I've Gotta Be Me*
Worst moment: The car accident that injured him and cost him an eye in 1954.
Did you know? Davis was a significant financial supporter of the American Civil Rights movement, but suffered racist jokes and bullying from his Rat Pack colleagues.

⚃ Joey Bishop, actor/comedian

Greatest hits: *The Thin Man* (TV), *Easter Parade, Ocean's Eleven* (film)
Worst moment: His 1960s talk show *The Joey Bishop Show* lasted only two years, battered in the ratings by Johnny Carson's famous *Tonight Show*.
Did you know? Bishop was the last surviving member of the Rat Pack; he died in 2007.

⚄ Peter Lawford, actor/producer

Greatest hits: *The Thin Man* (TV), *Easter Parade, Ocean's Eleven* (film)
Worst moment: Falling out with Sinatra in 1963, as Sinatra believed he had failed to intercede using his family connections when Kennedy opted not to stay at Sinatra's house. Lawford never worked with the Rat Pack again.
Did you know? Lawford married Patricia Kennedy, making him John F Kennedy's brother-in-law.

Sinatra found unsavoury. Lawyers desperately searched in vain for loopholes in the deal that would allow Sinatra to walk free, and it looked like Dorsey would keep his biggest star. However, he was quickly persuaded to change his mind. Sinatra denied it, but Dorsey claimed that he was visited by Willie Moretti and two sharp-suited henchmen. "Willie fingered a gun and told me he was glad to hear I was letting Frank out of our deal", Dorsey recalled. "I took the hint."

The young crooner made the most of his opportunity and the next few years saw 'Sinatramania' grip the US, as the singer recorded hit after hit. There was also resentment, though, as during World War II, he somehow managed to avoid military service. Rumours were rife that he had paid his way out – although the FBI never found any evidence of this – while other sources suggest he was deemed unfit on psychological grounds and because of a perforated eardrum. Whatever the reason, pictures of him at home, cigarette in one hand and drink in the other, surrounded by beautiful women and living the superstar lifestyle, did not endear him to those in uniform and their families.

However, that controversy was a drop in the ocean compared to the furore that erupted when Sinatra was photographed in Cuba in 1947 at a mob celebration for Lucky Luciano's release from jail. The incriminating pictures showed Sinatra with his arm around Luciano on a hotel balcony; with Luciano at a Havana nightclub; and with the Fischetti Brothers at the airport, disembarking a plane with a case in hand. Why would he have carried his own luggage? Comedian and movie star Jerry Lewis (former partner of Rat Pack lieutenant Dean Martin) alleged that Sinatra carried money for the mob. Sinatra claimed that the case was full of art supplies, and that he couldn't have physically carried the $2 million he was accused of trafficking in the case. Journalist Norman Mailer quickly established that much more than $2m fits easily in an attaché, effectively debunking Old Blue Eyes' argument.

If there was any doubt about what was in the case, Sinatra's presence at the mob shindig was inarguable. Sinatra was close to Joe Fiscetti, who was a talent agent for mob-owned clubs all over the US, and had agreed to the impromptu Havana trip while holidaying with his wife Nancy across the water in Miami. Once in Cuba, Sinatra claimed, he learned the embarrassing truth that he was ensconced at a Mafia convention, and reasoned it would be impolite – not to say dangerous – to make excuses and leave. He stayed and performed for the goodfellas, but witnesses confirmed that he displayed little reserve in accepting the mob's hospitality, which included hotel-room orgies with 'planeloads' of call girls. It was as if Sinatra felt right at home, and many of his Havana acquaintances would remain with him during his later Las Vegas years.

"Misty-eyed tough guys would give him pocket money for his renditions of sentimental popular songs of the day"

Before the glittering lights of Vegas and the Rat Pack years, though, came the doldrums, as Sinatra's star waned in the US, outshone by younger up-and-comers like teen heartthrob Eddie Fisher. Sinatra, now in his thirties, failed to launch a successful television career, and attempted suicide in 1951.

But he achieved one of the greatest comebacks ever when he landed a role in the 1953 movie *From Here To Eternity*, for which he won an Oscar for Best Supporting Actor for playing Angelo Maggio, a down on his luck Italo-American GI. Once again, evidence suggests he didn't achieve that success entirely on merit. The head of Columbia Studios, Harry Cohn, had been adamant that Sinatra would not be cast, until a phone call from gangster Johnny Roselli persuaded him otherwise. The alleged episode was the inspiration for Mario Puzo in his novel *The Godfather*, in which studio head Jack Woltz is terrorised into casting Johnny Fontane in his movie with a horse's head left in his bed. Roselli's display of power was less overt but, it seems, just as impactful. Having helped Sinatra revive his career, the mob weren't going to let him out of their clutches. FBI director J Edgar Hoover famously described Sinatra as having a "hoodlum complex", and he clearly relished the dark glamour of gangsters and criminals. The reality though was that he was as much in thrall to the Mafia as he would have been to Tommy Dorsey if he'd failed to break his contract. When they asked him for free performances he would jump to oblige, and in 1953 when Mafia fortunes were invested in making Las Vegas the gambling capital of the world, Sinatra was key. Sinatra was to be a regular fixture at the mob-run Sands Hotel and Casino, in return for a two per cent stake. This was big business.

The Sands became his home away from home until the late-1960s, and in the mid-1970s another incriminating photograph would haunt him through the media: he was snapped backstage at the mob-built Westchester Premier Theatre in New York, with his arm around crime boss Carlo Gambino. The FBI kept a file open on Sinatra for five decades until his death in 1998.

Sinatra dressed like a gangster, talked like a gangster, grew up around gangsters and fraternised with gangsters. Perhaps the greatest irony is that he was never actually a made man. His relationship with the mob was clearly beneficial to both sides: Sinatra got fame and fortune and the mob had a tame star who could be used to boost coffers and shore up investments when necessary. If Sinatra was instrumental in establishing Las Vegas, Las Vegas was equally important in his 1950s comeback, but while the singer was clearly starstruck by the mob, it's unclear whether the mob was similarly dazzled, or simply saw Sinatra as expedient as long as he behaved. "I'd rather be a don for the Mafia than president of the United States," is a quote often attributed to the singer. If that's true, it seems that he never really got His Way after all.

Sinatra (second from left) posing with a group of reputed mobsters

"When Mafia fortunes were being invested in making Las Vegas the gambling capital of the world, Sinatra was an important pawn in their game"

© Alamy; Corbis; Getty

Day in the life

A 1950S MOVIE STAR

RADIATING GLAMOUR AND GRACE WHILE WORKED TO EXHAUSTION

UNITED STATES OF AMERICA, 1950S

The golden age of Hollywood was very much in motion at the dawn of the 1950s. The star system of the Hollywood studios was still in effect, which meant that some stars were still employees of film studios. However, a Supreme Court decision made it illegal for studios to own theatres. Power was being dragged away from the studios and actors wished to take advantage. As film struggled to hold its own against television, the scandals and glamour of the faces of the big screen were still a source of fascination to the public. While on the surface they appeared perfectly groomed at the forefront of fashion, in reality actors and actresses were fighting to stay afloat in a rapidly changing industry.

DRESS FOR SUCCESS

During the golden era of cinema, mass media was the main influence on fashion, and movie stars were constantly setting new trends. The styles of Audrey Hepburn, Grace Kelly and Elizabeth Taylor dragged fashion away from the conservative 1940s and even male stars like Marlon Brando and James Dean were making a splash - with teenage boys everywhere copying their white t-shirt, jeans and leather jacket look.

Women of the 1950s tried to emulate the glamour of stars like Marilyn Monroe

LAND THE PERFECT ROLE

The movies of the 1950s were a significant departure from the 1940s. As Cold War paranoia filtered into cinema, science fiction flicks that delivered cynical messages about political powers, such as *Invasion Of The Body Snatchers*, became popular. For actors it signalled a change from the 'cool' to fractured, emotionally vulnerable characters. Method acting, made popular by Marlon Brando, became prevalent among performers.

WORK WITHOUT BREAKS

Many popular stars of the era were in such high demand that they barely had any rest between one production and the next. To deal with their demanding schedules, young stars were pumped with amphetamines to keep them awake during filming, then sleeping pills at night. The pressure to produce winning performances also drove many stars to recreational drugs, especially LSD.

Humphrey Bogart and Katharine Hepburn on the set of the 1951 film *The African Queen*

Brando's performance in *On The Waterfront* won him an Oscar and transformed the world of acting

DEMAND A BIGGER SALARY

At the start of the 1950s, stars were still attached to studios, but this steadily began to decline through the decade. James Stewart broke tradition by becoming a freelance movie star and demanding to be paid half the profits made by his films. Many other stars followed his lead and went independent, insisting they were paid on a film-by-film basis. This was the beginning of huge independent star salaries that actors are paid today.

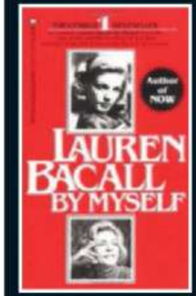
DATE A CO-STAR

As actors spent so much of their time on set, it is no surprise that secret love affairs between co-stars, directors and even agents were common. Esther Williams had a romantic liaison with co-star Victor Mature on the set of *Million Dollar Mermaid* due to problems with her marriage. Because of the relentless schedule and demanding work of starring in movies, it was very difficult for actors to maintain healthy relationships with anyone outside of the Hollywood bubble.

COVER UP A SCANDAL

Although Katharine Hepburn managed to hide a 26-year-long affair with co-star Spencer Tracy from the press, other stars were not so lucky. Ingrid Bergman's virginal image was destroyed when the press found out about her affair with director Roberto Rossellini in 1950. As actors were closely tied to studios, any scandalous headlines would impact negatively on the studio's reputation and could see the stars kicked out of their contracts.

How do we know this?



LAUREN BACALL BY MYSELF

Although they can't be relied on for authenticity, tabloid newspapers from the era give a great insight into the pressure placed on movie stars in the 1950s, as well as the fascination people had with them. A lot of what we know about the lives of actors in this era comes from biographies written by the stars themselves. Lauren Bacall, Katharine Hepburn and Fred Astaire are just some of the stars who wrote revealing autobiographies of their lives during the golden era of film. For a more objective approach, *The Fifties: Transforming The Screen* offers an in-depth study of the changes cinema underwent in this dramatic decade, while also providing historical context of American culture as a whole.

AVOID THE PAPARAZZI

Although the term 'paparazzi' was not attached to them until the 1960s, in the 1950s the scandal sheet photographers were out in force, eager to grab the perfect snap of the decade's film stars in compromising or mundane situations. Even in these early days the paparazzi were the bane of actors' lives. Publicity could be positive, but more often than not photos would be used to support sensationalised stories that could damage an actor's career. The press hounded Marilyn Monroe so relentlessly that during a high-speed chase one of the paparazzo's cars hit a tree and he was killed.

APPEAR ON TV

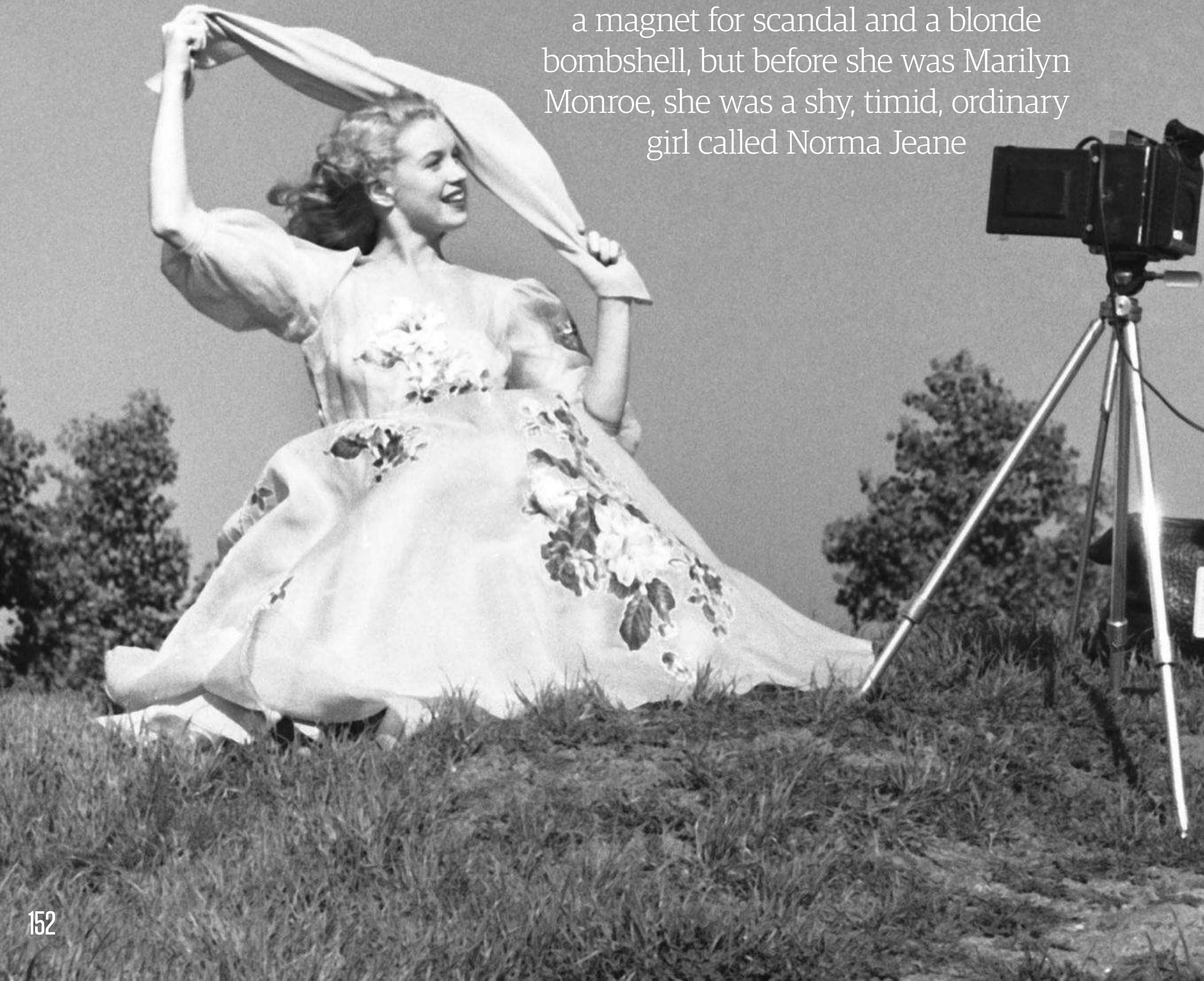
In 1959, only 42 million Americans were attending the cinema each week, compared to double that number ten years previously. This was thanks to the growing number of American homes with television sets. Many directors, stars and technicians were forced to leave the film industry and work on television shows instead. There was also a growing trend for stars to appear on advertisements, as making money through film alone was proving difficult.

Popular sitcoms like *I Love Lucy* led to more people staying home to get their entertainment fix

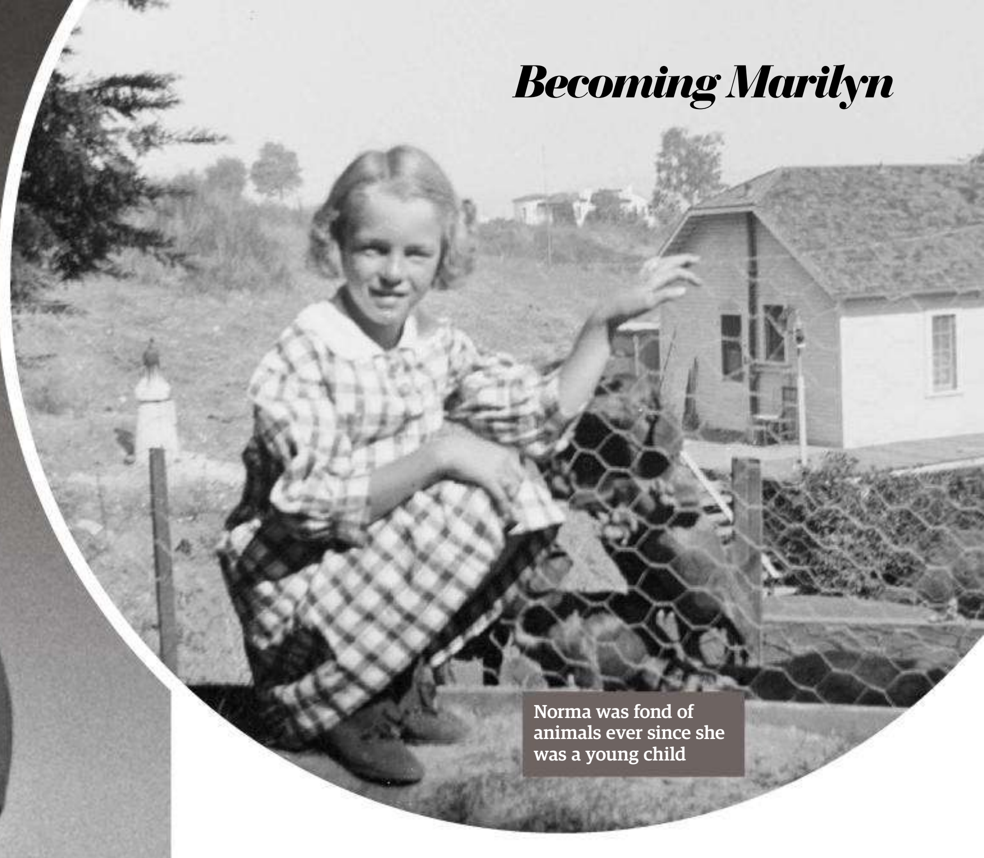
© Rex Features

Becoming MARILYN

She is known today as a femme fatale, a magnet for scandal and a blonde bombshell, but before she was Marilyn Monroe, she was a shy, timid, ordinary girl called Norma Jeane



Norma chose 'Monroe' as it was her mother's maiden name


Norma was fond of animals ever since she was a young child

With her famous curves, bleached blonde hair, red lips and high voice, the Marilyn Monroe that is remembered today is almost a caricature of the 'ideal' woman. This is the version of Marilyn that has become immortal – a life of scandals, glamour and tragedy. But she was so much more than that. She was a woman who adored life, who spent hundreds of dollars trying to save a storm-damaged tree, and who cared for animals in her yard. She was loud, gentle and joyous. But she was also self-absorbed, and crippled with doubt and stage fright so terrible that sometimes she couldn't emerge from her trailer. She could be cutting, and say the sharpest words with the softest voice. She was bad at remembering lines, bad at arriving on time and bad at keeping men.

Because of her glittering rise and tragic end, the Marilyn that has entered legend is a surface image of the one that lived and breathed. Before she bleached her hair, when she struggled to pay her bills and nobody paid attention to her, she was a girl called Norma Jeane, and Norma Jeane was very different to the icon she became.

Nobody knows who Norma's father was. Upon her birth on 1 June 1926, her mother Gladys Baker registered her ex husband, Martin Edward Mortenson, as the father, but it is likely he was added to avoid the sting of illegitimacy. Instead, it may have been Charles Stanley Gifford, a handsome man who worked with Gladys at Consolidated Film Industries. Either way, by the time Norma was born, both men were gone. When she was a child, Norma was shown a photo of Gifford and described him as looking like Clark Gable. This would morph into a lie that she told her friends as a teenager – that Gable was her secret father, and would one day whisk her away to a land of glamour and opportunity. Ever since she could speak, Norma looked outwards, and sought for something more.

It is no small wonder that Norma looked for a sense of importance. She had no roots on one side, and on the other a long history of insanity. Her grandfather had been confined to a state asylum, her grandmother eventually followed, her uncle had killed himself and her mother would drift in and out of asylums for most of Norma's life.

Gladys couldn't afford to look after Norma, so when she was a baby she was placed with a deeply religious family, the Bolenders, who agreed to look after her for a fee of $5 a week. Gladys hadn't abandoned her child – she had a plan. She would work until she could afford a house, then take her daughter back. She took trolley rides from Hollywood to Hawthorne, where Norma lived, every Saturday. There Gladys would sit with the child she barely knew, before leaving again to be back in time for her weekly date.

What was it like?
Hollywood 1947

In the post-war years, Americans were finally free to relax and enjoy the finer things

Fashion

In 1947, Christian Dior launched his 'New Look', which was a mid-calf-length full skirt, rounded shoulders and pointed bust. Much of the fashion of the late 1940s focused on making the waist look as tiny as possible, with cinched waist jackets and long skirts becoming popular. Skirts were either very full or narrow, and women made efforts to make themselves look as feminine as possible with accessories like pearls and gloves.

Stars

All the biggest stars of the era were presented as wholesome and likeable – Ingrid Bergman and Bing Crosby starred in many of the biggest films of the era. Betty Grable, Bette Davis and Clark Gable were also very popular. This year would also see the early beginnings of method acting, with the establishment of the Actors Studio in New York City.

Cinema

In the late 1940s, American moviegoers were keen to put the war behind them. Escapist, nostalgic entertainment was popular and musicals with elaborate production numbers and simplistic plots were common. Action-adventure fun attracted large audiences, with lots of Western and gangster flicks produced. Violence and sex appeal continued to be popular, and the people's need to forget about their past hardships led to the emergence of comedies.

Economy

The USA enjoyed a period of economic expansion in the post-war years, which lasted into the 1970s. It was a golden age for capitalism and the growth was distributed across the classes reasonably equally. Many farm workers moved to better paying jobs in major towns and cities and the middle class swelled.

Families

Marriage rates soared in the post-war years, and unsurprisingly birth rates quickly followed suit. Women who had taken on jobs in factories during the war returned to traditional 'mother' roles and gender roles were sharply defined. This also led to the emergence of the suburbs as a popular place to live and bring up a family.

20th Century Fox claimed that they 'discovered' Monroe while she worked as a babysitter

The first photo of Monroe taken for *Yank, The Army Weekly*

Gladys ended up changing her daughter's name to Baker, the surname of her first husband

Norma was a quiet child, remarkably quiet. When her mother occasionally took her to the film lab, she would sit quietly for hours. As a child, these qualities were congratulated, but later she would be criticised as seeming totally detached from reality. Scriptwriter Nunnally Johnson described her as "ten feet under water… a wall of thick cotton… she reminds me of a sloth. You stick a pin in her and eight days later it says 'ouch'."

For seven years Norma lived in this relatively stable home. The Bolenders were not wealthy, but they were moral, hardworking people. Norma grew into a lively child with tough features. In school she was timid, but at home she was strong, bold and bossed around her brother. This domination of men would later become one of Marilyn's defining features. However, as Norma turned seven, her mother had finally earned enough money to buy a house, and the young Norma moved to Hollywood 13 years before her career would begin.

Unfortunately, Gladys was a ticking time bomb of inherited insanity. In less than three months she had an extreme psychotic episode and had to be dragged away by force. She was placed in a state asylum, just like her parents, and Norma was told her mother was 'in hospital'. She wouldn't understand what this meant until she became a woman herself. Now Norma had nothing – no father, no mother to visit her on Saturday, no quiet suburban home and no identity. For the next two years she was carted between two couples – an English family forced to return home when depression hit, and neighbours who became fond of the girl and requested to adopt her. From the asylum, Gladys still had a voice, and she said no.

Now a ward of the state, Norma was sent to an orphanage. When the young girl realised where she was, she kicked and screamed: "I'm not an orphan!" Her days of endless boredom in the institution were broken up by visits from Grace McKee, her mother's friend and now legal guardian. The glamorous lady would whisk her away, buy her soda and take her to see a movie. This is likely where Norma's love affair with the screen began, but McKee also provided another of Norma's enduring loves – she allowed her to try on makeup.

Aged 11, Norma left the orphanage and flitted between foster homes until eventually Grace took her in. It wasn't an easy situation – Grace had recently married a man ten years her junior who had three children and liked to drink. Although home life was anything but stable, Norma was finally able to pursue her love of acting. She was rejected by her high school dramatic society, so instead she played the parts in films she watched, reciting lines over and over in her bedroom. But in public she was silent and very timid, earning the nickname 'the mouse'. Her time with Grace came to a bitter end when her husband stumbled drunkenly into Norma's room one too many times.

Norma finally found a loving and stable home with Ana Lower, Grace's aunt. Lower absolutely adored Norma and Marilyn would later comment that she "changed my whole life. She was the first person in the world I ever really loved and she loved me. She showed me the path to the higher things of life and she gave me more confidence in myself. She never hurt me, not once. She couldn't. She was all kindness and all love." This confidence began to pour outwards. Norma embraced her developing body, wearing tight sweaters and crop tops. For the first time in her life people began to take notice of her. No longer Norma the orphan, she was Norma Jeane, the pretty girl. But Norma's time with Lower was idyllic but brief.

By 1942, Lower was suffering with serious health problems and Norma returned to Grace's house, but by now she was a different woman. However, her life was to take an unexpected turn. When Grace's husband received a lucrative job offer, the family had to move. With Gladys still rejecting offers from anyone wanting to adopt Norma, this would have seen her sent back to the orphanage. To avoid this, Grace came up with a plan and arranged someone else to look after her – a husband.

Jim Dougherty was a well-built, pleasant and sporty man. He was four years older than Norma and making a steady wage in a defence plant. When Grace asked him to take the 15-year-old to a dance, he fell for her instantly. Six weeks after Norma's 16th birthday, they were married. On her wedding day, her demure mask fell away and she started a drunken conga line. Her husband angrily remarked: "You made a monkey of yourself!" Many years later Marilyn would describe this marriage as "like being retired to a zoo."

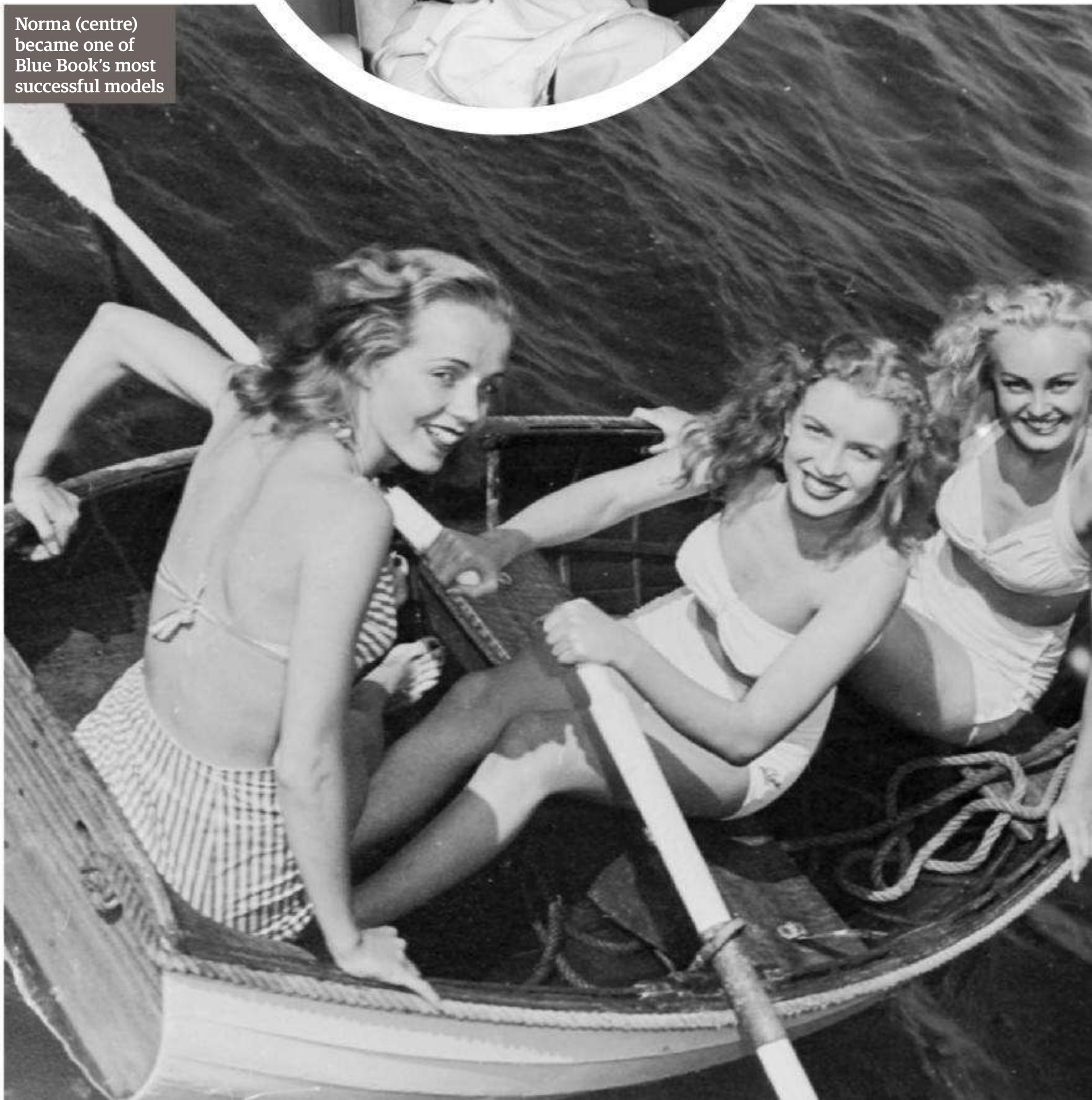
The marriage wasn't particularly painful, but it was dull. Dougherty joined the Maritime Service and in 1944 was shipped out to the Pacific. Meanwhile, Norma dutifully played the part of the loving wife. Her mother-in-law got her a job at a defence plant where she worked for hours spraying fire retardant on planes. It was an unlikely place for a starlet to be discovered, but one day an army photographer visited looking for an attractive young woman doing war work. He saw Norma's potential immediately, dressing her in a variety of outfits and taking her telephone number. From the realms of obscurity, Norma had finally been found.

Norma was quickly signed up with the Blue Book Model Agency. She promptly passed their course and began work immediately. She called in sick at the plant, then spent her days earning $10 a day modelling as a hostess at an industrial show, while her nights were dedicated to more modelling lessons. She moved out of her in-laws and back to where she had been happiest, with Ana Lower. When Dougherty returned from the war, he found an entirely different woman than the one he had left. In just a couple of months, she would write to him, asking for a divorce.

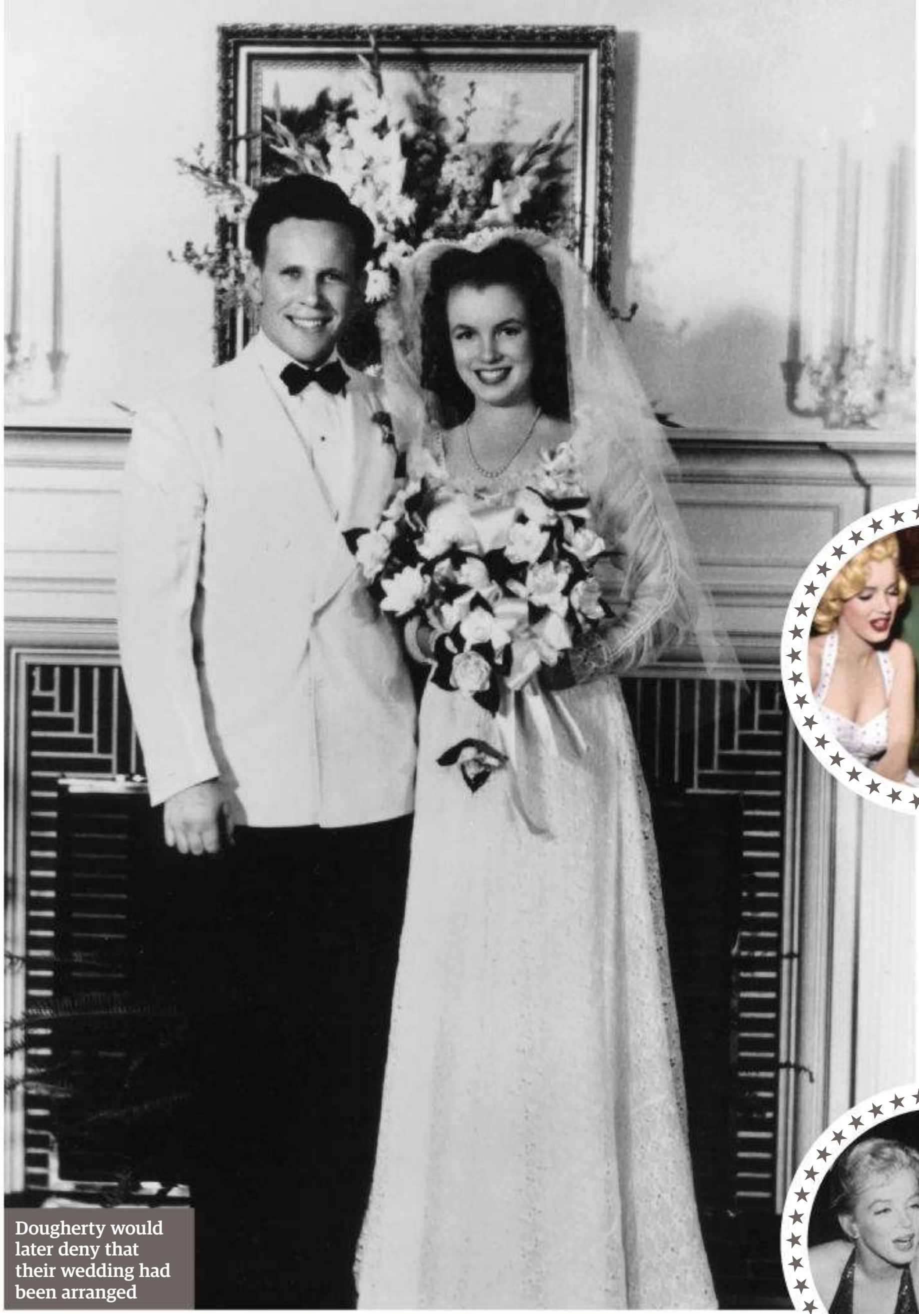
Norma had found work as a model, but it was not steady. However, with newfound confidence in her future, she quit her job at the factory. Eager to expand her portfolio, she went away for a month in the spring with photographer André de Dienes. They travelled through the west – through the desert sun, old mining towns and into the redwood country. They eventually became lovers, but when he asked to photograph her in the nude, she leaped out of the car and ran, screaming "I won't! I won't! Don't you understand? I'm going to be a great movie star someday."

Norma soon began to make waves as a model, and appeared on the cover of *Laff*, *Peek* and *See*. It is at this point that she finally gave into her agency's demands to dye her brunette hair blonde. She had been resistant to the change for a good few months – for a woman with so little identity to begin with, it likely felt akin to cutting the few ties she had. But now she was ready to wipe away the past. She waved farewell to her brown curls and playful dungarees and stared back into the face of a blonde bombshell. "It wasn't the real me," Marilyn would later claim, but it was the version of her that everyone would remember.

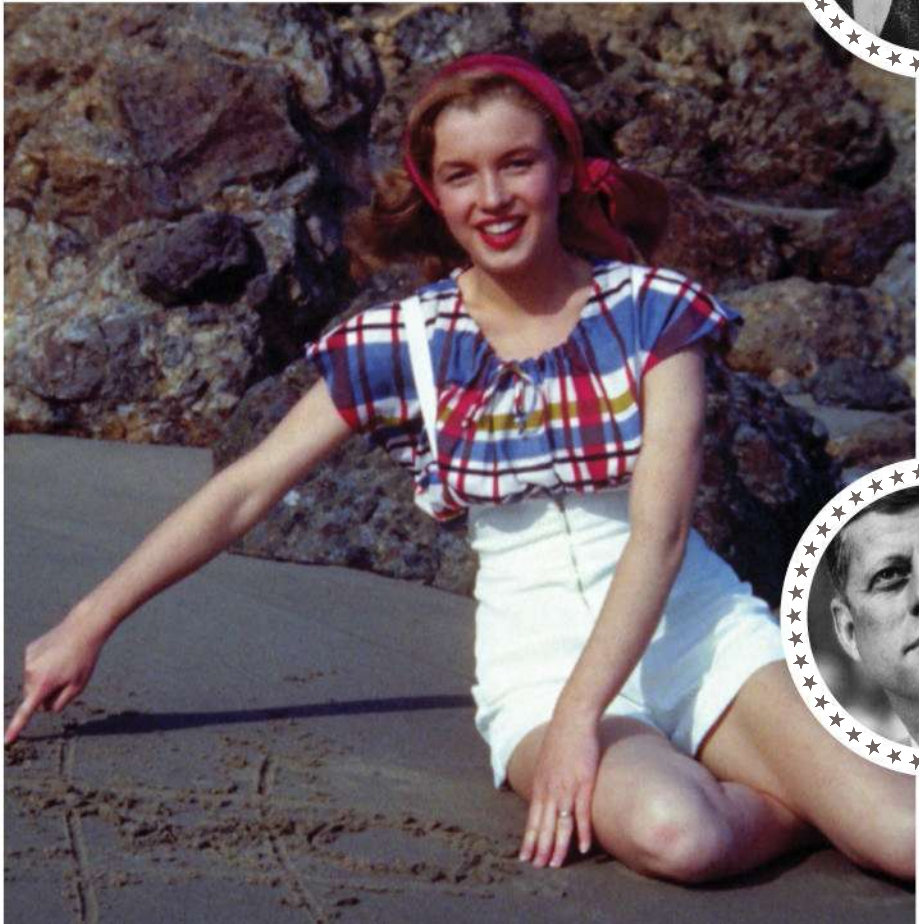
Whether she liked it or not, the blonde worked. The success of her modelling career attracted the attention of the 20th Century Fox executive and former actor Ben Lyon, and he invited her for a screen test. Not only had Norma never acted in a film before, but she had horrendous stage fright. She had to be coaxed and encouraged through her audition, but her lack of experience paled in comparison to her presence. Lyon would say it was like "Jean Harlow all over again" while the cameraman uttered: "This girl had something I hadn't seen since silent pictures."



Norma (centre) became one of Blue Book's most successful models



Dougherty would later deny that their wedding had been arranged



Marilyn's men

In this case, gentlemen definitely did prefer blondes

James Dougherty 1942

Dougherty rushed into an early marriage with Norma, but the couple drifted apart when she began her modelling career. After she became a success, Dougherty and Monroe both provided conflicting accounts of just how happy their marriage was. Dougherty even later claimed that he created her Monroe persona.

Joe DiMaggio 1951

Despite Monroe fearing that he was a stereotypical jock, she agreed to go on a date with baseball player Joe DiMaggio and the couple were married in 1954. However, the relationship soon turned sour and Monroe filed for divorce on grounds of mental cruelty nine months later. Despite this, they remained friends and for 20 years after her death he had half a dozen red roses delivered to her grave once a week.

Marlon Brando 1955

In his autobiography *Songs My Mother Taught Me*, Brando claimed that he met Monroe at a party where she played piano, and they had an on and off affair for many years. Whether this is true or not, we may never know, but they certainly maintained a friendship until the end of her life, and also discussed working together.

Arthur Miller 1955

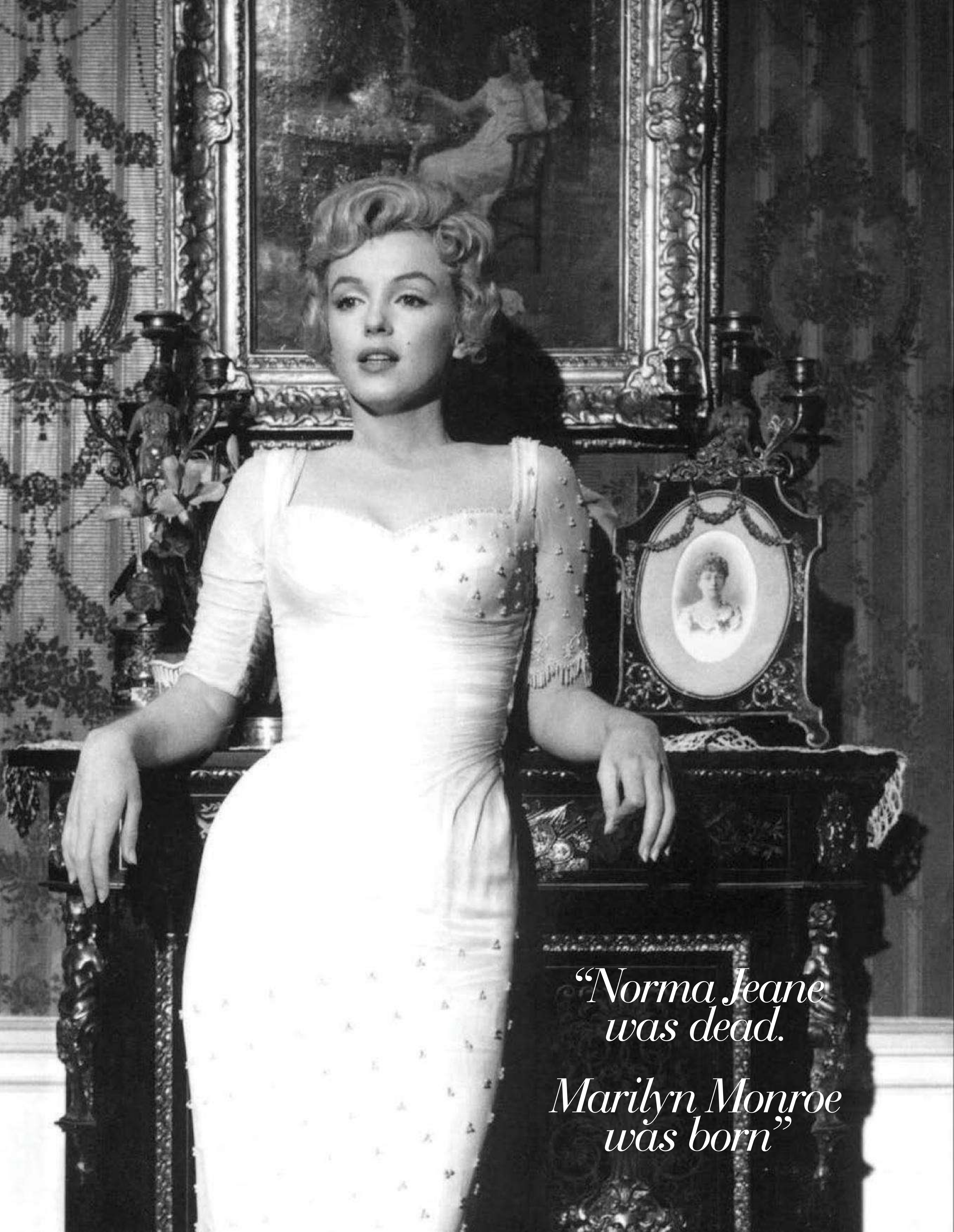
Often referred to as 'The Egghead and The Hourglass' when they were together, Monroe first met playwright Arthur Miller during the filming of *Bus Stop*. Despite trying to keep their relationship out of public view, Monroe was forced to announce their engagement after a reporter's car crashed while following them, killing a passenger. They married in 1956 after Monroe converted to Judaism, but less than five years later, in 1961, they were divorced.

Frank Sinatra 1961

Following her divorce from Miller, Monroe stayed at Sinatra's house in Los Angeles in the summer of 1961. Monroe even talked about marrying the crooner, but he broke off the relationship by the fall, just around the time he met Juliet Prowse, who he was subsequently engaged to.

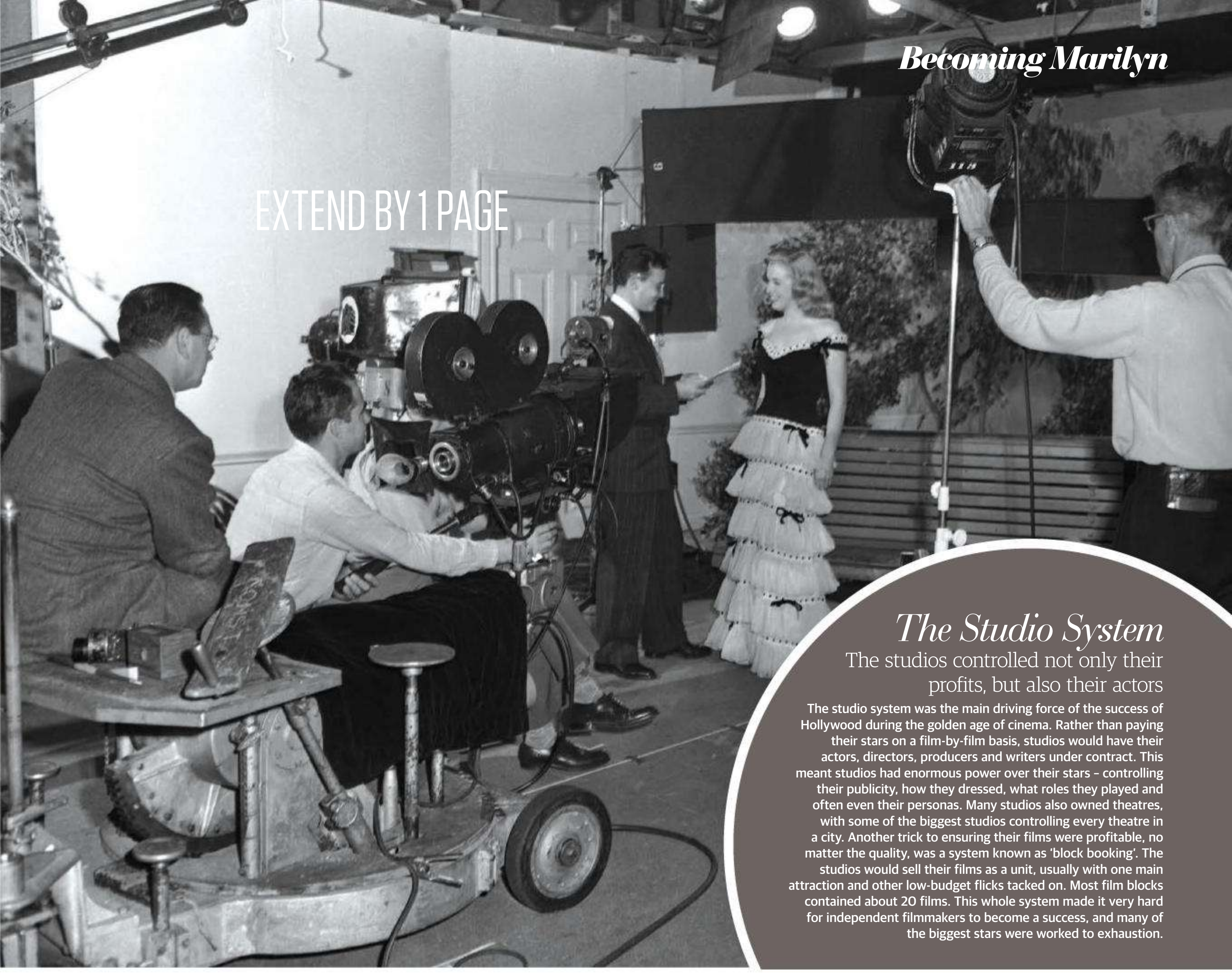
John F Kennedy 1962

One of the most discussed and speculated-upon relationships in history, the extent of Monroe's relationship with President Kennedy will likely never be known. Her rendition of *Happy Birthday, Mr President* on his birthday was one of the last public appearances she made, and it is rumoured they had previously spent a week together. She also made frequent calls to the White House during the last few months of her life, which were ignored by the president.



“Norma Jeane
was dead.

Marilyn Monroe
was born”



The Studio System

The studios controlled not only their profits, but also their actors

The studio system was the main driving force of the success of Hollywood during the golden age of cinema. Rather than paying their stars on a film-by-film basis, studios would have their actors, directors, producers and writers under contract. This meant studios had enormous power over their stars – controlling their publicity, how they dressed, what roles they played and often even their personas. Many studios also owned theatres, with some of the biggest studios controlling every theatre in a city. Another trick to ensuring their films were profitable, no matter the quality, was a system known as 'block booking'. The studios would sell their films as a unit, usually with one main attraction and other low-budget flicks tacked on. Most film blocks contained about 20 films. This whole system made it very hard for independent filmmakers to become a success, and many of the biggest stars were worked to exhaustion.

She was signed to a six-month contract starting at $75 a week. When she heard the news, Norma wept – she was going to escape the fate of insanity and nothingness that had so marked her early life. She lost one other thing at this point, the last remains of her past – her name. Norma Jeane was dead. Marilyn Monroe was born.

Marilyn's life, like Norma's, was never smooth sailing. For years she did nothing but pose for stills, attend the opening of restaurants, ride in parades and stand on floats. She languished at the bottom of the studio's talent pool, labelled a 'dumb broad' and thrown the occasional role in low-budget flicks where she received the lowest billing.

Two relationships with two different men helped Marilyn's rise to fame more than any other. First of all, Joe Scheck, the rapidly aging 70-year-old co-founder of 20th Century Fox. There is no evidence at all that their relationship was sexual, but rather a firm and important friendship. Despite the sway he held, Marilyn didn't push him for any favours, and seemed happy to simply absorb his wisdom. However, when her contract was dropped after just one year, Scheck intervened, this time at Columbia. Marilyn was given the second lead in the film *Ladies Of The Chorus*, which came out in 1948. The film was a cheaply made B-flick and not worth the limited money it cost to make it, but Marilyn was a vision.

She was 23 years old when she met Johnny Hyde. The moment he saw her on screen he wanted her, and had her transferred to his agency immediately. He was one of the most prominent figures in Hollywood, and being 'picked' by him was no small matter. He told Marilyn he would make her a star; she told him she didn't make enough to pay her telephone bill. Hyde was 53, but like so many before and after him, he fell in love almost instantly. He had four sons and a beautiful wife who silently abided his host of affairs with clients, but Marilyn was not like the others. He was dying from a bad heart, and decided to dedicate the remainder of his life to making her a star. His wife filed for divorce, and he proposed to Marilyn.

Hyde offered Marilyn her life on a platter. Not only did he respect and love her, but he had been given barely a year to live, and promised that she wouldn't have to look after an invalid. She could be his wife for mere months, be happy, then go on to enjoy the advantages of his name and riches. But Marilyn said no. It was a decision that she later paid for, but Marilyn, for all her diamonds, her extravagances and glamour, was never in love with money. She was in love with love, and she was not in love with Hyde.

Regardless of her refusal, Hyde dedicated the final months of his life to securing her future. He taught her everything he knew and arranged a new contract – now starting at $750 a week. He even persuaded her to fix the final flaws on her perfect face, with plastic surgery on her nose and chin. He died before he was able to secure for her the third of his estate that she never asked for. Hours after his death, Marilyn was ordered out of his home and forbidden to attend his funeral. She went anyway, throwing herself across his coffin and screaming for him to wake up before she was led out of the church. Marilyn was alone again, but now she was equipped to conquer Hollywood.

© Corbis; Getty Images

DISCOVER

ALL ABOUT HISTORY
Victoria's secrets
The queen's passionate affair with her servant revealed
+BETRAYAL OF THE+
KNIGHTS TEMPLAR
• From the Crusades to the pyre
• Inside their 'heretic' rituals
• The pope's hidden agenda

About the magazine

All About History is the only history magazine that is accessible and entertaining to all, packed with world-leading features covering the most amazing real-life events.

* This offer entitles new UK Direct Debit subscribers to receive their first 3 issues for £5. After these issues, subscribers will then pay £20.25 every 6 issues. Subscribers can cancel this subscription at any time. New subscriptions will start from the next available issue. Offer code 'ZGGZINE' must be quoted to receive this special subscriptions price. Direct Debit guarantee available on request. This offer will expire 31 October 2016.

** This is a US subscription offer. The USA issue rate is based on an annual subscription price of £56 for 13 issues, which is equivalent to $84 at the time of writing compared with the newsstand price of $9.99 for 13 issues being $129.87. Your subscription will start from the next available issue. This offer expires 31 October 2016.

HISTORY

Try
3 issues
for just
£5*

Exclusive offer for new subscribers to…

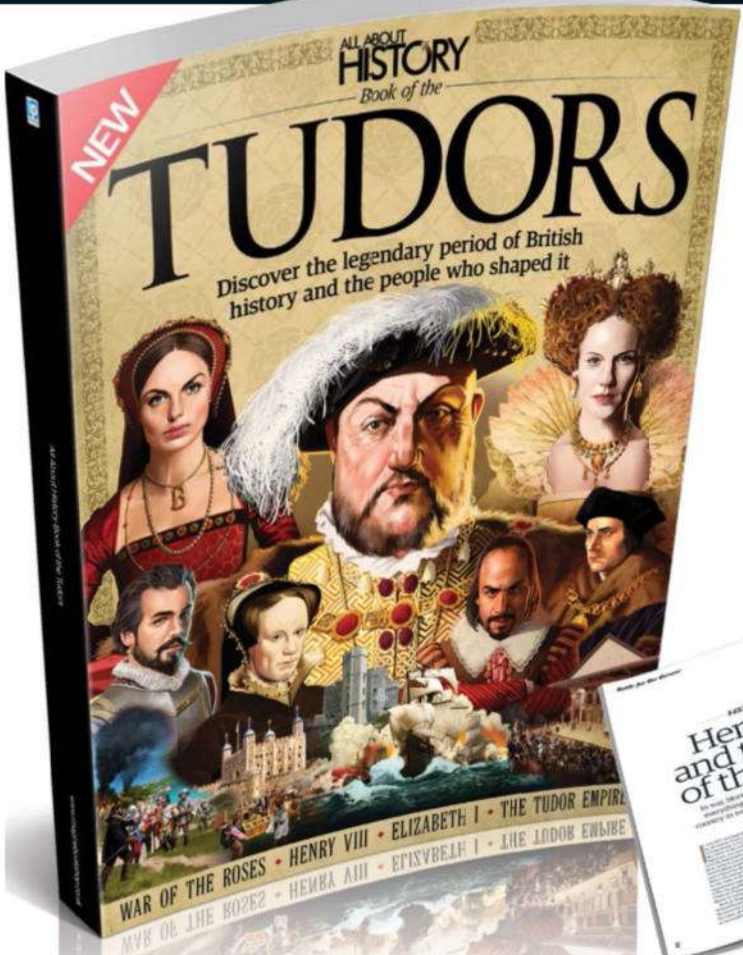
ALL ABOUT
HISTORY™

Try 3 issues for £5 in the UK*
or just $6.46 per issue in the USA**
(saving 35% off the newsstand price)

For amazing offers please visit
www.imaginesubs.co.uk/hist
Quote code ZGGZINE

Or telephone UK 0844 848 8408+ overseas +44 (0)1795 592 867
+Calls will cost 7p per minute plus your telephone company's access charge

From the makers of ALL ABOUT HISTORY


NEW
ALL ABOUT HISTORY
Book of the
TUDORS
Discover the legendary period of British history and the people who shaped it
WAR OF THE ROSES • HENRY VIII • ELIZABETH I • THE TUDOR EMPIRE

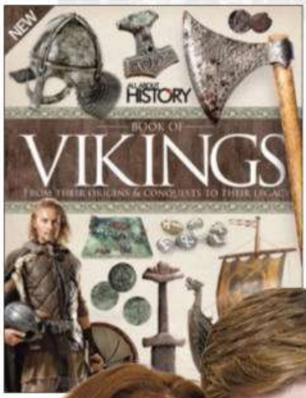
Book of the

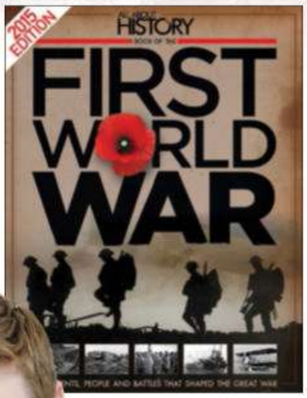
TUDORS

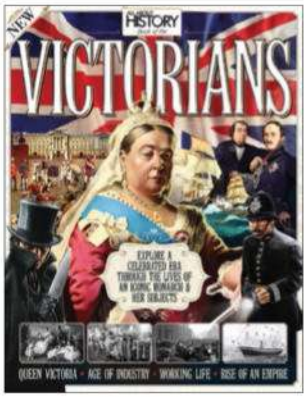
Discover how Henry VII's Tudor dynasty ruled, from the red-soaked fields of the War of the Roses, to what everyday life was like for the lowly population. Packed with amazing illustrations and facts, this is the ultimate guide to one of England's most iconic periods of history.

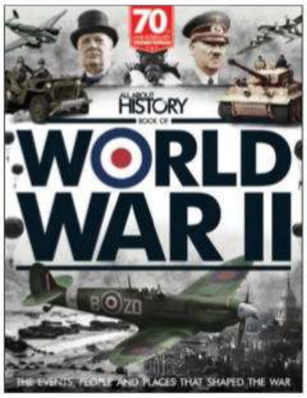
Henry VI and the War of the Roses

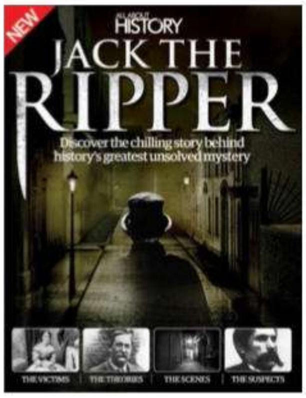
Also available. . .


NEW
ALL ABOUT HISTORY
BOOK OF
VIKINGS


2015 EDITION
ALL ABOUT HISTORY
BOOK OF THE
FIRST WORLD WAR


NEW
HISTORY
VICTORIANS
QUEEN VICTORIA • AGE OF INDUSTRY • WORKING LIFE • RISE OF AN EMPIRE


70
ALL ABOUT HISTORY
BOOK OF
WORLD WAR II
THE EVENTS, PEOPLE AND PLACES THAT SHAPED THE WAR


NEW
HISTORY
JACK THE RIPPER
Discover the chilling story behind history's greatest unsolved mystery
THE VICTIMS
THE THEORIES
THE SCENES
THE SUSPECTS

ALL ABOUT HISTORY
AMERICAN CIVIL WAR
TUDOR EMPIRE

A world of content at your fingertips

Whether you love gaming, history, animals, photography, Photoshop, sci-fi or anything in between, every magazine and bookazine from Imagine Publishing is packed with expert advice and fascinating facts.

imagineshop.co.uk
BOOKAZINES
HOW IT WORKS

BUY YOUR COPY TODAY

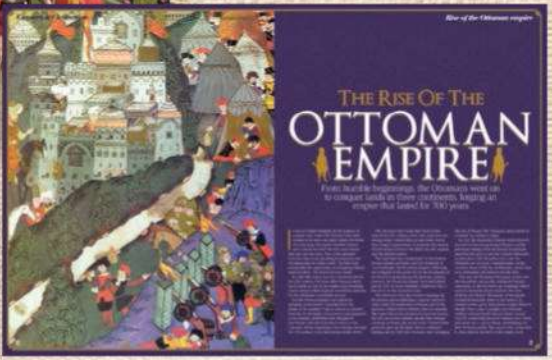
Print edition available at www.imagineshop.co.uk

Digital edition available at www.greatdigitalmags.com

Print
Tablet
Phone
Desktop

ALL ABOUT HISTORY ANNUAL

The events, people & discoveries that changed the world



THE RISE OF THE OTTOMAN EMPIRE

From humble beginnings, the Ottomans went on to conquer lands in three continents, forging an empire that lasted for 700 years

Empires & Civilisation

Unearth the ancient stories that paved the way for the world as we know it

ANNE BOLEYN

Follow the romantic beginning and disastrous end of the love affair that rocked the very foundations of England itself

AN OBJECT OF LUST

Politics & Power

From canny queens to tyrannical despots, meet some of history's most powerful players

WATERLOO

200 YEARS

THE FALL OF NAPOLEON

Now upheld as a source of British pride, in reality, Waterloo was the final gamble of a man willing to risk it all

Victory & Defeat

Discover some of history's greatest ever battles and find out how they changed the course of history

Becoming MARILYN

Fame & Fortune

Meet cultural icons from Houdini to Marilyn Monroe and see behind the mask of their fame

IMAGINE PUBLISHING
DigitalEdition
GreatDigitalMags.com